

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google<sup>™</sup> books

<http://books.google.com>



.)

# THE LIBRARY



*Periodical Collection*











THE  
AMERICAN HISTORICAL  
MAGAZINE,

REPRESENTING THE CHAIR OF AMERICAN  
HISTORY IN THE PEABODY  
NORMAL COLLEGE.



DEVOTED ESPECIALLY TO THE HISTORY OF TEN-  
NESSEE AND ADJOINING STATES.

---

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE PEABODY NORMAL  
COLLEGE, AT NASHVILLE, TENN.

---

W. R. GARRETT, Editor.  
W. R. PAYNE, Business Manager.

---

\$3.00 PER ANNUM.

SINGLE NUMBER, 85 CENTS.

---

University Press, Nashville, Tenn.

(21307)

THE  
AMERICAN HISTORICAL  
MAGAZINE.

---

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

PEABODY NORMAL COLLEGE.



VOL. III, 1898.

# American Historical Magazine.

**Editor, W. R. GARRETT, Ph.D., Nashville, Tenn.**

**Business Manager, W. R. PAYNE, Nashville, Tenn.**

**Gen. Agts., GOODPASTURE BOOK CO., Nashville, Tenn.**

## CONTENTS OF VOL. III.

No. 1. JANUARY, 1898.

THE DEPARTMENT OF HISTORY AT THE TENNESSEE CENTENNIAL, Gen. G. P. Thruston .....	3
MAJOR CHARLES ROBERTSON, AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS, Mrs. Chas. Fairfax Henley .....	21
JOHN BERRIEN LINDSLEY, A.B., M.D., D.D., Prof. Chas. E. Little .....	32
PEDIGREE OF THE POLLOK OR POLK FAMILY, FROM FULBERT THE SAXON, (A.D. 1075) TO THE PRESENT TIME, ( <i>Continued from Vol. II., No. 4.</i> ) Miss Mary Winder Garrett .....	42
CORRESPONDENCE OF GEN. JAMES ROBERTSON, ( <i>Continued from Vol. II., No. 4.</i> ) .....	74
FROM THE ARCHIVES OF THE TENNESSEE HISTORICAL SOCIETY .....	83
Bond of John Sevier to Landon Carter—An Indian Talk—Letter of an Old Settler—Proclamation of Andrew Johnson, Military Governor of Tennessee.	
BOOK REVIEWS .....	93
Biography of Judge J. D. Goodpasture—Mr. A. Oakley Hall's Account of the Duel between Jackson and Sevier—The Life and Times of Archbishop Grindal.	

No. 2. APRIL, 1898.

FRONTISPIECE—Original Painting of Washington.

THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION, A. V. Goodpasture, .....	103
REVOLUTIONARY AND MILITARY PENSIONERS—List for Tennessee, June 1, 1840 .....	120

ORIGINAL PORTRAITS OF WASHINGTON, Gen. G. P. Thurstons .....	132
THE BEGINNINGS OF MAURY COUNTY, Flournoy Rivers....	139
A PROCLAMATION BY WILLIAM G. BROWNLOW, GOVERNOR OF TENNESSEE .....	151
PEDIGREE OF THE POLLOK OR POLK FAMILY, FROM FULBERT THE SAXON, (A.D. 1075.) TO THE PRESENT TIME, ( <i>Continued from Vol. III, No. 1.</i> ) Miss Mary Winder Garrett.....	155
MAJOR CHARLES ROBERTSON AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS, J. C. Moreland .....	190
THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI.....	193
NOTES AND QUERIES .....	199
EDITORIAL NOTES.....	200
Valuable Contributions—Errors—The Antiquary—General Agents of the Magazine—The North Carolina Line—Colonial Mobile—Life and Times of Archbishop Grindal.	

### No. 3. JULY, 1898.

FRONTISPIECE—William Walker, (from an old Daguerreotype.)	
WILLIAM WALKER, John M. Bass .....	207
INVINCIBLE TENNESSEANS, William Goodrich .....	223
PEDIGREE OF THE POLLOK OR POLK FAMILY, FROM FULBERT THE SAXON, (A.D. 1075) TO THE PRESENT TIME, ( <i>Continued from Vol. III, No. 2.</i> ) Miss Mary Winder Garrett.....	230
THE HONORABLE JOSEPH ANDERSON, AND SOME OF HIS DISTINGUISHED RELATIVES AND DESCENDENTS, Mrs. Charles Fairfax Henley.....	240
TWO CAROLINA PIONEERS, Flournoy Rivers.....	259
CORRESPONDENCE OF GEN. JAMES ROBERTSON, ( <i>Continued from Vol. III, No. 1.</i> ).....	267
EDITORIAL NOTES .....	299

### No. 4. OCTOBER, 1898.

SOME SOUTHERN YANKEES, Peter J. Hamilton .....	303
THE WAUTAUGA ASSOCIATION, Joshua W. Caldwell.....	312
SOME VIRGINIA MEMORANDA, Hon. Flournoy Rivers.....	315
COCKRILL GENEALOGY, Granville Goodloe .....	331
THE NASHVILLE FEMALE ACADEMY.....	345
SOME HUGUENOT MEMENTO, Hon. Flournoy Rivers.....	347
CORRESPONDENCE OF GEN. JAMES ROBERTSON .....	348
EDITORIAL NOTES.—Beginning of Educational Associations in the West .....	395





# THE American Historical Magazine.

---

VOL. III.

JANUARY, 1898.

No. 1.

---

## THE DEPARTMENT OF HISTORY AT THE TENNESSEE CENTENNIAL.

---

G. P. THRUSTON.

---

The Tennessee Centennial was the first of the large expositions in this country to organize a special department of history. At the Columbian Exposition there were many interesting relics and collections, scattered, here and there, in the Government and State buildings. There was also a fine display of portraits, maps and relics, relating to Columbus, in the La Rapida Museum.

At the Atlanta Exposition, there were many objects of historic interest, Colonial and Revolutionary portraits, old manuscripts and antique silverware, in one of the rooms of the Womans Building, but the collection was not relatively equal in extent or interest, to the other features of that fine exposition.

When our Tennessee Centennial was organized, the large store of interesting historical material in the collection of the Tennessee Historical Society at Nashville, in the Confederate bivouac rooms, and in the various fine private collections throughout the State, and indeed, the notable history of the State itself, suggested that a special department of history should be created, and a separate History Building erected, to illustrate the splendid career of the Volunteer State, and its progress during a century of Statehood.

The Centennial Committee upon history and antiquities, consisted of Prof. W. R. Garrett, Albert S. Marks, Herman Justi, Col. W. C. Smith and Dr. W. J. McMurray, with Gen. G. P. Thruston as Chairman. Major Thomas, President of the Centennial, kindly interested himself in securing the subscriptions for the erection of the building, and Col. W. C. Smith prepared the plans. The architect was very happy in his selection of a design, and planned a beautiful and most appropriate building. As that masterpiece of Greek art, the Parthenon, occupied the elevated site upon the Centennial grounds near by, the architect selected its ancient neighbor upon the Acropolis—the Erechtheum, as his model for the History Building. The classic outlines, dimensions and beauty of the historic Greek Temple were in the main preserved, with such changes only as were necessary to adapt it to its new uses. It was constructed mainly of fireproof materials, and proved to be an admirable structure in form and area, having ample wall space, and about four thousand feet of floor space. The interior was symmetrically arranged with suitable cases, to safely and conveniently display the various exhibits.

The patriotic and historic associations of Tennessee, and other sections, had been cordially invited to co-operate in making the history exhibit worthy of the State. Private citizens and collectors had also been urged to contribute; and right well and patriotically did they respond. The beautiful and classic structure soon became the repository of one of the most interesting, and complete collections and museums of historic and archæological treasures ever exhibited in this country. It proved to be one of the unique features of the Exposition, and visitors were constantly surprised at its extent, value and attractiveness.

It would not be possible in a brief space, to give an adequate idea of the great number of objects of historic and archæological interest in this unique Centennial museum. The main and the largest exhibits were made

by the Tennessee Historical Society, the Confederate Memorial Associations, the Daughters of the Revolution, the Colonial Dames, the family of President Jackson, the Ladies Hermitage Association, by Mr. Hawkins, of Louisiana, and by Gen. G. P. Thruston, but there were many other exhibits of much interest. The able Centennial jury of awards, recognizing the value and attractiveness, from an historical standpoint, of many of the exhibits, awarded them a number of medals in gold, silver and bronze and placed several of the exhibits in the list of "honorable mention." Thomas Nelson Page, and Mrs. Porter King, of Atlanta, were the special sub-committee, or jury, assigned to the Department of History and Antiquities.

#### THE TENNESSEE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

The largest and probably the most notable exhibit in the History Building was that of the Tennessee Historical Society of Nashville. Few Tennesseans fully realize the extent and value of this historic treasury, and of its rare manuscripts, portraits, letters, maps, swords, arms, busts and archæological collections. This Society has been patiently and industriously accumulating this rich store of material for more than forty years; and this without any assistance or appropriation from the State, and indeed without any apparent notice, or compliment from the State for the great service it has rendered both the State, and the country at large. Other States have provided fireproof buildings, and liberal annual appropriations in aid of such societies, instituted for the purpose of caring for and preserving their historic records and treasures, but the Legislatures of Tennessee, notwithstanding the glorious history of the State, have turned a deaf ear to all appeals for State aid, and seem entirely content to relegate the whole subject to the liberality and patriotism of a few private citizens.

Few visitors at the Centennial had the leisure to carefully examine and study the special objects of interest in the cases of the Historical Society, a brief list of some of them may therefore be of interest. Among its manuscripts exhibited were "the original records of Washington County Tennessee, beginning with the first county court, in 1778," also "the original records of the State of Franklin in 1786, kept by James Sevier, clerk of Washington County," including various original reports and papers.

It exhibited also the original journal kept by Col. John Donelson, one of the founders of Nashville,—of that historic voyage down the Tennessee River, through the Indian country, to the Ohio River, and up the Cumberland to the settlement at Nashville. It is entitled "Journal of a voyage intended by God's permission in the good boat Adventure, from Fort Patrick Henry on the Holston River to the French Salt Spring on Cumberland River, kept by John Donelson, December 22, 1779."

The original Commission of General Israel Putnam, of the American Revolution, was among the historical records, properly framed and preserved, also a number of the famous old General's belongings—his military vest and other articles. They were presented to the Society by Mrs. Julia Putnam Perkins, of Tennessee, a descendant of General Putnam, a descendant also of Governor John Sevier. The officers of the Putnam Phalanx from Connecticut, when in Nashville recently at our Centennial, examined these rare mementoes of their old General with much interest. The first newspapers published in Tennessee were in the exhibit; and among them a complete and well bound file of the *Knoxville Gazette*, a semi-monthly paper published at Knoxville from 1791 to 1795. How great the historic value of so complete a file of papers of that early date! General Nathaniel Greene's military cipher book, used during the Revolutionary War in his Southern campaigns, was shown, also the origi-

nal official papers and documents of Governor Wm. Blount. The interesting series of correspondence between Andrew Jackson and Governor Sevier. The original map of the battle of the Horseshoe, well executed in General Jackson's own drawing and writing. The original letters that passed between W. G. Anderson and Abraham Lincoln in 1840, letters that seemed to threaten a serious difficulty between these gentlemen, the original proclamation of Andrew Johnson as military governor of Tennessee, and of Governor Brownlow, offering 5000 dollars reward for the apprehension of "one Isham G. Harris." The original telegraph dispatch from Simon Cameron, Secretary of War in 1861, calling upon Governor Harris to furnish Tennessee's quota of troops to put down the Rebellion, and Governor Harris' flaming dispatch in reply.

It would indeed be impossible to enumerate more than a tithe of these interesting documents, manuscripts, and letters. Theodore Roosevelt when preparing his most valuable historical work entitled "The Winning of the West," visited Nashville to examine the various manuscripts belonging to the Tennessee Historical Society, and was greatly aided by them.

Among the other treasures of the Society will be found hanging upon its walls portraits in oil, and generally well executed, of nearly every governor, military hero, prominent statesman and pioneer known in the history of Tennessee. We doubt whether many of the older States of the East have been as fortunate in securing portraits of such historic value, and in such numbers. Tennessee's Presidents are of course among the number, with fine portraits also of Jefferson, Madison and Tyler. Sam Houston, Governor Sevier, Felix Grundy and David Crockett, are all well represented, as are James Robertson and John Donelson. Portraits of the honored Presidents of the Society, Dr. Ramsey, Col. Putnam and Judge John M. Lea, were prominent upon the walls.

The exhibit of the Historical Society was also rich in historical swords; a single upright case displaying twenty-five or more of them, well arranged and labeled. Among them was the beautiful sword presented by the State of North Carolina to John Sevier, in commemoration of his services at King's Mountain, also the sword and fine field glass of Colonel Ferguson, the Commander of the British forces, who was killed in that engagement, and the military scarf he wore, found upon his body after the battle. The sword of Colonel De Peyster a distinguished officer under Ferguson, captured at King's Mountain, is also in this historic collection. These and other trophies captured at King's Mountain, were divided among the victors after the battle, and after many years have found their way through their patriotic descendants into the custody of the Tennessee Historical Society, where they will be honored and safely preserved for future generations. Dr. Ramsey the first President of the Society and the historian of Tennessee, was largely instrumental in securing for the Society these much-prized relics. This establishes their genuineness. The sword of Gen. John Coffee worn at the battle of New Orleans was also there, and a sword that belonged to the lamented Zollicoffer.

Gen. A. P. Stewart, the distinguished Confederate, now one of the honored Commissioners of the National Park at Chickamauga, has presented to the Historical Society his two swords, and his pistols and holsters used during the late war. They were in the exhibit.

Among the array of firearms, were Daniel Boone's old flintlock musket, and the historic pistol used by General Jackson in his duel with Dickinson. Also one of those expensive English Whitworth telescope rifles, used with such deadly effect by the Confederate sharpshooters. John Buchanan's old musket, used at Fort Buchanan, was also there.

Among the relics, we were surprised to find two quaint old horn goblets used by Oliver Cromwell in his campaign against Bristol, with the history of their genuineness, attached to them.

The old broad-brimmed white beaver hat worn at his inauguration by President Jackson, attracted considerable attention, as did the little embroidered military cap of gallant Pat Cleburne, worn by him in his fatal charge at the battle of Franklin.

A number of interesting mementoes of President Polk were shown, including his miniature, gold watch and spectacles.

We will notice the archæological features of this exhibit hereafter, perhaps in a separate paper.

#### THE CONFEDERATE EXHIBIT.

The well arranged exhibit of the Confederate Memorial Association was in the north wing of the building. It was probably the most valuable and important collection of relics and mementoes of the late war that has been placed upon exhibition in the South. The walls were covered with portraits and flags. Swords, muskets, pistols, ~~cannon~~ balls, rifle shells, bullets, canteens, saddles, spurs, cartridge boxes, clothing, shoulder straps and all the paraphernalia of war, were arrayed in the cases and upon the walls. Miss Hager the intelligent custodian, kindly furnished information to all inquiring visitors.

The President of the Confederacy and its distinguished generals were well represented in portraits. Robt. E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson, Forrest, Kirby-Smith, Frank Cheatham, Leonidas Polk, and many others. Carl Guthertz' large painting entitled "Sunset after Appomattox" presented a lifelike portrait of Gen. Robt. E. Lee as he sat near his camp fire on the evening of the surrender, evidently deeply absorbed in sad and painful reflections.



Among the flags that adorned the walls, was the flag of Admiral Semmes, that floated over the famous cruiser Alabama. Gen. Kirby-Smith's two battleflags, the flags of Gen. W. H. Jackson's Cavalry Divisions, and more than a score of regimental flags, were in the exhibit, a few of them still bright and cheery in color, but most of them tattered and war worn.

The sword, pistol and sash of Gen. Forrest, and the sword of Gen. Preston Smith. The pistol of the lamented Gen. Hatton, taken from his body, when he fell, by the Federals, and after the war returned to his family. The spurs worn by our generous Tennessean, Frank Cheatham. The chair used by Jefferson Davis when Secretary of War, were among the valued treasures of the exhibit, also the spirited bust of that faithful young hero of the South, Sam Davis, and the swords of Gen. Jno. C. Brown and Col. Albert S. Marks.

It was a great pleasure to the old campaigners of the war, and their families and the visitors from abroad to see the fine collection of old war-time relics. Many an old Confederate lingered lovingly over the cases, and many an eye was full, and heart was sore at the sight of the old familiar trappings and torn banners, and sad mementoes. Visitors from the North could plainly see how near and dear to the hearts of the South were these old relics. Yet there was a bright side to this exhibit too! The days of peace had come, and comrades in arms long separated, were exchanging cheery and fraternal greetings. To most of them the war was but an historic memory.

#### THE COLONIAL DAMES, AND DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

The west wing of the Hall of History contained the fine exhibits of these patriotic Societies. They were collections to be proud of. A loyal feeling of kinship and confidence must bind the widely separated members and

chapters of these organizations closely together, as the Chapters in New York, Pennsylvania, Virginia, North and South Carolina, Kentucky, and other States were willing to trust their rare and precious heirlooms, and relics of Colonial and Revolutionary days, to the custody of their sister Chapters in far-off Nashville. Mrs. Donald McLean, Regent of New York, Mrs. Rusling of New Jersey, and many other patriotic ladies from distant States also honored our Centennial by their presence, at the general meeting of the Daughters of the Revolution.

The Tennessee Chapters of these Societies were fortunate in the selection of their officers and representatives. Mrs. W. D. Gale, President, and Mrs. James C. Bradford, Secretary, had charge of the exhibit of the Colonial Dames, and Mrs. James S. Pilcher, Regent of Campbell Chapter, at Nashville, had charge of the D. A. R. exhibit. To these intelligent ladies of distinguished Colonial and Revolutionary ancestry, we were mainly indebted for the judicious management and devoted industry that insured the success of these exhibits. Miss Emma Putnam, a descendant of Gen. Israel Putnam, and of Governor Sevier, was the efficient custodian of this section.

These collections formed an interesting object lesson in history. They were arranged in excellent taste. Portraits, coats of arms, insignia, banners, ancient commissions, and antique dresses and pictures, covered the walls in brilliant display, and the floor cases were filled with quaint and beautiful antiques of silverware, miniatures, historic snuffboxes, laces and innumerable objects of interest, that recall Colonial times and the early days of the Republic.

We have time and space to note but few of them, but the memory and effect of the whole display must have left a lasting and useful impression upon all intelligent visitors.

Among the interesting objects in the section of the Colonial Dames, we recall that quaint old harpsicord, one

of the very few of its class, that has survived the wreck of time, and has been preserved in its ancient completeness. The harpsicord was the precursor of the piano. It was the popular musical instrument of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, and continued in favor until a hundred years or more ago. There was a "plaid" that was once worn by Prince Charley the Pretender, which appeared to have an entirely authentic history; and a beautiful and costly dress worn at the Court of St. James by Mrs. Thomas Pinckney, wife of the first United States Minister Plenipotentiary to England, rare old snuffboxes of Governor DeWitt Clinton and Peter Stuyvesant of New York, an elaborately quilted dress skirt 150 years old, beautifully embroidered with the coat of arms of England. A piece of lace worn by Martha Washington; all were of interest.

The brilliant banners of the five Dutch Republics—sent out from the New York Chapter, made handsome and historic wall decorations. We noticed "the spy glass used by Benedict Arnold when he looked down upon West Point, after he became a traitor." The rare old Sevres china set, the antique laces and embroideries, the series of exquisite miniatures—especially those from Colonial New York, all attracted attention, and had an educating effect, also the miniature and commission of Gen. Artemus Ward of the Revolution, the beer flagon of "Gideon Macon, great-grandfather of Martha Washington," the beautiful miniatures and picture painted by that distinguished artist, John West, the quaint old silver tankard of Colonel Motte, Lord Proprietor of South Carolina, the books owned by General Washington, the History of the World, by "Sir Walter Raleigh Knight," printed in 1614, the quaint old silver of Col. Wm. Polk, a distinguished officer of the Continental army, "the beaded reticule of Bonnie Kate Sevier," the historic chairs, mirror and silver, used by Washington and Cornwallis at Yorktown.

Many other objects of interest might be mentioned, but these will give a good impression of the extent and value of the collection.

The large exhibit of the Daughters of the American Revolution, was also of great historic interest. Among the number of rare articles I noticed a miniature of John Sevier, loaned by Miss Hoss, one of his descendants; quaint old jewelry of Lady Spottswood, wife of the Colonial Governor of Virginia, ancestor of Mrs. Mildred Spottswood Mathes of Memphis, Regent for Tennessee of the D. A. R. Portraits of Patrick Henry, Governor Shelby of Kentucky, and Governor Archibald Roane of Tennessee. Miniatures of Governor Ashe and his wife, of North Carolina, a silver coffee urn once owned by General Washington—like much of the other antique silverware—more chaste and exquisite in pattern than most of the modern fashionable types. There was also a beautiful set of the gold and enameled badges of the D. A. R. sparkling with diamonds, from Caldwell's, in Philadelphia.

One of the notable objects was the old iron anvil of Timothy Demonbreun, the first white settler at Salt Lick Spring, before Nashville was founded.

In the various cases of the D. A. R. section were also swords, commissions, antique watches, vases, old time jewelry, knee buckles and shoe buckles, a dainty collection of silver and miniatures, owned by Mr. Leslie Warner of Nashville. Also heirlooms and relics innumerable—many of which have come down from the old historic and pioneer families of the State, the Seviars, the Campbells, the Robertsons, the Shelys, the Polks and others.

#### THE JACKSON COLLECTION.

President Andrew Jackson, or some members of his family, must have had a taste for collecting and saving rare objects and souvenirs; as the well known collection of "Jackson relics," at the Hermitage, accumulated during his lifetime, embraced a large number and variety of arti-

cles of interest, and indeed, many of them were of artistic and historic value. The collection included a number of fine portraits and miniatures, by Healy, Earl and Dodge, many valued souvenirs of Washington, Jefferson, Napoleon, Lafayette, Sam Houston, and others. Coins and medals in great variety, sets of china, Indian pipes and implements, Turkish arms, snuffboxes, and in fact, something from almost every section, and everybody of prominence, forming at the old Hermitage home, a veritable museum of curios and mementoes.

We do not remember that Washington's historic mansion at Mt. Vernon, as it appeared before the war, and before the Ladies' Mt. Vernon Association had re-arranged and beautified it, had such an array of fine old family heirlooms and notable gifts as belonged originally to the Jackson collection.

The original collection has not been preserved in its entirety, but most of the articles of special interest remain. The beautiful gold medal, voted to the old General by Congress, passed into the hands of a prominent New York coin collector years ago. A few of the coins and medals found their way into the Thruston collection at Nashville, and the Donelson and Lawrence families, owing to their near relationship, inherited or acquired a number of interesting objects.

Through the courtesy of Col. Andrew Jackson, now a resident of Cincinnati, and of his nephew, Mr. J. C. Symmes, of Nashville, we were fortunately able to exhibit in the History Department the best part of the collection, and it formed one of its most attractive features.

President Jackson, notwithstanding his rugged characteristics, must have had some fondness, or at least some consideration or taste for art and artistic things, if we may judge from the many fine portraits and objects of art in his home at the Hermitage. Earl, the artist, during his long visit at the Hermitage, painted a number

of excellent portraits of Jackson, and of various members of the family.

The sweet-faced, rosy-cheeked picture of the little granddaughter of the household, now Mrs. Lawrence, of Nashville, is one of the best works in the collection. J. G. Healy, an artist of national reputation, was commissioned by Louis Philippe, King of France, to paint a portrait of the General. He visited the Hermitage and remained some time in executing the commission. It proved to be the best and last picture of the old hero, as he died in a very few days after the artist had given it his finishing touches. The members of the family considered the portrait so excellent that a copy of it was made by Mr. Healy for the Hermitage home. The original now hangs in the palace at Versailles. All these fine family portraits were exhibited with the Jackson collection, in the department of History, and attracted much attention.

The most noted single article in this exhibit, was the fine gold-hilted sword presented by the city of Philadelphia to General Jackson, in honor of his victory at New Orleans. It was an expensive present, costing even in those early days, the sum of \$5,000. The scabbard was beautifully engraved with scenes taken from the battle, and even the Damascus steel of the blade was etched with similar scenes.

Among other things, we recall his military order book kept through the Creek Wars, the bronze Jackson medal for New Orleans, and fine medals of Washington, Jefferson, Napoleon and Canova; the General's Bible and hymn book; also the silver communion cup he always carried with him to the communion service, at the little Hermitage Presbyterian Church near by, of which he became a member in his later life. There were also a number of other pieces of family silver used at the Hermitage and the White House.

Among the General's personal articles we noted his commission as major general and his epaulettes, his Masonic apron, spectacles, snuffbox, knife, a lock of his hair, his dressing gowns, and even "the bullet taken from his arm after his fight with Benton." His various public addresses and proclamations were arranged in the cases. There were also a number of miniatures, a notable one being that of Mrs. DeWitt Clinton, by Catlin, and a statuette of Napoleon presented by Lafayette and the snuffbox of Lafayette; the lace dress worn by Col. Jackson when a child at his christening, and the beautiful point lace dress worn by Mrs. Jackson, the adopted daughter, at her wedding—a souvenir of the past, greatly admired by the visiting ladies.

Mrs. Lawrence, of Nashville, sister of Col. Jackson, once the petted little grandchild of the White House, also kindly lent a number of family souvenirs and objects of interest to the Jackson exhibit.

#### THE LADIES' HERMITAGE ASSOCIATION.

Years ago the State of Tennessee placed in the hands of The Ladies' Hermitage Association the care and custody of the Hermitage mansion, and the beautiful tract of land surrounding it. This patriotic Society deserves the thanks of the State and the nation, for its faithful and devoted services in rescuing the historic home from decay, and in endeavoring to keep it in its original stateliness and beauty, as one of the honored memorials of the nation.

Unfortunately, owing to some much regretted difference in views, Col. Andrew Jackson, the representative of the Jackson family, a number of years ago, removed the greater portion of the Jackson relics to Cincinnati, but some of the furniture, and many articles once owned or used by President Jackson, have been gathered into the old home, and it is to be hoped that the historic trophies and portraits, and indeed the entire collection of

mementoes, may find their way back to this historic old homestead, and rest there evermore.

The Ladies' Hermitage Association had an exhibit, in the south wing of the Hall of History, that contained many articles of historic interest, and reflected credit upon the patriotic ladies in charge, Mrs. John Ruhm and Mrs. W. A. Donelson, and upon the officers of the Association, Mrs. Marks and Mrs. Dorris. The greater portion of the collection had belonged to the Donelsons, a distinguished branch of the Jackson family, but many of the articles had come from the Hermitage, or had been used there.

General Jackson and the Donelsons were most intimately related. His wife was Rachel Donelson. Her nephew was his private secretary, Andrew Jackson Donelson, and his adopted son, Andrew, was a Donelson. Polly Donelson married General John Coffee, one of the heroes of New Orleans, and through this connection, several interesting relics of General Coffee, came into the Donelson family collection.

The most conspicuous object in the Hermitage collection was the gold mounted sword, presented by the people of Tennessee to General Jackson in 1825, in memory of New Orleans. It was a very handsome sword. The presentation was made in the old Presbyterian Church at Nashville, that stood at the corner of Church and Summer Streets, where the present church stands. By the terms of the General's will the sword was bequeathed to Andrew Jackson Donelson.

The large bust of Jackson in the collection was pronounced by Clark Mills, the sculptor, the finest likeness of President Jackson he had ever seen. In the cases were a number of handsome pieces of silver used during the Jackson administration, a series of his addresses and proclamations, and many personal mementoes of Jackson, Coffee, President Jefferson, Van Buren, Lafayette, Sam Houston and other eminent men of the Jackson era.



Upon the walls were portraits in oil of "Captain John Donelson and his wife, who came to Nashville in the good boat *Adventure*," and a number of other historic portraits and pictures.

#### MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS.

Many private collectors and owners kindly lent a helping hand in making the general exhibit useful and attractive.

Prof. Frederick Starr, of the University of Chicago, lent a case of rare terra cotta heads and objects of interest, discovered by him during his recent explorations in Mexico. Mrs. Carrington Mason, of Memphis, sent us a large and valuable collection of ancient pottery of rare forms, that she had discovered in the ancient mounds of Arkansas. Fine archæological specimens were sent from the Myer collection at Carthage, General Wilder's, and the Buchanan collection at Nashville. Upon the walls of the east wing General Thruston had a series of original printed maps of America, beginning as early as A.D., 1626, and showing the progress of American discoveries from that early period.

In the general collection there were also portraits of John Bell, Felix Grundy and Philip Lindsley, and of Daniel Boone and David Crockett. Fisk University contributed fine portraits of Wilberforce and Shaftesbury.

The Grand Army of the Republic had an exhibit in the south wing. As might be expected, it was by no means equal in extent or attractiveness to the large exhibit of the Confederates, but the badge of the Order was finely pictured on the wall. Portraits of Grant, Sherman, Thomas and President McKinley hung around it. There was a stack of muskets, or two, bristling with bayonets, and a case filled with memorials of the Federal side.

Many an old soldier of the Army of the Union, from the far North and from East Tennessee, was happy to

greet these familiar objects, and to realize that his side of the story of the war was well and justly recognized at the Tennessee Centennial.

Near by, in the south wing, was the large and interesting collection of antiques and curios of Mr. Armand Hawkins, of Louisiana. It contained rare old portraits, quaint pieces of silverware, old French and Spanish china, souvenirs of Napoleon's time, miniatures, watches, and medals from his storehouse of curiosities at New Orleans.

Among the exhibits in the east wing lent by General Thruston was a collection of coins and medals, showing the varieties of the world's coinage, ancient and modern, as an object lesson in history. It included the strange and peculiar forms of the earliest known coinage, and illustrated the progress of the money coining art through many centuries down to the present date. Many of the historic pieces in the collection bring down to our own era portraits in relief of the actual faces and appearance of the ancient kings and rulers of the earth. They teach history in a very impressive and realistic way. Probably no collection west of the Alleghany Mountains has a greater number of rare and historic specimens of coinage. It includes two thousand or more pieces, dating from the earliest Chinese and Greek issue down through all the centuries.

Among the gems of the collection were some of the best types of early Greek art. There were beautifully engraved heads of Philip and Alexander of Macedon, in silver and gold, the "widow's mite" of Judea, the "tribute money" penny of Cæsar, fine bronzes of Julius Cæsar, and a full series of the Roman emperors, William the Conqueror, of England, and Henry of Navarre. The historic Washington pieces and the early American series were well illustrated; also the beautiful medals and badges of the Legion of Honor of France and the medal decorations of Victoria of England to her soldiers. The

collection is most complete, but we can only give a glimpse of it.

General Thruston exhibited also his collection of gems, and of the minerals of jewelry in their natural state, illustrating many rare forms of crystallization. It would be difficult to find so many beautiful specimens in any one of the large and notable collections of the East. Nearly all the known gems were represented in good specimens, including crystals of the diamond, ruby, sapphire, emerald, beryl, aquamarine, amethyst, tourmaline, zircon and hiddenite. Their rich coloring, and the beautiful forms of the crystals, and the clusters of crystals attracted much attention, and brightened up the more serious looking exhibits in the room in a very cheery and popular way. General Thruston's collection of "Tennessee antiquities" was also exhibited.

The Jury of Award complimented his three collections with the highest award, a medal of gold—in the words of the report: "On account of extensiveness, interest, value and excellence. Every one of these three exhibits is very extensive, and remarkably complete, such as could only be collected with wide knowledge of the subject, united to untiring diligence and patience. Taken together, they constitute the most extensive and valuable collection shown by any single exhibitor we have found, and we recommend the highest award."

Tennessee is rich in prehistoric treasures, richer indeed, we believe, than any other State of the Union, and a number of noted archaeological collections were exhibited showing a complete series of the mound and stone grave remains discovered in this State, but a description of these fine and interesting collections will have to be reserved for future consideration.

It was by no means a cheerful sight to see the rare and beautiful exhibits in the History Building dismantled, packed and freighted off to their various homes, many of them far away. Thanks to Mr. Robert T. Quarles, the

courteous and intelligent curator in charge, and his assistants, they had been watchfully and faithfully cared for, and were returned, without harm, to their owners.

What an attractive and educating treasury of history and art would they have made, could they have been retained and placed in a permanent museum at Nashville! Unfortunately this "Centennial dream" cannot be realized, but the recollection of the success and usefulness of the history exhibit will be a grateful memory.

---

## MAJ. CHARLES ROBERTSON, AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS.

---

BY MRS. CHARLES FAIRFAX HENLEY, Mountainville, Tenn.

---

There has been much written of Gen. James Robertson; one of the great, brave and noble founders, of our dear State of Tennessee—but very meagre are the records of the part borne by his elder brother, Maj. Charles Robertson, in the establishment and government of the first Watauga Colony, and his services in the Revolutionary War.

It is not generally known, that Charles Robertson's lineage can be traced back to the Barons of Strowan, and to the first chief of the clan, Duncan Robertson, who saved the life of James I, of Scotland, at the risk of his own, and whose descendants intermarried with the Lords Crichton and Stuart, and much later on, intermarried with the "great" Houses of McKenzie and Randolph. Very few, even of the Robertson descendants of the present age, know of the "coat of arms" preserved in this family, which proves their particular branch of the "Scottish gentry." Among their Robertson ancestors were distinguished warriors, statesmen, historians and poets, who could be enumerated, but time and space forbid.

We will begin with the father, John Randolph Robertson, of our subject, Charles Robertson.

His immediate predecessors, becoming strict Presbyterian covenanters, had joined the parliamentary and Cromwellian armies, in dethroning Charles I, of "Great Britain," thereby losing their estates, upon the restoration of Charles II, to the sceptre; hence the Robertsons sought their fortunes in the new Colonies of America.

The first one we read of in Virginia, was the Rev. Moses Robertson, (a minister in the parishes of Lower Norfolk). About the year 1685, he married a daughter of the son of Lord Willoughby and Margaret Herbert, of the English gentry.

Then we read of William and John Robertson, who accompanied Lieutenant Governor Alexander Spottswood to Virginia; who were men of education and "high standing." William was first private secretary to Governor Spottswood, then Clerk of the Council. His descendants intermarried with the Spottswoods, Bollings and others, and furnished to Virginia and Louisiana, governors, statesmen and judges. They were of *Scotch* descent, and *most probably* related to John Randolph Robertson, who was a remote cousin of Col. Harry Peyton, of the Revolution, for whom his son, James Robertson, named two of his sons.

John Randolph Robertson was born about 1712, in Scotland, married in 1739, Mary, daughter of Captain Gower (who was killed by Indians).

The Gowers were adventurous sea captains of noble descent, and civil officers in Colonial Virginia. Abel was one of their family names for several generations.

John Randolph Robertson, first resided in Brunswick County, Va. It is supposed the Robertsons named the village of Crichton, in Brunswick County. Here eight of his ten children were born, viz.: 1st, Charles, born 1740; 2nd, James, born 1742; 3rd, Elijah; 4th, Mark; 5th, Jonathan; 6th, Julius Cæsar; 7th, William; 8th, John

Randolph; 9th, Anne, who married John Cockrill; 10th, Sallie, who married Mr. Gleaves.

There was a famous school in Wake County (I think it was called the "Liberty Academy"). To *educate* his children at *this school*, John R. Robertson *removed* to Wake County, in the year 1754, when Charles (his son) was nearly fourteen years of age. The British governors, and especially Governor Tryon, were very unjust and tyrannical to the colonists. This caused politics to be much discussed, and *trained* the *young Robertsons* in *Whig principles*—hearing them discussed daily by their father and neighbors (the Polks, and Eatons, and Winstons, and Alexanders, and Butlers, and Grahams).

They were all made acquainted with the rich, alluvial soil of the Kentucky and Tennessee lands, *by the reports* of the *explorers* and *hunters*, viz.: William Bean, and William Cocke (of Virginia) and Daniel Boone, and John Finley, and Andrew Greer, and Isaac Thomas, and Julius Cæsar Dugger. (The latter settled at Watauga, in 1766, a few years before Capt. Wm. Bean.) The poverty of the North Carolina soil in Wake County, and the persecution of the Whig population, by unjust laws, *caused them to send James Robertson to Watauga to select homes for them*. His brother, Charles Robertson, was in 1769, the father of four young children, *therefore, did not accompany James then; but moved afterwards, and owned lands near Jonesboro and on Sinking Creek* (at present in Carter County, Tenn., now owned by the Messrs. Miller). His neighbors were the Seviars, Taylors, Carters, Williamses, Cobbs, McNabbs, Isbells, Gourleys, Boyds, Wilsons, Watsons, Beans, Nelsons and Tates. With the three latter families, Charles Robertson's daughters intermarried. I will here remark that he had a son named Claiborne Robertson, which demonstrated some acquaintance with that great and wealthy family—probably his wife was related to the Claibornes for she was of the Nichols family, of Alexandria, Va.

After a short time the first Fort of Watauga was built, by direction of Lieutenant John Sevier, and Charles Robertson was made captain of a militia company; also James, his brother, and William Bean, with Robert Sevier were appointed captains of scouts and of light horse companies, to defend the settlers from Indian raids.

This Robert Sevier became the son-in-law of Charles Robertson about the year 1777. He married Keziah Robertson, and fell in the battle of King's Mountain, dying on the homeward journey, leaving her a widow with two young sons.

While James Robertson resided, as North Carolina agent, at Chota, to conciliate the *hostile* Cherokee chiefs, and while General John Sevier carried "fire and sword" into the Indian villages for punishment and subjection of their cruel massacres, *they left Charles Robertson in authority over the home guards and in the councils of government of civil affairs.*

General Sevier always spared Chota, on account of the friendly Chief, Atta-Kulla-Kulla and Nancy Ward, "the prophetess." The latter was the daughter of a British officer named Ward and of an Indian princess, the sister of "Old Abraham," Chief. She was tall, commanding, comely, ambitious and friendly to the whites. She had great influence over the chiefs in the "council chamber," because she pretended to be a prophetess and *worked on their superstition.*

Captain Stuart, the whilom Indian agent of King George III., stationed Alexander Cameron at Chota to carry out his plans against the Whig settlers and to incite the Indians to attack their forts and to furnish ammunition and guns to the Indians. Nancy Ward tried to counteract Cameron's influence and conspiracies. She kept James Robertson informed of it all.

Captain Stuart had once been stationed at Fort Loudon, in 1756, and knew all about the Cherokees and the Watauga settlement. He and General Gage planned the

attack of Charleston, S. C., by the British fleet under Sir Peter Parker, in June, 1776, and through his agent (Cameron) he planned the attack on Fort Watauga at the same time, but Nancy Ward apprised the two Robertson brothers and the Seviars of the intended attack.

About the same time information of the impending Indian attack was received from another source.

I will have first to explain that Captain John Stuart had a brother, Henry Stuart, stationed, as his agent, at the towns of the Cherokees, Chickamaugas and Creek Indians.

This Henry Stuart and Alexander Cameron and the many Tories who refuged to them from the Carolinas and from Georgia, very often disguised themselves as Indians and led the Indians against the forts on a few occasions during the Revolutionary War.

Charles Robertson, through diplomacy and to discover their plans, pretended to be a Tory at heart and willing to serve King George. Captain Stuart wrote a letter of his plans to invade the Watauga neighborhood, to "kill out" the Whigs and spare *only the Tories*. He sent this letter to his brother Henry Stuart at the Chickamauga towns. Henry Stuart, believing Charles Robertson to be a true Tory, sent this letter by a Tory, who rode up to Robertson's door *at midnight*, and delivered the letter and a note from Stuart requesting Robertson's assistance. The letter disclosed the Indian attack, by Dragging Canoe, on Fort Patrick Henry, and by old Abraham, on Fort Watauga. Charles Robertson laid these plans at once, before the settlers. They collected into the fort all the families except Mrs. Bean. She had been so liberal and hospitable to the Indians that she did not think they would molest her; but they captured her, bound her hand and foot, pointed guns in her face to force her to tell how the whites were fortified and the number of their guns and men, in which she



*bravely misled* them by falsehoods. They carried her to Tellico, tried and sentenced her to be burned, bound her to a stake, and piled faggots around her. Just then Nancy Ward appeared, interceded for her release, saying she had consulted the "magic powers," and found that if they burned Mrs. Bean their nation would be exterminated. She begged that Mrs. Bean might be her prisoner until she taught the *Indian women the art of dairying*, after which she sent Mrs. Bean to her home and family. I relate this incident because afterward Mrs. Bean became the *mother-in-law* of *Rosamond* the daughter of *Charles Robertson*, who married Russell Bean, D.D., the first white child born at Watauga.

Charles Robertson and three of his young sons helped to defend Watauga Fort on this same occasion, in June, 1776.

The first cause of Charles Robertson being appointed one of the five judges of the Watauga government was that three horse thieves had stolen horses from the settlers, and there was then no law nor officers there with authority to arrest them. Thereupon, the citizens were convened at the *house of James Robertson* to discuss this and to select a committee of thirteen persons to draft their "Magna Charta," which they accomplished, and the thirteen appointed the following five judges; viz.: *John Carter*, John Sevier, *Zachariah Isbell* and James and *Charles Robertson*.

In November, 1777, North Carolina established the County of Washington, then appointed the following magistrates; to wit: Charles and James Robertson, John and Valentine Sevier, Jacob Womack, Robert Lucas, Andrew Greer, John Shelby, Junior, George Russell, William Bean, Zachariah Isbell, John and William McNabb, Thomas Houghton, William Clark, John McMahan, Benjamin Gist, J. Chisolm, Benjamin and Joseph Wilson, Richard White, Michael Woods, Thomas Stuart, Jesse Watson and Thomas Price.

The first session of this court began in February, 1778; the second session began in May, 1778, and was HELD AT THE HOUSE of our subject, CHARLES ROBERTSON. In another year they had finished building a log "court house," covered with clap-boards—occupied at the session of the May court of 1779.

To skip to the year 1790, we read of the first territorial court, of which the four magistrates present were *Charles Robertson*, John Campbell, Edmund Williams, and John Chisolm. Immediately Governor Sevier commissioned *nineteen more magistrates*, among whom were William and Henry Nelson, who were the RELATIVES of ONE of the DAUGHTERS-IN-LAW of CHARLES ROBERTSON.

To return to the year 1774, when Isaac Shelby and Valentine Sevier, Junior, and James, with his brother Elijah Robertson went to fight the Indians in the battle of Point Pleasant, on the Kanawha River, Virginia, in 1774, James Robertson left his family in care of *his brother Charles*. Also the same during the residence of James Robertson, as North Carolina Indian agent, at Chota, until 1779. During the years from 1773 to 1779, Charles Robertson and his sons—Charles and William and Julius and Christopher and Elijah and Mark and Claiborne Robertson—were defenders of the Watauga commonwealth in the Indian fights AT HOME, also his younger brothers, Mark and Elijah Robertson, and his brother-in-law, John Cockrill. These three latter, in 1780, moved to the Cumberland with their brother, James Robertson. Mark was killed there by Indians, in ambush near his home, and John Cockrill settled on a fine body of land called Cockrill's Bend. If they had remained at Watauga they would have been in the battle of King's Mountain, etc., etc.

If we had the rosters of the "Watauga boys" who were in the battle of King's Mountain (October, 1780) I daresay we would there read the names of four or five of *Charles Robertson's sons*. His son-in-law, Capt.

Robert Sevier fell in this battle and died on the return home leaving his young widow (Keziah Robertson) with two infant sons, viz.: Charles Sevier named for her father (Chas. Robertson), and Valentine Sevier named for Capt. Robt. Sevier's father.

Later on Keziah Sevier, (widow), married a Mr. Tipton.

In January 1781, General Greene wrote to Cols. Wm. Campbell and Shelby to bring their commands to assist him in North Carolina against Cornwallis. Capt. Chas. Robertson raised a company, was promoted to Major and fought in the battle of Guilford Court House. I do not doubt but that *several of his sons were with him in this battle*. It has been reported that the Robertson brothers fought in the skirmish of "Alamance Creek" against Governor Tryon's British soldiers but this is not certified. Maj. Charles Robertson also served, at one time, as representative to the State Assembly, at Halifax.

I have written the above facts to show the patriotism of Major Charles Robertson, both in Civil Council and in War. In 1758 he married Susannah Nichols, said to be related to the Nichols family, of Alexandria, Va.

#### DESCENDANTS OF CHAS. ROBERTSON.

Charles Robertson, born 1740, in Brunswick County, Va., married, 1758, in North Carolina, Miss Susannah Nichols; their children were: 1, Charles; 2, William; 3, Julius Cæsar; 4, Christopher; 5, Elijah; 6, Mark; 7, Claiborne; 8, George, married Susannah Nelson; 9, Keziah married first Capt. Robt. Sevier and second, a Mr. Tipton; 10, Rosamond married the Rev. Russell Bean.

Charles Robertson, Junior, eldest son of Maj. Chas. Robertson died on Cherokee, near Jonesboro, Tenn., and is buried there.

His daughter Keziah, married Wm. K. Vance. Among the children of this union were James Harvey Vance, Pat-

rick Vance, William Nicholas Vance, Mrs. Caroline Craigmiles, and others.

James Harvey Vance, a physician at Kingsport, Tenn., married Jane Sevier, daughter of Valentine Sevier, the son of Col. Robert Sevier and Keziah Robertson, daughter of Maj. Chas. Robertson. The children of this union are therefore descended from Maj. Chas. Robertson on both the father's and mother's side.

These children are: Charles Robertson Vance, Maria married Rev. Jno. R. King, Wm. V. Vance, Keziah, Nannie married Isaac A. Newland, Joseph, James, and Jane deceased.

Charles Robertson Vance, an attorney at Bristol, Tenn., married Margaret Newland. Their children are: Rev. James Isaac Vance, D.D., Nashville, Tenn.; Rev. Joseph Anderson Vance, Baltimore, Md.; Dr. Charles Robertson Vance, Norfolk, Va.; Margaret J. Vance, and Rebecca M. married C. L. Hedrick, Bristol, Tenn.

Remark. The seventh son, Claiborne Robertson, was born 1767, in North Carolina, his mother may have been related to the Claibornes possibly, as the Nichols family were from Alexandria, Va., originally.

The children of George Robertson and Susannah Nelson were: 1, Elizabeth, born 1798, married 1814 Samuel Tate (and their son Samuel Tate was the founder and president of the Memphis and Charleston railroad); the 2nd child. Chas. Robertson, died unmarried; 3rd, Alfred Robertson, married Mary Bickerstaff; 4th, John F. Robertson was born in a fort in East Tennessee, married Nancy Johnson; 5th, Wiley Blount Robertson born 1808, married and moved to Kentucky; 6th, Rosamond Robertson married Dr. Maynard, of Lexington, Kentucky; 7th, Susan, (the second child instead of Charles above), married the Rev. Jesse Moreland and died in Oregon in 1859.

Remark. Elizabeth Robertson born 1798, married 1825 for second husband Michael Gabbert. Many of her descendants are citizens of Memphis.

Alfred (son of Geo. Robertson and Susannah Nelson), married Mary Bickerstaff, and had: 1, Blatchley Robertson, died unmarried; 2, Julius Cæsar Nichols Robertson, born 1792, in Jonesboro, Tenn., died in Hernando, Miss., in 1880. He married in 1808, Margaret, a sister of United States Senator Reagan, of Texas. Some of their descendants are the Yateses, Lynns, Beldens, Douglasses, Wests and Livermores of the present generation.

Remark. Julius Cæsar Nichols Robertson was a Brigadier General of State Militia in the War of 1812; was a volunteer and fought in the battle of New Orleans under Gen. Andrew Jackson. In 1836 to '37, assisted in framing the Constitution of Tennessee and was a master Mason.

John F. (son of Geo. Robertson and Susannah Nelson), born 1806, married Nancy Johnson and had five children, removed to Arkansas. Their descendants are intermarried with the Simonses and Klinks and Smiths and Moores of Arkansas. John F. Robertson was wounded in the battle of Shiloh from which wound he died. His brother-in-law, Dr. Moreland, had a son, Capt. Wesley Moreland, who was killed in the battle of Shiloh, April, 1862. He was a captain in the Union Army.

William (son of George and Susannah Nelson Robertson) married and moved to Alabama.

DESCENDANTS OF KEZIAH ROBERTSON, AND OF CAPT.  
ROBERT SEVIER.

Keziah Robertson, (daughter of Chas Robertson and of Susannah Nichols), was married about 1776 to Capt. Robert, a brother of Gen. John Sevier. He fell in the battle of King's Mountain at the head of his company, bravely storming the enemy's works. Their children were: 1, Charles Sevier, who married and moved to West Tennessee and 2, Valentine Sevier.

Remark. After Capt. R. Sevier's death his widow married a Mr. Tipton.

Valentine, son of the above, married 1804, first Nancy Dinwiddie (a relative of Governor Dinwiddie of Colonial Virginia), and had twelve children. He married second, in 1844, Venerah Cannon and had four children.

His first daughter, 1, Isabel Sevier, married Dr. Francis McKorkle; 2, Keziah Sevier married Dr. George Jones; 3, Robt. Sevier, married, first, Ann, daughter of General Sibley, of Missouri, second, married a daughter of Governor Austin King, of Missouri; 4, Charles Sevier, married a Miss Briscoe; 5, Elizabeth Sevier, married Rev. Whitfield Cunningham; 6, Susannah Sevier died unmarried; 7, Jane Sevier married Dr. James H. Vance, of Kingsport, Tenn.; 8, James Sevier married Jane Simpson, (first wife,) of Rogersville, Tenn.; he married second, Mrs. Eva Neil *nee* Brewer, (her mother was a Carter); 9, David Sevier married Annie Netherland of Kingsport; 10, William Sevier married, first Martha Ellen, daughter of Dr. Cunningham, of Jonesboro, Tenn., and Wm. Sevier married second, Louisa Ann, daughter of Mr. Hamilton Evans, a large land owner of Grainger and Claiborne Counties, Tenn.; 11, Edward Sevier married a Miss Garrett, of Asheville, N. C.; 12, Joseph Sevier, of Confederate States Army, killed in battle near Atlanta.

Valentine Sevier married second, Venerah Cannon. Charles Sevier son of Valentine and Venerah (Cannon) Sevier, married Julia Brown, issue: 1, Wilbur Sevier married Miss Montague; 2, Harry Sevier; 3, Joseph Sevier; 4, Eloise Sevier.

#### GRANDCHILDREN OF VALENTINE SEVIER.

His grandson, the Rev. Samuel McKorkle, married Jane Netherland; Robert McKorkle; James Sevier Jones, married Lizzie Garrett; Mary Jones married Judge T. A. R. Nelson, (United States Senator), she is a widow and resides in Knoxville; Elizabeth Jones married Major Smith, of Newport, Tenn.; Thos. Sevier Jones; Charles

Sevier, of St. Charles, Miss.; Nannie Sibley Sevier; Nannie Sevier married Mr. Landers; John Cunningham; Charles Robertson Vance, L.L.D., of Bristol, Tenn., married Margaret Newland; Maria Vance married Dr. King, L.L.D.; William and Keziah Vance; Joseph married a Miss Fain; Elizabeth Sevier married Dr. J. P. Park, of Jonesboro, Tenn.; Isabelle Sevier; Nannie Sevier married Rev. Carson, D.D.; Annie Sevier married D. D. Armstrong; Isabel Sevier married Mr. Kyle; Maggie married Mr. Morrison; Nellie married first Mr. Roller, and second Mr. David; Louis Sevier; Victor Sevier; and lastly William Robertson Sevier, of Jonesboro, Tenn., just graduated with high honors at college.

---

## JOHN BERRIEN LINDSLEY, A.B., M.D., D.D.

---

BY PROF. C. E. LITTLE, Peabody Normal College, Nashville, Tenn.

---

[Dr. John Berrien Lindsley was an important link between the past and the present of Tennessee, especially in its educational history. The study of his life will supply valuable information to the student of educational progress.]

The most meagre outline of Dr. Lindsley's life will serve to show how busy and varied was the career which has just been brought to a close. He was eminent as physician, educator, historian. These separate lines of work he took up, not successively, but in conjunction, as was his wont. For his unbounded energy urged him, at every period of his life, to engage simultaneously in many fields of activity.

As physician he did little active practice, but spent many years in teaching classes in medicine, as he was for a long time professor of chemistry in the medical department of the University of Nashville.

His work as educator consisted mainly in his many years' labor for the University of Nashville. He not only served this institution as chancellor for fifteen years, but

presided also over its medical department as dean, taught many classes in its halls, and even when no official tie held him to its service, still gave much of his best thought to the promotion of its welfare. He was also instrumental in putting into operation the public school system of Nashville and of Tennessee, lending much wise counsel both to city and to State.

His researches and publications in the domain of history were rather of the occasional type. He wrote many articles and pamphlets on current discussions, mainly upon medical, educational, philanthropic and political topics. At one time he contributed several articles on Cumberland Presbyterian Church history to his denominational paper, and when well advanced in years put forth two substantial works on Tennessee history.

Dr. Lindsley was permitted to exceed the three-score years and ten which we are wont to name as the full limit of man's days upon the earth. To be exact, he was seventy-five years, one month, and thirteen days old at the time of his death, inasmuch as he was born Oct. 22, 1822, and died Dec. 7, 1897. He first saw the light at Princeton, N. J., but as his father left Princeton and came to Nashville in 1825, he became identified with this city and State in earliest childhood. And he was not thus identified merely by being a resident of Nashville for seventy-two years. All his sympathies were as thoroughly Southern and Tennessean as though native to this section, so far, indeed, as it is possible to localize sympathies as broad as were his.

Dr. Lindsley received his early education at home. When prepared for college, he entered the University of Nashville at the age of fourteen and after three years of study won his A.B. degree in 1839. His graduation fell during the period at which the institution was doing its best, filling with its graduates the highest places in the State and in the nation. At one time a little later than his student days it was noted, that in the national House



of Representatives there sat twenty-eight members who were alumni of this institution. He was fortunate in coming into manhood along with such a company of bright minds issuing from their *alma mater* at this most prolific era of her existence.

On graduation in 1839 he entered upon the study of medicine in the office of Dr. W. G. Dickinson. His courses in medicine were taken first at Louisville and then at the University of Pennsylvania. From this latter school he received his M.D. degree in 1843.

About this period we find developing in the young graduate of medicine that tendency to study many sciences and to engage in many concurrent undertakings which so eminently characterized him from this time to the close of his life. For he had already shown much interest in geology, and as early as 1838 he began as a private pupil to study this science under Dr. Gerard Troost, who was one of the foremost investigators of geology then to be found upon either continent. His interest in this subject increased through all the twelve years of his intercourse with Dr. Troost, finding its culmination in an extensive geological tour through the Eastern and Northern States in 1847, and remaining unimpaired till Dr. Troost's death in 1850.

But this was not the sole or main object of his study and effort during these years. True to his principle of variety and versatility, no sooner was he ready to practice medicine than he conceived the wish to study for the ministry. This he did, and was ordained in 1846 by the Presbytery of Nashville to preach the gospel. For a time he supplied two churches near Nashville, one at Smyrna and the other at Hermitage; was for one year at work under the direction of the Presbyterian Board of Domestic Missions, during which time he preached to the poor and the slaves in the Nashville district; and then comes his geological tour. About this time a rupture with his church occurred, the exact nature of which I have

not been able to discover, but which had the effect of causing him to withdraw into the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. In this church he remained for the rest of his life. The Nashville newspapers of Dec. 8, 1897, both the *American* and the *Banner* refer to this change of churches as "the split in the Presbyterian Church," and seem to understand it as the time when the Cumberland Presbyterian Church had its origin. But this cannot be true, as the Cumberland Church which was developed in a series of differences beginning in 1800, had formed a synod of three presbyteries by the year 1813, and had reached to the height of a General Assembly at Princeton, Ky., in 1829, all this nearly twenty years before Dr. Lindsley's union with the Cumberland Presbyterian Church.

The most busy portion of his life and the one most fruitful of far-reaching results began with the year 1850. He at this time projected the medical department of the University of Nashville, becoming its first dean and holding for twenty-three years the chair of chemistry. Here was the great opportunity for which all his training had fitted him. The varied experiences of his life, the knowledge he had of many subjects, the versatile genius of his scintillating mind, could all be now turned to account in this important movement. For while he had added a new department to the University, the main institution was compelled to close its doors, owing to a severe epidemic of cholera in the city, and to the consequent resignation of the Chancellor, Dr. Philip Lindsley. This both created the need of again starting the University on its prosperous career, and also offered the opportunity of substantially augmenting it for wider usefulness. That opportunity Dr. Lindsley seized as well as any man could have done, and the wisdom of inaugurating for the University at that particular moment a new department in medicine is attested by the remarkable success of the medical department, which from that day to this has been the

one kernel of soundness left to the present from the old University.

With this opening of the medical department new life was destined to come to the literary department of the University, at that time closed, and the new life here again came from Dr. Lindsley. In 1853 he induced the trustees to put up the beautiful gray stone building now in use on the campus, giving from his own pocket \$10,000 toward the expense. While this was in process of building, he still gave to all the varied interests of the University his most watchful oversight.

From 1852 to 1859 he made frequent visits to the countries of Europe, inspecting particularly the medical schools and hospitals of France and Germany. The newspapers before referred to seem to hold that he was in Europe all these seven years. This must be incorrect, as he was at his busiest during these years. He was engaged in administering the affairs of the medical department from 1850; had begun a periodical, *The Nashville Journal of Medicine and Surgery*, supported by the funds derived from his salary and edited by his pen; and was in 1855 inducted into the office of Chancellor of the University. I suspect, therefore, that he made in those years frequent trips to Europe, as I have ventured to say, perhaps using his vacations for this purpose. One result of European travel was the plan he brought back with him for the stone building already alluded to as having been begun in 1853. This edifice is justly admired by all for its chaste simplicity and its sturdy Norman outline.

Dr. Lindsley's administration was wise and alert to the full extent of his active habits. He now had found that which best suited the bent of his nature. The practice of medicine he always seemed to avoid, though thoroughly versed in the science of medicine. His passion, if I conceive him aright, was to study, to learn—ever to increase his store of knowledge. And thus it

came about that the opportunities now afforded him to gather information and dispense his riches of knowledge to the young men in his classes gave more heart-felt delight than anything else that might befall the enthusiastic student. His years went by in contentment, and with a feeling that he had at last settled down into the work that was to claim the remainder of his days, he was married, Feb. 9, 1857, to Miss Sarah McGavock, daughter of Jacob McGavock, and granddaughter of Felix Grundy. Honors began to rain upon him, and his counsel was sought in every great matter. The year previous to his marriage, Princeton College had bestowed upon him the honorary degree, D.D. Between the years 1855 and 1861 he was a most helpful adviser in creating the public schools of Nashville.

We have now reached the period when everything in the South suffered upheaval and displacement in the smoothly laid strata of her entire growth. Just as everything seemed so bright for the University, the chasm that runs across all American history of the nineteenth century and all American development yawned wide, Dr. Lindsley found all his boys marching off to the Civil War, and he alone was left to protect the school's property. This he did without the loss of a single building throughout all the long struggle, but even his vigilant care did not avail to save the beautiful trees then growing on the campus.

What remains to be said of his connection with the University of Nashville can be told in few words. After the war it was very evident that the glory of the school was gone, but he did not despair that it might yet flourish again with its pristine vigor. In 1867, he organized the Montgomery Bell Academy as a preparatory department. He resigned as chancellor in 1870, after a service of fifteen years, and recommended as his successor, Gen. E. Kirby Smith.

Though this was the end of his chancellorship, he continued to hold the chair of chemistry in the medical department till 1873, when he resigned his professorship. But even his withdrawal from all connection with the University did not obliterate his great affection for it, and his great hope in its future, for he was one of the first to make possible the Peabody Normal College as a new phase in the school's checkered existence.

This institution has served ever since its establishment in 1875 to supply the place of a Literary Department, and at the same time to be a seminary for the training of teachers. This latter aim is its legitimate one, and this aim it has usefully fulfilled; while in supplying the place of a literary department, it has also increasingly awakened the University's friends to the need of restoring, as speedily as may be, an academic department, the peer of any in the country.

In 1874 there occurred an event which has a bearing both upon the Peabody Normal College and upon Dr. Lindsley's friendship for the renowned geologist, Dr. Troost. Dr. Lindsley had received in trust his friend's valuable collection of specimens at the latter's death, in 1850. Now, just as the University was about to take a new start in life, this collection would have been of the utmost value. But no friend could be found to secure it, and Dr. Lindsley was, therefore, compelled to sell the collection to the Louisville Library Association, though with all his heart he desired to see it enrich his *alma mater*, for which he had worked and planned so long. Thus it happened that the accumulations which length of days bring to so many institutions of learning, have profited the University of Nashville in no great degree, although it can number its one hundred and twelve years.

Even advancing age could not chill Dr. Lindsley's ardor for active occupation. In 1866 he was, for a time, superintendent of the city schools of Nashville; in 1870 he took part in organizing the Tennessee School of Phar-

macy, in which he became professor of *Materia Medica* in 1876; from 1876 to 1880 he was city health officer, and did much to guard it against the great yellow fever scourge of 1878; from 1875 to 1887 he was secretary of the State Board of Education; from 1880 to 1889 he was professor of State Preventive Medicine of the University of Tennessee; and from 1884 to the day of his death he was secretary of the State Board of Health. Only a few months before his death, when quarantine was being enforced against the yellow fever district, he was very active in the discharge of his duty as a member of the Board of Health, meeting every train and showing all the vigor of a man in his prime.

At the time of his death Dr. Lindsley was ripe in years and in honors. The catalogue of his distinctions covers a span of nearly fifty years. In 1848 he helped to found the American Association for the Advancement of Science; he was a member of the Numismatic and Antiquarian Society of Philadelphia; was a charter member of the American Chemical Society; was, since 1851, a member of the American Medical Association; was a fellow of the American Academy of Medicine; was a director in the National Prison Association; was a corresponding member of the National Prison Association of France; was treasurer of the American Public Health Association; was a fellow of the Historical Society of London, and also of that of America; was a life member of the American Tract Society; and was, for thirty years, an active member of the Tennessee Historical Society.

Dr. Lindsley was a ready man with his pen, and wrote many pamphlets in support of education and other items of progress needed by the people at large. His articles on "African Colonization" were widely circulated, and a pamphlet entitled "Our Ruin" was potent in clearing up the city politics of Nashville in 1869. He was a man of large information, and compiled two very useful books on Tennessee history, one of which was the "Mili-

tary Annals of Tennessee—Confederate," and the other an "Encyclopædia of Tennessee History." His literary and social culture was recognized by the general public, for whom all he was, or had, he used with the generosity of an unselfish citizen.

His ancestry was an endowment in itself. Through his mother he traced back to the famous Lawrence family which had settled at Hell Gate, Long Island, in 1660. The Lindsleys were an old stock, early residents at Morristown, N. J.

Dr. Philip Lindsley, his father, was one of the most admirable characters pictured in the educational and intellectual development of Tennessee and the Southwest. Highly gifted and trained, sought after as the head over many institutions, recognized as a scholar of the most accurate and finished learning, he at last yielded to the entreaties from the University of Nashville to become its chancellor, though he had been the vice president of Princeton College, and was just then invited to become president. But he refused all these overtures from the great institution in New Jersey, because he believed so profoundly in the immense possibilities of the school at Nashville and of the territory from which it was to draw its patronage. He, therefore, came to Nashville with large hopes, and in the twenty-five years which he spent as head of the University, he had the satisfaction of seeing it grow into a great center of culture, approaching constantly nearer to his own scholarly ideal of erecting upon the banks of the Cumberland a great university, like those of Cambridge and Oxford.

In the father we find keenness of intellect, unbending will, polished scholarship, steady aim toward high ideals. In the son there was the same immortal flame that could not be dimmed by acquisition, but which only burned the brighter for it; the same steady purpose to give freely to all as he had freely received; the same wide acquaintance with books, men and facts; the same vision of hope and

endeavor. In the father there was more repose and silent strength; in the son, more versatile activity. The father had deeper, more accurate scholarship; the son strove after a wider range of subjects. The efforts of the father were intensely directed along one main course in life; those of the son were more extensive, and covered everything that could make for the welfare of his fellows. The father possessed the more precision and logical definiteness for shaping thought, for training youth in methods of research and in habits of accuracy; his son combined splendid scholarly attainments with civic usefulness.

With a feeling of profound satisfaction and thankfulness, I dwell in conclusion upon the last work of Dr. Lindsley's hand and brain. This was the completion of a sketch of his father's life, written for the "National Cyclopædia of American Biography." On Saturday afternoon, December 4th, he laid aside the completed sketch, and on that night occurred the accident which, on the following Tuesday afternoon, closed the volume of his own life. Thus did he, at the very end of a most honored career, pay fitting and pious tribute to the memory of his great father.



## PEDIGREE OF THE POLLOK OR POLK FAMILY, FROM FULBERT, THE SAXON, (A.D., 1075) TO THE PRESENT TIME.

BY MISS MARY WINDER GARRETT, Williamsburg, Va.

[Continued from last issue, October, 1897.\*]

William Polk, fifth child of Taylor Polk and Jency Walker Polk, was twice married. He married two cousins: Misses Griffith. Two sons by first marriage: 1, Levi; 2, Cumberland. Both were killed in Confederate States Army, and William Polk line became extinct.

Alfred Polk, sixth child of Taylor Polk and Jency (Walker) Polk, married, first, Irene Chandler; and, second, Mrs. Ricketts. Children by first marriage were: 1, James; 2, Josiah; 3, Mary J., who married W. W. Garner; 4, Michell A.; 5, Caroline who married Mr. L. Dennis; 6, Benjamin; 7, Samuel; 8, Almeda, who married J. N. Stancell; 9, Young C. Polk.

\*In the "Pedigree of the Pollok or Polk Family," Vol. II., No. 4, October number for 1897, several mistakes occurred in making up the page forms, which were not discovered until after the Magazine had been mailed. The following guide will enable the reader to restore the dislocated parts to their proper order.

1. Read from the beginning of the article to page 386.
2. From the second paragraph, near the top of page 386, skip to the top of page 389, beginning with "Mary, sixth child." Read to page 392, to the words "Prudence, ninth child of Taylor Polk."
3. Return to page 386, beginning near the top at the words "John Polk, fifth child of William Polk." Read to page 389 through the first line on the page.

4. Skip to page 392. Begin about the middle of page 392, at the words "Prudence, ninth child," and read to the end.

*Eliza Rector Polk*, on page 394, should be *Elias Rector Polk*.

*Upper Pollok*, page 378, should read *over pollock*.

*Magdaline Polk*, page 381, should read *Magdalen Pollock*.

The signature, *Magdaline Polk*, page 382, should read *Magdalen Polk*. The name is always written, "*Magdalen*;" sometimes "*Pollock*," sometimes "*Pollok*," and sometimes "*Polk*."

*Saford*, first line page 382, should read *Leford*.

The succession of the children of William Polk, page 383, should be corrected to read: "5, John; 6, Margaret."

It should have been stated on page 392, that Debora, third child of William and Priscilla (Roberts) Polk, never married.

Alfred Polk, by his second marriage with Mrs. Ricketts, had the following children: 10, Robert L.; 11, William Port; 12, Richard T. Polk.

Jency Polk, seventh child of Taylor Polk and Jency (Walker) Polk, married Mitchel Anderson, brother to the wife of Taylor Polk, 2d. The children of this marriage were: 1, Fannie; 2, James; 3, Michell; 4, Benjamin; 5, Abraham; 6, Eliza; 7, Stacey; 8, Jane; 9, Henry; 10, Taylor.

James, Michell, Benjamin, and Abraham Anderson, mere boys, enlisted as privates in Confederate States Army, and were all killed during the war. The rest of this line of Jency (Polk) Anderson I have been unable to trace.

Margaret Polk, sixth child of William Polk and Priscilla, his wife, married Robert McKree, and had eleven children—viz.: 1, William McKree; 2, Debora McKree; 3, James P. McKree; 4, Susan McKree; 5, Dinah McKree; 6, Margaret McKree; 7, Thomas McKree; 8, Harriet McKree; 9, Rachael McKree; 10, William McKree; and 11, Mary McKree.

William McKree, eldest son of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married, had eight children—viz.: 1, William McKree; 2, David McKree; 3, James McKree; 4, Margaret McKree; 5, Banks McKree; 6, Richard McKree; 7, Robert McKree; 8, Josephine McKree.

Debora McKree, second child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married Mr. Campbell, and had nine children—viz.: Mary Campbell, Jane Campbell, Debora Campbell, Robert Campbell, Margaret Campbell, William Campbell, Harriet Campbell, John Campbell, Andrew Campbell.

James P. McKree, third child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married, and removed to Tennessee. He had ten children—viz.: Margaret McKree, Robert McKree, Sarah McKree, Mary A. McKree, Adam McKree, James McKree, William McKree, Eugene McKree, Rebecca McKree, Julia McKree.

Sarah, the third child of James P. McKree, of Tennessee, married Mr. Clay, and left seven children—viz.: Margaret Clay, James Clay, William Clay, John L. Clay, Leonidas Clay, Sarah Clay, Martha Clay.

Susan McKree, fourth child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married William Barnett, and had seven children—viz.: William Barnett, Susan Barnett, Margaret Barnett, Ann Barnett, John Barnett, Jane Barnett, Robert Barnett.

Dinah McKree, fifth child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married Mr. Hart, and had five children—viz.: Mary Hart, Margaret Hart, Isabella Hart, William Hart, David Hart.

Margaret McKree, sixth child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married Mr. Spratt, and had eight children—viz.: Thomas Spratt, Robert Spratt, Margaret Spratt, Susan Spratt, James Spratt, Elizabeth Spratt, Martha Spratt, Leonidas Spratt.

Thomas McKree, seventh child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married, and had three children—viz.: William McKree, Robert McKree, Margaret McKree.

Harriet McKree, eighth child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married Mr. Taylor, and had three children—viz.: Mary Taylor, Robert Taylor, John Taylor.

Rachael McKree, ninth child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married Mr. Vance, and had two children—viz.: Robert Vance, James Vance.

William McKree, tenth child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, never married.

Mary McKree, eleventh child of Robert McKree and Margaret (Polk) McKree, married Mr. Barnett, and had two children—viz.: Mary Barnett, William Barnett.

Thomas Polk, seventh child of William Polk and Margaret (Taylor) Polk, was a very distinguished man. He married Susan Spratt, the daughter of Thomas Spratt. He and his brother, Ezekiel Polk, were both very prominent in the Mecklenburg Declaration, and were both signers. He was with Washington at Brandywine and Valley Forge. He was a general in the War of the Revolution. To Thomas and his wife, Susan (Spratt) Polk, were born eight children—viz.: 1, Thomas Polk; 2, William Polk; 3, Ezekiel Polk; 4, Charles Polk; 5, Martha Polk; 6, Margaret Polk; 7, Mary Polk; 8, James Polk.

Thomas Polk, the oldest child of General Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, never married. He was a captain in the Revolution, and died a gallant hero in the action of the battle of Eutaw.

Colonel William Polk, second son of General Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, was born in Mecklenburg County, N. C., July 9, 1758. He was a student of Queens College, Charlotte, at the breaking out of the Revolution. He left college, joining the army with rank of lieutenant, serving continuously to the close of the war, except when disabled from wounds. Colonel Polk was in the battles of Brandywine, Germantown, Camden, Guilford Court House, and Eutaw. He was a trustee of North Carolina University, at Chapel Hill, from 1790 to 1834, and for many years president of the State Bank. He was one of the original members of the "Order of the Cincinnati." He convoyed the "Liberty Bell" to Bethlehem. After the close of the war Colonel Polk was appointed by General Washington Supervisor of the State of North Carolina. He then moved from Charlotte to Raleigh, where he lived until his death in 1834. He welcomed LaFayette in 1824. Colonel William Polk was twice married: First, to Miss Grizelda (or Grizzie) Gilchrist; his second wife was Miss Sarah Hawkins.

All of Colonel Polk's children have passed away, excepting Mrs. Kenneth Rayner, a lady of high culture, residing with her daughter (Mrs. Joseph H. Hyman) in Stephenville, Texas.

The children of Colonel William Polk, by his two marriages, were ten; by his first marriage with Grizelda Gilchrist were two: 1, Thomas G. Polk; 2, William J. Polk. By the second marriage of Colonel William Polk and Sarah Hawkins there were eight children—viz.: 3, Lucius J. Polk; 4, Leonidas Polk; 5, Mary B. Polk; 6, Alexander Hamilton Polk; 7, Rufus K. Polk; 8, George W. Polk; 9, Susan S. Polk; 10, Andrew J. Polk.

General Thomas G. Polk, son of Colonel William Polk and Grizelda Gilchrist Polk, was born February 22, 1791, and married Mary Trotter. They had six children that gained maturity—viz.: 1, Jane Polk; 2, Mary A. Polk; 3, William Polk; 4, Rich-

ard Polk (died unmarried); 5, Emily Polk (died unmarried); 6, Thomas Polk (died unmarried).

Jane Polk, oldest child of General Thomas G. Polk, married Dr. A. Buchelle, and died leaving no children.

Mary A. Polk, second child of General Thomas G. Polk, married Hon. George Davis, North Carolina's distinguished son, Attorney General under Jefferson Davis. Six children lived to maturity—viz.: 1, Junius Davis; 2, Mary Davis (died unmarried); 3, Emily Davis; 4, Louis Davis (died unmarried); 5, Isabella Davis; 6, Margaret Davis.

Junius Davis, oldest child of Hon. George Davis and Mary (Polk) Davis, married, first, Mary Orme Walker; second, Mary Cowan, and had nine children—viz.: 1, Mary Polk Davis; 2, Thomas Davis; 3, Junius Davis; 4, George Davis; 5, Platt Davis; 6, Louis Davis; 7, Robert Cowan Davis; 8, Eliza Davis. The two last are children of the second marriage.

Emily Davis, third child of Hon. George Davis and Mary (Polk) Davis, married John Crowe, and had four children—viz.: 1, George Crowe; 2, Fairfax Crowe; 3, William Crowe; 4, Emmet Polk Crowe.

Isabella Davis, fifth child of Hon. George Davis and Mary (Polk) Davis, married Spencer Shotter, and had one child: Isabella Davis Shotter.

Margaret Davis, youngest child of Hon. George Davis and Mary (Polk) Davis, married George Rountree, and had three children—viz.: 1, Isabella Rountree; 2, Cynthia Rountree; 3, Meta Rountree.

Colonel William Polk, third child and oldest son of General Thomas G. Polk, is a prominent sugar planter of Louisiana, residing at "Ashton Plantation," a home widely known in the State for its charming hospitality. Colonel William Polk is a member of the Order of the Cincinnati. He married Rebecca Evalina Lamar, of Georgia, a cousin of Justice Lamar, and niece of General Mirabeau B. Lamar, President of Texas before its annexation. Their children are: 1, Alice Polk; 2, William Polk; 3, Eloise Polk.

Alice Polk, oldest child of Colonel William Polk and Eva (Lamar) Polk, married William P. Floner, a sugar planter, and has one child: William Polk Floner, Jr.

William Polk, second child of Colonel William Polk and Eva (Lamar) Polk, married Miss Baillio. He is a sugar planter and large landed proprietor in the parish of Rapides. They have one child: a son, called Lamar Polk.

Eloise Polk, third child of Colonel William Polk and Eva (Lamar) Polk, married David S. Ferris, of New York. They have one son: Colden Livingston Ferris.

William J. Polk, second son of Colonel William Polk and Grizelda (Gilchrist) Polk, was born March 21, 1793. He was a physician. He married Mary R. Long, granddaughter of General Allen Jones, of North Carolina. This lady had the brave, undaunted spirit of the Roman matron; and, when in the late Civil War General Buell offered it, declined protection for herself and home, while her sons were exposed to the dangers of the field. The children of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk that lived to maturity were: 1, Grizelda Gilchrist Polk; 2, Allen J. Polk; 3, Thomas G. Polk; 4, Lucius E. Polk; 5, Mary J. Polk; 6, Cadwallader Polk; 7, Rufus J. Polk.

Grizelda Gilchrist Polk, oldest child of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, married Judge Russell Houston, a man of integrity, talent, and prominence; a son of Tennessee, one of her foremost lawyers, and at one time Chief Justice of that State; for twenty-five years counsel for the Louisville & Nashville Railroad. He was a Whig in his politics as long as that party existed, and, although sympathizing with his people, he was an earnest Union man when the war came on, and a friend of Governor Andrew Johnson. The children of Judge Russell Houston that lived to maturity were: 1, Mary R. Houston; 2, Allen P. Houston; 3, Lucius E. Houston; 4, Elise Houston.

Mary Russell Houston, oldest child of Judge Russell Houston and Grizelda (Polk) Houston, married Lytle Buchanan.

Allen P. Houston, second child of Judge Russell Houston and Grizelda (Polk) Houston, married Mattie Belle Shreve. They

have three children—viz.: 1, Russell Houston; 2, Bell L. Houston; 3, Allen P. Houston.

Lucia E. Houston, third child of Judge Russell Houston and Grizelda Polk Houston, married George H. Hull, and has five children—viz.: 1, Grizelda H. Hull; 2, George H. Hull; 3, Lytle B. Hull; 4, Russell H. Hull; 5, Lucia H. Hull.

Elise Houston, fourth child of Judge Russell Houston and Grizelda (Polk) Houston, married Joseph L. Ferrell. They had two children: 1, Grizelda H. Ferrell (dead); 2, Mary Russell Ferrell.

Allen J. Polk, second child and oldest son of Dr. William Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, was born March 5, 1824; died, 1897. He was born at Farmville, N. C.; was educated at Chapel Hill, at the University of North Carolina; studied and practiced law with his brother-in-law, Judge Russell Houston, at Columbia, Tenn.; at different times resided in North Carolina, Tennessee, Kentucky, Mississippi, and Arkansas, and spent much time in Washington. He was a man widely known for his brilliant social qualities, high culture, genial disposition, and personal magnetism, numbering many of the most noted men of the day among his personal friends. Major Allen Polk derived his title from the commission he held during the late Civil War. He was never in active service, but used his means and his influence, with untiring zeal, in behalf of the South. He was twice married. First he married, in 1846, Mary Clendennin; and, second, he married Anna Clark Fitzhugh, of Louisville, Ky. By the first marriage of Major Allen J. Polk one child is living—viz.: Mary Polk, who married Frank Hemphill, and has three children—viz.: 1, Mary Hemphill; 2, Allen Hemphill; 3, Polk Hemphill.

By the second marriage of Major Allen J. Polk and Anna (Fitzhugh) Polk there were four children—viz.: Ludie Polk, Anna Lee Polk, Zelda Polk, Robin Allen Polk (unmarried).

Ludie Polk, daughter of Major Allen J. Polk and Anna (Fitzhugh) Polk, married Mr. T. W. Keesee, January 13, 1887. Their children are:

Zelda Polk Keesee, born January 31, 1889.

Thomas Woolfin Keesee, born July 13, 1891.

Allen Polk Keesee, born October 1, 1896.

Anna Lee Polk, daughter of Major Allen J. Polk and Anna (Fitzhugh) Polk, married Mr. L. A. Pepper. Their children are:

Allen Polk Pepper (girl), born December 5, 1888.

Zelda Fontaine Pepper, born March 27, 1889.

Anna Fitzhugh Pepper, born February 7, 1895.

Zelda Polk, daughter of Major Allen J. Polk and Anna Fitzhugh Polk, married D. T. Hargraves, November 12, 1890.

Thomas G. Polk, physician of Decatur, Ala., third child of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, was born in Mecklenburg, N. C., December 5, 1825; died in Decatur, Ala., June 14, 1877. He was a graduate of the Jefferson Medical College, of Philadelphia. He was a volunteer during the war with Mexico. Being debarred by ill health from regular service during the late Civil War, he volunteered his services to the Confederacy as voluntary aid on the staff of General J. C. Tappan and others; served at the battles of Vicksburg, Mansfield, and Pleasant Hill. Dr. Thomas G. Polk married, in 1851, Lavinia C. Wood, a descendant of the famous Mason family, of Virginia. They had four children—viz.: 1, Mary Polk; 2, Caroline Polk; 3, Grizelda Polk; 4, William J. Polk.

Mary Polk, oldest child of Dr. Thomas G. Polk, married W. W. Littlejohn, of Decatur, Ala., and has three children—viz.: 1, Thomas Littlejohn; 2, Margaret Littlejohn; 3, Lavinia Littlejohn.

Margaret, their second child, married William Spright.

Caroline Polk, second child of Dr. Thomas G. Polk and Lavinia (Wood) Polk, married Hamilton S. Hornor, of Helena, Ark., and has two children—viz.: 1, John Sidney Hornor; 2, Minnie Polk Hornor.

Grizelda Polk, third child of Dr. Thomas G. Polk and Lavinia (Wood) Polk, married Henry R. Stirling, of Lower Louisiana, and has one child: Mary Breffin Stirling.

William J. Polk, fourth child and only son of Dr. Thomas G. Polk and Lavinia (Wood) Polk, married Euola Greenleaf, and has one child: Magdaline Tasker Polk.



Lucius E. Polk, fourth son of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, was born July 10, 1833, in Salisbury, N. C.; was educated at the University of Virginia; settled in Phillips County, Ark., and for several years led the quiet life of a planter. When General Patrick R. Cleburne raised his company of the "Yell Rifles," that became famous not only for its fighting qualities, but for the number of generals—Cleburne, Hurdeman, Polk, and Govan—it turned out, Lucius E. Polk entered this company as a private. He was soon elected lieutenant, and commanded the company at the battle of Shiloh. His company and regiment suffered heavily in killed and wounded. Colonel Harris, the colonel in command, was killed, and at once Lieutenant Polk was elected colonel. There were in that battle, I believe, forty-five representatives of the Polk family. Col. Lucius E. Polk was with General Cleburne in the Kirby Smith raid into Kentucky, at the battle of Richmond, and was slightly wounded. General Kirby Smith's division joined Lieutenant General Bragg's army. The retreat from Kentucky had been ordered, with the immense train of supplies taken in Kentucky. Lieutenant General Leonidas Polk was left behind, to hold General Buell's army in check. The battle of Perryville was fought, and Colonel Polk was wounded in the foot, and he suffered with the wound for several months, during which time he received his commission of Brigadier General. This commission he christened a few days after in the battle of Murfreesboro, December 30 and 31, 1862. After the desperate battle of Ringgold's Gap, General Cleburne writes to Brigadier Generals Polk and Long and Colonels Govan and Granberry: "I must return my thanks. Four better officers are not in the service of the Confederacy. The conduct of officers and men in this fight needs no comment; so far as I know, every man did his whole duty."

For this successful fight the Confederate Congress, by a joint resolution, returned thanks to Major General P. R. Cleburne and the officers and men under his command for distinguished service at Ringgold's Gap, in the State of Georgia. The battle of Chickamauga was fought the 19th and 20th of September, 1863. Gen-

eral Lucius E. Polk distinguished himself in this battle. Major General Breckenridge says of Cleburne's division: "Having received permission from Lieutenant General Hill to make another charge, the division advanced with intrepidity, under a severe fire, and dashed over the left of the entrenchments. In passing them, I saw on my left the right wing of Major General Cleburne, whose brave division turned the center." This right wing of Cleburne's division was the brigade of General L. E. Polk. General Cleburne, brave and just, always took pleasure in recording the gallant conduct of his officers and men. He says: "I have already incidentally called attention to the gallant conduct of Brigadier General Polk, but it is due him and the country, which wishes to appreciate its faithful servants to-day, that to the intrepidity and stern determination of purpose of himself and men I was principally indebted for the success of the charge on Sunday evening, which drove the enemy from the breastworks and gave us the victory."

It was General Polk's good fortune to have been ordered, with his fighting brigade, to make the charge, and to have captured the northwest angle of the enemy's works. The commendation of his superior officers has woven a garland for him that would have graced the brow of an older soldier.

General L. E. Polk was with his command in all the fights up to Kennesaw Mountains. It was in this battle that his horse was killed under him by a fragment of shell, and he was wounded in the leg. He refused to have it amputated, suffered many months, and never entirely recovered the use of it. General Polk, like his friend, General Cleburne, rose by his own merit. He was a remarkably handsome, distinguished-looking man, had a brave and noble spirit, was exceedingly modest, never fighting his battles over except with old comrades, even refusing to write or furnish a sketch of his life when urged to do so by his alma mater. He died at his home in Tennessee, October, 1894. (Collected from notes of Col. A. J. Polk of his brother's life; from war records of the Confederacy; from "The War of the Rebellion;" from Cleburne's, Bragg's, Breckenridge's, etc., reports.)

General Lucius E. Polk married Sallie Moore Polk, daughter of Rufus K. Polk and Sarah (Jackson) Polk. They had five children to gain maturity—viz.: 1, Rufus Polk; 2, Rebecca Polk; 3, Lucius Polk; 4, William Polk; 5, James K. Polk.

Rufus Polk, oldest child of General Lucius E. Polk and Sallie (Polk) Polk, married Isabella Greer, of Pennsylvania. They have two children: 1, Emma Polk; 2, Porter Polk.

Rebecca Polk, daughter of General Lucius E. Polk and Sallie (Polk) Polk, married Scott Harlem, of Tennessee. They have three children: 1, Sarah Polk; 2, Ben. Polk; 3, Lucius Polk.

The other three children of General Lucius E. Polk and Sallie (Polk) Polk are unmarried at the time of this writing.

Mary J. Polk, daughter of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, married Colonel Joseph G. Branch, of Arkansas. Four children lived to maturity—viz.: 1, Mary Branch; 2, Lucia Branch; 3, Lawrence Branch (unmarried); 4, Joseph Branch (unmarried).

Mary Branch, oldest child of Colonel Joseph G. Branch and Mary (Polk) Branch, married Dr. Charles Winn. They have one child: Lawrence Branch Winn.

Lucia Branch, daughter of Colonel Joseph G. Branch and Mary (Polk) Branch, married William Howard, of St. Louis. They have one child: Gerald Howard.

Cadwallader Polk, born October 11, 1839, sixth child of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, was a brave officer in the Confederate service; entered the war as a lieutenant in the First Tennessee Regiment; served under Stonewall Jackson during his victorious campaign in Western Virginia; was later transferred to Gen. Price's staff, under whose command he served with such distinction that at the age of twenty-one he was promoted to the rank of Colonel; was desperately wounded and left on the field for dead at the battle of Prairie Grove, Ark.; was captured by Northern troops, and nursed to health in their hospital. He married Carrie Lowry, of Louisiana. Six children lived to maturity—viz.: 1, William J. Polk; 2, Annie T. Polk; 3,

Walter Polk (unmarried); 4, Cadwallader Polk (unmarried); 5, Nina Polk; 6, Edwin Moore Polk (unmarried).

William J. Polk, oldest child of Colonel Cadwallader Polk and Carrie (Lowry) Polk, married Lulu Donnell, January, 1891. They have two children—viz.: 1, George Polk; 2, Caroline Polk.

Annie T. Polk, daughter of Colonel Cadwallader Polk and Carrie (Lowry) Polk, married Christopher Agee, November 19, 1890. They have one child: Walter Polk, born September, 1891.

Nina Polk, daughter of Colonel Cadwallader Polk and Carrie (Lowry) Polk, married William Crolidge, November, 1893. They have two children: 1, William Crolidge, born January, 1895; 2, Elizabeth Crolidge, born January, 1897.

Rufus J. Polk, seventh child of Dr. William J. Polk and Mary (Long) Polk, was in 1862 a student of the University of North Carolina, only seventeen years of age. He left the University and joined the Confederate Army; was appointed second lieutenant of Hume's Artillery, stationed at Island No. 10 in the Mississippi River, where he was taken prisoner the following April, and sent to Camp Chace, and later to Johnson's Island, where he was detained six months; was exchanged at Vicksburg, and appointed adjutant of Colonel Baker's regiment; soon afterwards he was appointed aid-de-camp to his brother, General Lucius E. Polk, and served through the war in the Army of Tennessee; was desperately wounded at Selma, Ala., where he fought the last battle but one of the Civil War. He married, in 1867, Cynthia, daughter of George W. Martin and Narcissa (Pillow) Martin. Capt. Rufus J. Polk and his wife reside in Little Rock, Ark., and have four sons—viz.: 1, Lucius Eugene Polk (unmarried); 2, Rufus J. Polk (unmarried); 3, William Julius Polk (unmarried); 4, Charles Leonidas Polk (unmarried).

General Lucius J. Polk, born March 16, 1802, son of Colonel William Polk and Sarah (Hawkins) Polk, married, first, Mary Easten; second, Mrs. Ann Pope (née Ervin), widow of William Pope. Ten children lived to maturity—eight by the first marriage, two by the second marriage—viz.: 1, Sarah Rachel Polk; 2, Mary Brown Polk; 3, Emily Donaldson Polk; 4, William Polk;

5, Eliza Easten Polk (unmarried); 6, Frances Anne Polk; 7, 8, Susan Rebecca Polk and George Washington Polk (twins); 9, Lucius Julius Polk; 10, Elvira Juliet Polk.

Sarah Rachel Polk, oldest child of General Lucius J. Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, married Captain Robin (ap.) Cadwallader Jones, of Hillsboro, N. C. He was killed at Brandy Station, Va., during the late war. He was in Wade Hampton's command. Five children of this marriage reached maturity—viz.: 1, Mary Polk Jones; 2, Rebecca Edwards Jones (unmarried); 3, Robin (ap.) Robin Jones (unmarried); 4, Sarah Polk Jones; 5, Lucy C. Jones.

Mary Polk Jones, oldest child of Captain Robin (ap.) Cadwallader Jones and Sarah Rachel (Polk) Jones, married Colonel D. B. Cooper, of Nashville, Tenn.; and died, 1893, leaving five children: 1, Sarah Polk Cooper; 2, William F. Cooper; 3, Robin Jones Cooper; 4, Mary Brown Cooper; 5, Duncan Brown Cooper.

Sarah Polk Jones, fourth child of Captain Robin (ap.) C. Jones and Sarah Rachel (Polk) Jones, married J. C. Bradford, lawyer of Nashville, Tenn. They have two children: 1, Thomas Bradford; 2, Sarah Polk Bradford.

Lucy Cadwallader Jones, youngest child of Captain Robin (ap.) Cadwallader Jones and Sarah Rachel (Polk) Jones, married Stanley B. Herndon, of Mobile, Ala. They have three children: Robin Jones Herndon, Virginia Herndon, Rebecca Jones Herndon.

Mary Brown Polk, daughter of General Lucius J. Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, married Colonel Henry C. Yeatman (a staff officer of General Leonidas Polk); died, 1891, leaving six children—viz.:

1. Mary Badger Yeatman.
2. Henry Clay Yeatman (died December 20, 1896).
3. Russell Houston Yeatman (died 1892).
4. Tryvant Player Yeatman (unmarried).
5. Jane Bell Yeatman (unmarried).
6. Lucia Polk Yeatman (unmarried).

Emily D. Polk, daughter of General Lucius J. Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, married Major J. Minick Williams (on staff of Generals Leonidas Polk and J. P. Stuart); died, 1891, leaving six children:

1. Henry Yeatman Williams (married Louisa Pilcher; lives in Nashville; no children).
2. James Minick Williams (lawyer; unmarried).
3. Lucius Polk Williams (unmarried; lives in Texas).
4. Nannie M. Williams (died 1890).
5. Eliza Polk Williams (died 1892).
6. Priscilla Shelby Williams (unmarried).

William Polk, oldest son and fourth child of General Lucius Junius Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, married Rebecca Mayes. One child; died an infant.

Frances Anne Polk, daughter of General Lucius J. Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, married Colonel Edward Dillon, of "Indian Rock," Botetourt County, Va. He was an officer of the old army, and afterwards colonel in Confederate States Army, at one time in Van Dorn's command. Seven children—viz.: 1, James Royal Dillon (of Galveston, Texas; unmarried); 2, Edward Dillon; 3, Lucius Polk Dillon; 4, John Cunningham Dillon; 5, Eliza Polk Dillon; 6, Frances Polk Dillon; 7, Frank Cunningham Dillon.

Susan Rebecca Polk, daughter of General Lucius J. Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, born July 7, 1847, married Major Campbell Brown (formerly on staff of Generals Ewell and Joseph E. Johnston). He died August, 1893, leaving five children—viz.:

Lucius Polk, born August, 1867; married Jessie Roberts, daughter of Albert Roberts, of Nashville, Tenn., and great niece of Professor T. H. Huxley, the English scientist. They have one son: Campbell Huxley Brown, born October 25, 1896.

Richard Ewell Brown, second child of Susan Rebecca (Polk) Brown and Major Campbell Brown, born January 12, 1869; physician, New York City (unmarried).

George Campbell Brown, born September 25, 1871; third son of Susan Rebecca (Polk) Brown and Campbell Brown (unmarried); farmer, Spring Hill, Tenn.

Percy Brown and Lizinka Campbell Brown, twin children of Major Campbell Brown and Susan Rebecca (Polk) Brown, born April 6, 1873 (unmarried).

George Washington Polk, son of General Lucius J. Polk and Mary (Easten) Polk, married Jane Jackson, of Florence, Ala. He is land agent for the Southern Pacific Railroad, and lives in San Antonio, Texas. They have three children: 1, George Washington Polk; 2, Janie Jackson Polk; 3, Henry Jackson Polk.

Lucius Junius Polk, son of General Lucius Junius Polk and Ann Polk, his wife, is General Manager of the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe Railroad, and resides in Galveston, Texas. He married the beautiful Daisy Cantrell, of Little Rock, Ark. They had six children: 1, Armour Cantrell Polk; 2, Ann Leroy Polk; 3, Lucius Junius Polk; 4, Margaret Wendell Polk; 5, Daisy Cantrell Polk; 6, Ellen Cantrell Polk (deceased).

Elvira Juliette Polk, daughter of General Lucius J. Polk and Ann, his wife, married Horace Cooper, of Nashville, Tenn. Has one child: Horace Cooper.

Leonidas Polk, born March 16, 1802, second child of Colonel William Polk by his second marriage with Sarah Harkins, went through West Point, graduated at Alexandria Theological Seminary, and was elected Bishop of Louisiana. It was through his enthusiastic efforts that the University of the South was established at Sewanee, Tenn. He was lieutenant general in the Confederate Army, and was killed on Pine Mountain, in the fifty-eighth year of his age. The life of Bishop Leonidas Polk has recently been given to the public in the charming volumes of his son, Dr. William M. Polk, of New York. Bishop Leonidas Polk married Frances Devereux. To Bishop Polk and his wife were born eight children—viz.: 1, Hamilton Polk; 2, Frances D. Polk; 3, Katherine Polk; 4, Sarah Polk; 5, Susan R. Polk; 6, Elizabeth Polk; 7, William M. Polk; 8, Lucia Polk.

Hamilton Polk, oldest son of Bishop and General Leonidas Polk and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married Emily Beach; and died, leaving five sons: 1, Frank Polk; 2, Leonidas Polk; 3, Hamilton Polk; 4, George Polk; 5, Beach Polk.

Frances Polk, second child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married Peyton Skipwith; and died, leaving two children: Kate Skipwith and Frank Skipwith.

Katherine Polk, third child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married William D. Gale, and had six children—viz.: 1, Frances Gale; 2, William Dudley Gale; 3, Katherine Gale; 4, Leonide Gale; 5, Josephine Gale; 6, Ethel Gale. The last four died unmarried.

Frances, oldest child of William D. Gale and Katherine (Polk) Gale, married Frank W. Ring.

William Dudley Gale, second child of William D. Gale and Katherine (Polk) Gale, married Meta Orr Jackson.

Sarah Polk, fourth child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married Frank Blake. One son: Frank Polk Blake.

Susan R. Polk, fifth child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married Joseph Jones. Had three children: Hamilton Jones, Fanny Jones, Laura Jones.

Elizabeth Polk, sixth child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married W. E. Huger, and had six children—viz.: Frances Huger, Lucia Huger, Emily Huger, John Huger, Arthur Huger, William Huger.

Frances Huger, the oldest of these children, married Mr. H. Laboiousse; and Lucia Huger, the second child, married Joseph Hardy.

William Mecklenburg Polk, seventh child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, is a prominent physician residing in New York. He married Ida Lyon, and has four children: 1, Frank Polk; 2, Metcalf Polk; 3, Leonidas Polk; 4, Serena Polk.

Lucia Polk, eighth child of Leonidas Polk, bishop and general, and Frances (Devereux) Polk, married Edward Chapman. No children.

Mary B. Polk, born August 28, 1808, the third child of Colonel William Polk and Sarah (Hawkins) Polk, married Hon.



George E. Badger. Two children lived to maturity—viz.: 1, Katherine M. Badger; 2, Sallie Polk Badger.

Katherine M. Badger married William Haigh, and had three children: 1, George B. Haigh; 2, Sallie Haigh; 3, Mary Polk Haigh (died unmarried).

George B. Haigh, son of William Haigh and Katherine M. (Badger) Haigh, married Dora B. Williamson. Has one child: Kate Mallon Haigh.

Sallie Haigh, daughter of William Haigh and Katherine M. (Badger) Haigh, married Montford McGehee. Four children: 1, William Underwood; 2, John Underwood; 3, Joseph Underwood; 4, George Underwood; 5, Kate Underwood; 6, Mary Underwood; 7, Ellen Underwood; 8, Elizabeth Underwood.

Sallie Polk Badger, daughter of Hon. George E. Badger and Mary (Polk) Badger, married Montford McGehee. Four children—viz.:

1. Thomas McGehee (died unmarried).
2. George B. McGehee; married Eliza Skinner; two children—viz.: 1, Annie McGehee; 2, Mary McGehee.
3. William Polk McGehee (died unmarried).
4. Lucius McGehee (died unmarried).

Alexander Hamilton Polk, born September 19, 1810; fourth child of Colonel William Polk and Sarah (Hawkins) Polk (died unmarried).

Rufus King Polk, born May 15, 1814, son of Colonel William Polk and Sarah (Hawkins) Polk, married Sarah Jackson. One child lived to maturity, Sallie Moore Polk, who married her cousin, General Lucius E. Polk. (See Dr. William J. Polk line.)

Colonel George W. Polk, born July 12, 1817, son of Colonel William Polk and Sarah (Hawkins) Polk, married Sallie Hilliard. Ten children lived to maturity—viz.: 1, James H. Polk; 2, Rufus King Polk; 3, Sallie Hawkins Polk (unmarried); 4, Mary M. Polk; 5, Susan S. Polk; 6, George B. Polk (died unmarried); 7, L. Junius Polk (unmarried); 8, J. Hilliard Polk; 9, William H. Polk; 10, Carolina Polk.

Captain James H. Polk, oldest son of Colonel George W. Polk and Sallie (Hilliard) Polk, married Mary Harding, of Nashville, Tenn. Two children: 1, Harding Polk; 2, George W. Polk.

Rufus K. Polk, son of Colonel George W. Polk and Sallie (Hilliard) Polk, married Margaret Phillips. One child: Mary Polk.

Mary M. Polk, daughter of Colonel George W. Polk and Sallie (Hilliard) Polk, married Judge J. J. DuBose, of Memphis, Tenn. Seven children—viz.: 1, Tasker DuBose; 2, Mary DuBose; 3, Alfred DuBose; 4, Jessie DuBose; 5, George Polk DuBose; 6, Sadie DuBose; 7, Julius J. DuBose (all unmarried).

Susan S. Polk, daughter of Colonel George W. Polk and Sallie (Hilliard) Polk, married James Player, of Missouri, and had five children—viz.: 1, George Polk Player; 2, James Player; 3, Thompson Player; 4, Trezevant Player; 5, Sallie Hilliard Player.

William H. Polk, son of Colonel George W. Polk and Sallie (Hilliard) Polk, married, and has one child: Sallie Leah Polk.

Caroline Polk, daughter of Colonel George W. Polk and Sallie (Hilliard) Polk, married first Isaac Hilliard; second, Joseph Horton. No children.

Susan S. Polk, born May 25, 1823, married Hon. Kenneth Rayner. He was in public life from early manhood, serving in the North Carolina Legislature. He was for six years in Congress, and declined reëlection. He was appointed by President Grant one of the Judges of the "Court of Alabama Claims." (Grant was a Whig; so was the Hon. Kenneth Rayner.) He was Solicitor of the Treasury for seven years, up to the time of his death, in 1884.

Six children of Hon. Kenneth Rayner and Susan (Polk) Rayner lived to maturity—viz.: 1, Sallie Polk Rayner; 2, Henry A. Rayner (died unmarried); 3, Kenneth Rayner; 4, Susan P. Rayner; 5, William Polk Rayner; 6, Hamilton Rayner.

Sallie Polk Rayner, daughter of Hon. Kenneth Rayner and Susan S. (Polk) Rayner, married Colonel Joseph H. Hyman. Six children—viz.: 1, Susan Polk Hyman; 2, Harry Hyman; 3,

Mary Rayner Hyman; 4, Sallie Josephine Hyman; 5, Kenneth Rayner Hyman; 6, Joseph Henry Hyman.

Kenneth Rayner, son of Hon. Kenneth Rayner and Susan S. (Polk) Rayner, married Eugenia Leach; died, leaving no children.

Susan P. Rayner, daughter of Hon. Kenneth Rayner and Susan S. (Polk) Rayner, married Dr. Arthur Glennan. Two children: 1, Arthur W. Glennan; 2, Kenneth Rayner Glennan.

William Polk Rayner, son of Hon. Kenneth Rayner and Susan S. (Polk) Rayner, married Lula Ragsdale; died, leaving no children.

Hamilton Rayner, son of Hon. Kenneth Rayner and Susan S. (Polk) Rayner, married Eliza Nelms. One child: Kenneth Polk Rayner.

Colonel Andrew J. Polk, born August 10, 1824, son of Colonel William Polk, and Sarah (Hawkins) Polk, married Rebecca Van Leer, daughter of Anthony Wayne Van Leer. Three children lived to maturity—viz.: 1, Antoinette Van Leer Polk; 2, Anthony Van Leer Polk (unmarried); 3, Rebecca K. Polk (unmarried).

Antoinette Van Leer Polk, daughter of Colonel Andrew Jackson Polk and Rebecca (Van Leer) Polk, married Marquis de Cherette. One child: Anthony Van Leer Polk de Cherette.

Mrs. Andrew J. Polk and Miss Polk reside with Madame Cherette, at Cannes, France. Anthony Van Leer Polk, United States Consul to Calcutta, recently resigned.

Ezekiel Polk, third child of General Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, died at sea, unmarried.

Charles Polk, fourth child of General Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, married the daughter of Hezekiah Alexander, and had two sons: Thomas Independence Polk and Charles Polk.

Thomas Independence Polk (so called because he was born on the fourth of July), oldest son of Charles Polk and (Miss Alexander) his wife, was Captain Thomas I. Polk, who married Sarah Moore, and moved to Tennessee. They had six children—viz.: 1, Charles Polk; 2, Mary Polk; 3, Horace Moore Polk; 4, Thomas Polk; 5, Emma Polk; 6, Napoleon Polk (died without issue).

Charles, the oldest son of Captain Thomas I. Polk and Sarah (Moore) Polk, married L. LeNair, and had eight children—viz.: 1, John Polk; 2, Eugene Polk; 3, Emma Polk; 4, Ella Polk; 5, Sarah Polk; 6, Napoleon Polk; 7, Sarah Polk; 8, Charles Polk.

Mary Polk, second child of Captain Thomas I. Polk and Sarah (Moore) Polk, married Mr. Potts, and had four children—viz.: 1, William Potts; 2, Thomas Potts; 3, Edgar Potts; 4, Horace Potts.

Horace M. Polk, third child of Captain Thomas I. Polk and Sarah (Moore) Polk, resided in Tennessee and Louisiana; served in the Legislatures of both States; was in the State Senate of Louisiana when the war broke out; opposed secession, but followed his State when she seceded, and was Colonel in the Trans-Mississippi Department. He married his cousin, Ophelia Bills, and had eight children—viz.: 1, Thomas I. Polk (died an infant); 2, John H. Polk; 3, Horace M. Polk; 4, Newton N. Polk; 5, Mary Polk (died an infant); 6, Evelyn Polk (married, first, Mr. J. H. Brigham; second, Mr. Pickens); 7, Clara Polk (married Mr. Gray); 8, Ophelia Polk (never married).

Horace Moore Polk, third son of Horace M. Polk and Ophelia Bills, married Mary Campbell, and had two children: 1, Campbell (died in infancy); 2, Allen Polk.

Thomas Polk, fourth child of Capt. Thomas I. Polk and Sarah (Moore) Polk, married —, and had two children, Leonidas Polk and Clarence Polk.

Emma Polk, fifth child of Capt. Thomas I. Polk and Sarah (Moore) Polk, married Mr. Bouchelle, and had two children: a son, Julian Bouchelle, and another child.

Charles Polk, second son of Charles Polk and Miss Alexander, his wife, married M. James, and had five children—viz.: Mary Polk, Emma Polk, Charles Polk, Frances Polk, Henrietta Polk.

Martha Polk, fifth child of Gen. Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, married the famous Dr. Ephraim Brevard, and had a daughter, Martha Brevard, who married Mr. Dickerson, of South Carolina, and left one son, Col. James Dickerson (killed in the Mexican War).

Margaret Polk, sixth child of Gen. Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, married Gov. Nathaniel Alexander, and left no children.

(Badger) Haigh, married Joseph B. Underwood. Eight chil-

Mary Polk, seventh child of Gen. Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, married Daniel Browne, a distinguished lawyer, of South Carolina. They had three children, but none of them lived to maturity.

James Polk, eighth child of Gen. Thomas Polk and Susan (Spratt) Polk, married the daughter of Col. Moore.

Ezekiel Polk, eighth child of William Polk and Margaret (Taylor) Polk, was captain in the Revolutionary War; colonel of militia soon after that period; sheriff of Mecklenburg County, N. C.; and one of the prime movers in the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence. Before the Revolution, in 1763, he was sheriff of Tryon County. Col. Ezekiel Polk married three times, and left twelve children. First, he married Mary Wilson; second, he married Bessie Davis (by his second marriage he had several children, who died in childhood); and, third, he married Mrs. Lennard, a widow. Her maiden name was Sophia Neely, born in Fincastle, Va. The eight children by the first marriage of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary Wilson were: 1, Thomas Polk; 2, William Polk; 3, Matilda Polk; 4, Samuel Polk; 5, John Polk; 6, Louisa Polk; 7, Clarissa Polk; 8, Mary Polk. The four children of Col. Ezekiel Polk by his marriage with Mrs. Lennard are: 9, Charles Perry Polk; 10, Benigna Polk; 11, Eugene Polk; 12, Edwin Polk.

Thomas Polk, oldest child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married —, and had seven children—viz.: 1, Thomas Polk; 2, Mary Polk; 3, Irvin Polk; 4, Ezekiel Polk; 5, Adelina Polk; 6, Amelia Polk; 7, Lecie Polk (who married Mr. Lennard, and had two children, Lucius Lennard and Eliza Lennard).

William, second son of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married Elizabeth Dodd, and had eight children—viz.: Clarissa Polk, Laura Polk, Mary Polk, Olivia Polk, Jackson J. Polk, Caroline Polk, Thomas Polk, and Sarah Polk.

Clarissa Polk, oldest child of William Polk and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, married Mr. Taylor, and had five children—viz.: 1, Isaac Taylor; 2, Laura Taylor; 3, Thomas Taylor; 4, Caroline Taylor; 5, Clarissa Taylor.

Laura Polk, second child of William Polk and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, married, first, Mr. Manly; second, Mr. Taylor. There were three children by her first marriage—viz.: 1, William Manly; 2, Clarissa Manly; 3, Elizabeth Manly. By the second marriage of Laura Polk and Mr. Taylor there were three Taylor children.

Mary Polk, third child of William Polk and Eliza (Dodd) Polk, married Mr. Howard, and had two children: 1, William Howard; 2, Sarah Howard.

Olivia Polk, fourth child of William Polk and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, married Mr. D. D. Berry, and had nine children—viz.: 1, Elizabeth Berry; 2, Laura T. Berry; 3, Clarissa C. Berry; 4, Louisa M. Berry; 5, Mary E. Berry; 6, Olivia P. Berry; 7, John T. Berry; 8, William B. Berry; 9, Daniel D. Berry.

Jackson Polk, fifth child of William Polk and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, married —, and had four children—viz.: 1, Ann Polk; 2, William Polk; 3, Oscar Polk; 4, Virginia Polk.

Caroline Polk, daughter of William Polk and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, married John Wirt, and had two children (twins), Caroline Wirt and Catherine Wirt.

Thomas Polk, son of William and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, never married.

Sarah Polk, youngest child of William Polk and Elizabeth (Dodd) Polk, married Mr. Kent, and had one child, Joseph Kent.

Matilda Polk, third child of Col. Ezekiel and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married Mr. Campbell, and had nine children—viz.: 1, Robert Campbell; 2, Mary Campbell; 3, Madison Campbell; 4, Eliza Campbell; 5, William Campbell; 6, Matilda Campbell; 7, Julius Campbell; 8, Caroline Campbell; 9, John Campbell.

Robert Campbell, oldest child of Mr. Campbell and Matilda (Polk) Campbell, married —, and had six children—viz.: 1, Harriet Campbell (married Mr. Kirby, and left two children); 2,

John Campbell (married —, and left one child, Mary Campbell); 3, Jane Campbell; 4, Bruce Campbell; 5, Elizabeth Campbell; and one other child.

Mary Campbell, daughter of Robert Campbell and Matilda (Polk) Campbell, married Mr. Miller.

Elizabeth Campbell, daughter of Robert Campbell and Matilda (Polk) Campbell, married Mr. Alexander.

Samuel Polk, fourth child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married Jane Knox, great-great niece of John Knox, of Scotland. She was the daughter of Col. James Knox, great-nephew of the Scotch reformer. She was a strict Presbyterian.

The Polk family in Scotland many times intermarried with the House of Stuart. Now we find that they also inherit the descent of the Knox family. I cannot find in what degree Joanna Knox and her sister Nancy were related to the famous John Knox, whose integrity knew no compromise, and whose truth was stronger than royalty, and resisted the charms of the most beautiful and fascinating woman of that age.

“Col. James Knox was one of the prime movers in establishing American independence, and was one of the first members of the Order of the Cincinnati.” (Ramsey’s *Annals of Tennessee*, page 97.) Col. Knox, father of Jane, was an officer in the Revolutionary War.

Samuel Polk married Jane Knox in 1806, and removed, with his family, to Tennessee. He died in 1827. To Samuel Polk and Jane, his wife, were born ten children—viz.: 1, James Knox Polk; 2, Jane Maria Polk; 3, Eliza Polk; 4, Marshall Polk; 5, John L. Polk; 6, Franklin Polk; 7, Naomi Polk; 8, Ophelia Polk; 9, William H. Polk; 10, Samuel Polk.

James Knox Polk, eldest child of Samuel and Jane (Knox) Polk, was born in North Carolina, Nov. 2, 1795; died in Tennessee, June 15, 1849. He became a member of the Tennessee bar in 1820, and soon took first rank among his colleagues. He was elected member of Congress in 1825, where he was distinguished for his firmness and industry, and where he was chosen Speaker for three successive terms. His opinions coincided with those of

the Democratic party, by which, in 1844, he was chosen President of the republic. It was during his administration that the war against Mexico was successfully terminated and the general Democratic policy maintained. (Pulnam's Cyclopaedia, page 694.)

President Polk was elected by the Democratic party eleventh President of the United States, and was inaugurated March 4, 1845. He was a man of the greatest purity and highest integrity of character, tenderly beloved and venerated by those who knew him best, the members of his family and household. His many public honors show the high estimation in which he was held by his fellow-citizens of the country at large. He married Sarah Childress, and left no descendants.

Mrs. Jane Barnett, of Columbia, Tenn., niece of President Polk, has a valuable collection of portraits, representing five generations, beginning with Jane Knox, wife of Samuel Polk and mother of President Polk; second generation: President James K. Polk and his sister, Jane Maria, wife of James Walker; third generation: Jane (Walker) Barnett, daughter of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker; the fourth generation are the children of Major I. N. Barnett and his wife, Jane Walker Barnett; and the fifth generation are the grandchildren of Major Barnett and Jane (Walker) Barnett.

Jane Maria Polk,\* second child of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, married James Walker, a native of Kentucky. She lived to be seventy-nine years old. James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker had nine children—viz.: 1, Samuel P. Walker; 2, James H. Walker; 3, J. Knox Walker; 4, Jane Walker; 5, Mary Walker; 6, Sarah Walker; 7, Annie M. Walker; 8, L. Marshall Walker; 9, Andrew Walker.

Samuel P. Walker, oldest son of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker, married —; had eight children—viz.: 1, Maria Walker; 2, Catherine Walker; 3, James Walker; 4, John

---

\* A touching "In Memoriam" poem was written of Mrs. Maria Walker by the gifted Mrs. Naomi H. Moore (née Hays), who is widely known for her talent and life full of good works and many charities. Her large contribution to the erection of a monument to the Confederate dead and her last work, the erection of the Ophelia Polk Moore Home for Orphan Girls, will ever be remembered by a grateful public.



W. Walker; 5, Samuel P. Walker; 6, William Walker; 7, Knox Walker; 8, Ellen Walker.

James Walker, the third child of Samuel P. Walker, was killed in the Confederate States Army service at Bellmond. His regiment was commanded by Col. J. Knox, his uncle.

James H. Walker, second child of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker, was an old soldier in 1860, having served in the Mexican War.

J. Knox Polk Walker was private secretary to President Polk and colonel in the Confederate States Army. He was the third child of James Walker and Jane Maria Polk. He married —, and had four children—viz.: 1, Maria Walker; 2, Henry Walker; 3, Samuel Walker; 4, James K. Walker.

Jane Walker, fourth child of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker, married Mr. I. N. Barnett. He was in the Confederate service, and rose to the rank of major. Major I. N. Barnett and Jane (Walker) Barnett had four children—viz.: 1, Maria Barnett; 2, Mary Barnett; 3, Rose Barnett; 4, Walker Barnett.

Maria Barnett, oldest child of Major I. N. Barnett and Jane (Walker) Barnett, married General George D. Johns, of Alabama. She lived only two years after her marriage.

Mary Barnett, second child of Major I. N. Barnett and Jane (Walker) Barnett, married Mr. W. J. Hine, and has two children.

Rosa Barnett, third child of Major I. N. Barnett, resides in Columbia.

Walker Barnett, fourth child, and only son, is unmarried, and lives in Nashville.

Mary Walker, fifth child of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker, married Mr. Pickett, and had two children: 1, Jane Pickett; 2, Hays Pickett.

Sarah Walker, sixth child of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker, married Mr. Green, and had one child.

Annie M. Walker, seventh child of James Walker and Jane Maria (Polk) Walker, married Mr. L. M. Phillips, and had one child, which died young.

L. Marshall Walker, eighth child of Jane Maria (Polk) Walker and James Walker, was a graduate of West Point, and during the late Civil War was major general in the Western Division of the Confederate Army.

Andrew Walker, ninth child of James Walker and Jane Maria Walker, resides in St. Louis, Mo.

Eliza Polk, third child of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, married Mr. Caldwell, and had two children: 1, Samuel P. Caldwell; 2, James Caldwell.

Marshall Polk, fourth child of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, married Laura Wilson, and had two children: 1, Marshall Polk; 2, Roxana Polk.

John L. Polk, fifth son of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, never married; and Franklin Polk, sixth son, never married.

Naomi Polk, seventh child of Samuel Polk and Jane Knox, his wife, married Mr. Harris, and had four children—viz.: 1, Amelia Harris; 2, Maria Harris; 3, Laura Harris; 4, Melvina Harris.

Ophelia Polk, eighth child of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, married Mr. Hays, and had two children: 1, Naomi Hays; 2, Virginia Hays.

Hon. William H. Polk, ninth child of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, died in Nashville, Tenn., in 1862; aged forty-seven years.

Hon. William Hawkins Polk was appointed "chargé d'affaires near the Court of Naples" by President Tyler, to represent the United States at the Court of Naples. War being declared between Mexico and the United States during his brother's (President Polk's) administration, he resigned his position as Minister Plenipotentiary to Naples and returned home, entered the United States Army as major of Third Dragoons, and went to Mexico to defend his country's flag, and remained in Mexico until the close of the war; then he returned to his home in Columbia, Tenn. He represented his district in Congress, and was afterwards the Democratic elector at large for Tennessee in two presidential campaigns.

Hon. William H. Polk married, first, Mary L. Corse, of New York; and, second, in 1854, Lucy Eugenia Williams, of North Carolina. There was one son by his first marriage, James Knox Polk; by his second marriage, two sons—viz., William H. Polk and Tasker Polk.

James Knox Polk, eldest son of Hon. William H. Polk, child of his marriage with Mary L. Corse, married Emma L. Isburg, but had no children.

William H. Polk, son of Hon. William H. Polk and Lucy Eugenia (Williams) Polk, was born in Columbia, Tenn.; was a lawyer; removed to Birmingham, Ala., Nov. 18, 1885; married Adelaide Marble. He died October, 1886, leaving no issue.

Tasker Polk, youngest son of Hon. William H. Polk and Lucy Eugenia (Williams) Polk, was born in Columbia, Tenn., in 1862. He is a lawyer, of Warrenton, N. C., and has been three times elected mayor of his adopted town and twice solicitor of Warren County. He is a man of culture, with fine poetic taste. Some of his poems have been given to the public, with much appreciation; and his ode delivered at a reunion of Confederate soldiers was enthusiastically received. Tasker Polk married Eliza Tannahill Jones, Jan. 24, 1895. They have one son, William Tannahill Polk.

Samuel Polk, tenth child of Samuel Polk and Jane (Knox) Polk, never married.

John Polk, fifth child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married —; had two children—Angelina Polk, who married Mr. Crawford, and Olivia Polk, who married Mr. Prior—and left three children—viz.: 1, Mary Prior, who married Mr. Moore; 2, John Prior; 3, Elizabeth Prior.

Louisa Polk, sixth child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married twice: first, Mr. Neely; second, Dr. C. C. Collier. She left seven children—viz.: 1, Mary Neely; 2, Rufus P. Neely; 3, Adelia Neely; 4, Jackson J. Neely; by second marriage: 5, Thomas Collier; 6, William Collier; 7, Fanny Collier.

Mary Neely, oldest child of Mr. Neely and Louisa (Polk) Neely, married Mr. Atwood; had two children, Josephine Atwood and Adela Atwood.

Rufus P. Neely, second child of Mr. Neely and Louisa (Polk) Neely, married Miss Lea; had eight children—viz.: 1, William Neely; 2, Harriet Neely; 3, Louisa Neely; 4, Kate Neely; 5, Prudence Neely; 6, Charles Neely; 7, James Neely; 8, Mary Neely.

Adela Neely, third child of Mr. Neely and Louisa (Polk) Neely, married Mr. Bell.

Jackson J. Neely, youngest child of Mr. Neely and Louisa (Polk) Neely, married and left descendants.

Thomas Collier, son of Dr. C. C. Collier and Louisa (Polk) Collier, married and left descendants, one of whom was William Collier.

Clarissa Polk, seventh child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married Thomas McNeal, and had eight children—viz.: 1, Jane McNeal; 2, Ezekiel P. McNeal; 3, Mary McNeal; 4, Prudence McNeal; 5, Albert T. McNeal; 6, Evelina McNeal; 7, Samuel L. McNeal; 8, Wallace W. McNeal.

Jane McNeal, oldest child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married Mr. Brown, and had six children—viz.: 1, Mary A. Brown; 2, James Brown; 3, Clara Brown; 4, Albert Brown; 5, Cordelia Brown; 6, Lyeurgus Brown.

Ezekiel P. McNeal, second child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married —; had one child, Priscilla, who died at eighteen years of age.

Mary McNeal, third child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married Mark R. Roberts, and had fourteen children—viz.: 1, Clara Roberts; 2, Thomas F. Roberts; 3, Jane Roberts; 4, Mary Roberts; 5, Prudence Roberts; 6, Thadius Roberts; 7, Evelina Roberts; 8, Maria Roberts; 9, Napoleon Roberts; 10, Ann Roberts; 11, Samuel Roberts; 12, Eliza Roberts; 13, Albert Roberts; 14, Mark Roberts.

Clara Roberts, oldest child of Mark R. Roberts and Mary (McNeal) Roberts, married Mr. Fulton.

Jane, third child of Mark R. Roberts and Mary (McNeal) Roberts, married Mr. Jewett, and left two children.

Mary Roberts, fourth child of Mark R. Roberts and Mary (McNeal) Roberts, married Mr. Baker, and had two children.

Prudence Roberts, fifth child of Mark R. Roberts, married Mr. McRay, and left descendants.

Prudence McNeal, fourth child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married John H. Bills, and had six children—viz.: 1, Ophelia Bills; 2, Leonidas Bills; 3, Mary Bills; 4, Wilson Bills; 5, Clara Bills; 6, Evelina Bills.

Ophelia Bills, oldest child of John H. Bills and Prudence McNeal Bills, married Horace M. Polk, her cousin, and had eight children—viz.: 1, Thomas I. Polk (died an infant); 2, John H. Polk; 3, Horace M. Polk; 4, Newton N. Polk; 5, Mary Polk (died in infancy); 6, Evelina Polk (married Mr. Pickens); 7, Clara Polk (married Mr. Gray); 8, Ophelia (never married).

Horace M. Polk, third child of Horace M., married Mary Campbell, and had two children: 1, Campbell (died an infant); 2, Allen Polk.

Mary Bills, third child of John H. Bills and Prudence McNeal Bills, married Mr. Wood, and had one child, Fanny Wood.

Albert T. McNeal, fifth child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married Mary Dunlop, of South Carolina, and had two children: 1, Albert T. McNeal; 2, Irene McNeal.

Hon. Albert T. McNeal, son of Albert T. McNeal and Mary (Dunlop) McNeal, is a popular and leading politician, and could obtain any nomination from his party, from Governor down, but prefers the practice of law. He married Kate Fentress, April 24, 1867. They had eight children—viz.: 1, Irene McNeal, born 1868; 2, Ezekiel McNeal, born 1870; 3, Albert T. McNeal, born 1872; 4, Kate McNeal, born 1874; 5, Sarah McNeal, born 1877; 6, Mary McNeal, born 1878; 7, Austin McNeal, born 1880; 8, Una McNeal, born 1882.

Irene McNeal, eldest child of Hon. Albert T. McNeal and Kate (Fentress) McNeal, married William Albert Swasey, an architect, of St. Louis, Mo. They have one child, Albert McNeal Swasey.

Irene McNeal, second child of Albert T. McNeal and Mary (Dunlop) McNeal, married, first, Mr. Lewis Bond, of Brownsville, Tenn. After his death, she married Jerome Hill, Esq., of

Jerome Hill Cotton Company, of St. Louis, Mo., and resides there.

Evelina McNeal, sixth child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married M. L. Peters, and had five children—viz.: 1, Arthur Peters; 2, Thomas Peters; 3, Clara Peters; 4, George W. Peters; and another child.

Samuel McNeal, seventh child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, never married.

Wallace W. McNeal, eighth child of Thomas McNeal and Clarissa (Polk) McNeal, married Lizzie Berry, of Tennessee, and had one son, Thomas McNeal, a lawyer, of Gonzales, Texas. He married, and has several children.

Mary Polk, eighth child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Mary (Wilson) Polk, married Thomas Hardeman, and had five children—viz.: 1, Monroe Hardeman; 2, William P. Hardeman; 3, Owen Hardeman; 4, Leonidas Hardeman; 5, Mary Hardeman.

Monroe Hardeman, oldest son of Thomas Hardeman and Mary Polk Hardeman, married Susan Burleson. They have four children—viz.: 1, William Hardeman; 2, Elizabeth Polk Hardeman; 3, Monroe Hardeman; 4, Oscora Hardeman.

William Hardeman, eldest son of Monroe Hardeman and Susan (Burleson) Hardeman, married Louisa Baylor, and has two children, Emily Hardeman and Susan Hardeman.

Elizabeth Polk Hardeman, daughter of Monroe Hardeman and Susan (Burleson) Hardeman, married William A. Thompson, and has four children—viz.: 1, William Thompson; 2, Fentress Thompson; 3, Frank Withers Thompson; 4, Monroe Thompson.

Monroe Hardeman, third child of Monroe Hardeman and Susan (Burleson) Hardeman, married Miss Day, and had one child, Kate Hardeman.

Oscora Hardeman, fourth child of Monroe Hardeman and Susan (Burleson) Hardeman, married J. W. Campbell, and had no children.

William P. Hardeman, second child of Thomas Hardeman and Mary (Polk) Hardeman, was brigadier general of the late Civil War, and was unmarried.

Owen Hardeman, third child of Thomas Hardeman and Mary (Polk) Hardeman, married Sarah Berry, and has four children—viz.: 1, Caroline (married Mr. W. R. Baylor); 2, Lilly (married Mr. J. Steele); 3, Ida (married Mr. H. Martin); 4, Walker Hardeman (unmarried).

Mary Hardeman, fifth child of Thomas Hardeman and Mary (Polk) Hardeman, married Dr. James Fentress, and had one child, Thomas Fentress, who died unmarried.

Charles Perry Polk, ninth child of Col. Ezekiel Polk and Sophia (Neely) Polk, was a colonel in the Confederate Army. He married, and had eight children—viz.:

1. Charles E. Polk (died unmarried).
2. James K. Polk (died unmarried).
3. Ann E. Polk (married Mr. Vesey; died, leaving one daughter).
4. Eugenia Polk (married Mr. David Hymeon; has six children).
5. Perry Polk (unmarried).
6. Samuel Polk (unmarried).
7. William W. Polk (married Miss Whitlock, and has eight children—viz.: 1, Thomas, who died young; 2, William; 3, James K.; 4, Alice; 5, Turner; 6, Carrol; 7, Edwin, who was born in 1888; 8, Louise).
8. Edwin Polk (born in 1888).

Benigna Polk, tenth child of Col. Ezekiel Polk by his marriage with Sophia Neely, married Mr. Wood, and had two children—viz.: 1, Mary M. Wood; 2, Benigna Wood.

Edwin Polk, youngest child of Col. Ezekiel Polk by his last marriage with Sophia Neely, married Octavia Rowena Aston Jones, daughter of Gen. Calvin Jones, of the war of 1812, and Miss Aston, of the Aston family, of Carolina. Edwin Polk and his wife, Octavia Rowena, had two children: 1, Octavia Polk; 2, Pauline Polk (died an infant).

Octavia Polk, daughter of Edwin Polk and Octavia Rowena (Jones) Polk, married Mr. T. F. Brooks, of St. Louis, Mo., and had no children, but has adopted Edwin Polk, seventh child of William W. Polk and Miss ——— Whitlock, his wife.

Besides these that I have followed out and recorded, the descendants of Col. Ezekiel Polk are numerous, and many of them most prosperous. Mrs. Hill, of Memphis, Tenn., wife of the millionaire, and a leader in musical circles; and her daughter, Mrs. Sallie Grasoone, a leader in the woman's club, a very cultivated and intellectual woman; Judge S. P. Walker, a lawyer in the first rank; Gen. George Peters, the distinguished criminal lawyer, are all of this Ezekiel Polk branch of the Polk family.

Col. Ezekiel Polk lies interred in a secluded spot in the grounds of his old home, where he died, one mile west from Bolivar, Tenn. On the tombstone is inscribed an epitaph, written by himself, in which he prophesies the Civil War. Visitors and reporters often call to see it. His residence is owned by the widow of his youngest son, Edwin Polk. The house is beautiful and picturesque, white colonnades the entire length of the front and verandas on all sides; and here will be found much handsome old furniture and many charming relics. This old homestead is called Mecklen.



## CORRESPONDENCE OF GEN. JAMES ROBERTSON.

---

[In addition to letters received, General Robertson preserved a number of State papers, Indian Treaties, etc., which are filed in manuscript and in chronological order among his letters.]

(80)

### PROCLAMATION.

BY WILLIAM BLOUNT,

Governor in and over the territory of the United States of America, South of the river Ohio.

An ORDINANCE, giving authority for the election of representatives to represent the people in General Assembly.

PROOF having been made to me, that there are five thousand and upwards of free male inhabitants, of full age, in the said Territory: I DO give authority for the election of representatives to represent the people in General Assembly; and do *ordain*, that an election shall be held by ballot, for thirteen representatives, to represent the people for two years in general assembly, on the third Friday and Saturday in December next, qualified as provided and required by the ordinance of Congress, of July 13th, 1787, for the government of the territory north of the Ohio, and by free male inhabitants, of full age qualified as electors; as also provided and required by the said ordinance, of whom the electors of the counties of Washington, Hawkins, Jefferson, and Knox, shall elect two each for said counties; and the electors for the counties of Sullivan, Greene, Tennessee, Davidson, and Sumner, shall elect one for each of those counties.

*And be it ordained*, That the said election for the representatives to represent the people in general assem-

bly, shall be held at the court houses in each county by the sheriff thereof; and in case of his absence or inability, his deputy, or the coroner thereof, with the advice and the assistance of inspectors of the polls, in the manner and form as prescribed and directed by the laws of North Carolina, respecting the holding of election in that State. And the said sheriff or other officer holding the said election, is directed and required to report to the secretary's office at Knoxville, as early as may be the name or names of persons duly elected, to represent the representatives counties.

Done at Knoxville, in the Territory aforesaid, this the 19th day of October 1793.

WM. BLOUNT.

For the better information of the people referring to the qualifications of representatives and electors, the following extracts from the ordinance of Congress of the 13th of July 1787 is subjoined.

NO person to be eligible or qualified to act as a representative unless he shall have been a citizen of one of the United States three years, and be a resident in the district; or unless he shall have resided in the district three years. In either case shall hold in his own right, in fee simple, two hundred acres of land within the same: provide, that a free hold of fifty acres of land in the district having been a citizen of one of the states, and being a resident in the district, or the like free hold and two years residence in the district, shall be necessary to qualify a man as an elector of a representative.

---

(81)

KNOXVILLE, October 19th, 1793.

Sir,

It is no less essential that protection should be given to the District of Mero, than that it should be done with the utmost economy to the public. Cavalry or mounted infantry can be kept on duty only at an enormous expense,

therefore more than a Sergeant's or Cornet's or Ensign's Command of that description of militia cannot be allowed to anyone Country at a time, to act on advance of the Frontiers as Spies or Rangers for short periods, not exceeding a month for a tour, and a less number and for a shorter period if you should judge competent to that duty. And for infantry, few only can be necessary while such Spies or Rangers are on the Frontiers. But in case you receive certain information of an intended or approaching invasion of the District you will order out such force as shall be sufficient to guard against or repel it, taking care not to call out an unnecessary number even in that case, and to discharge them as soon as the danger shall have appeared to have ceased. You will call Cavalry armed with good fire locks in preference to mounted Infantry, otherwise that Regiment will become too generally excused from a share of Military duty.

For the better security of the Frontier, you will order out twenty Infantry to perform a three months tour of duty at a Blockhouse on Cumberland River, near the great Salt Lick under the command of Lieut. Sampson Williams to whom a Lieutenant's Commission is given for that special purpose.

You will understand this order as extending to the discharging such militia as are now in service over and above the number permitted.

Yr. obt. Servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Upon receiving the order of yesterday as above I find that part of it which directs you to call the Cavalry in "preference" of more Infantry too strongly expressed. You will please understand by that part of the order that the Cavalry are not to be excused from a share of duty.

I am your obt. Servant

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General Robertson,  
Mero District.

(82)

KNOXVILLE, October 20th, 1793.

Sir,

Your letter of the 15th Inst., has been handed to me by Mr. Castleman express, and the importance of the information it contained, will justify the expense. The truth of the information, namely, that a large party of Indians, Creeks and Cherokees intended to invade the Holston and Cumberland Settlements is evident for it appears that the party that invaded the District and killed Cavett's family on the 25th September, consisted of at least one thousand Indians of those two nations. This attempt on our Frontiers having failed of its object except the killing of Cavett's family and the immediate pursuit given by General Sevier I hope will be sufficient to prevent a second attempt of the kind before next spring by which time I hope they will have enough to do at home, and suppose an invasion was expected what more can be done for the defence of the Mero District situated as it is than to keep out good Patrols of mounted Infantry in advance of the settlements to discover their approach and then collect a sufficient force of the militia to the threatened part for the defence thereof, for if the whole force of the District was collected to one part might not any other and almost every other to be attacked and destroyed before succor could be given. In this view of things and while the most rigid economy is enjoined on me by the federal government as well as protection required by the inhabitants of the territory which I ever feel a pleasure in granting as far as in my power, I cannot enlarge my order of the 19th. Inst forwarded by Captain Jonston more than to allow in the whole a company of mounted Infantry on duty at any one time to act together or separate as you shall judge proper in advance on the frontiers and as far in advance as you please even to the Tennessee and to be kept on duty at no one time not exceeding one month, and shorter

tours even suppose the same men were ordered out will have a better effect. I do not mean that any man or men shall be paid for loitering about in the settlement and no party of mounted Infantry can patrol at one time in advance of the settlement more than a month if so long and in case of an invasion you will also adhere to my order of the 19th. Inst. I beg you and the inhabitants of Mero District who through you have presented me their congratulations to accept my hearty and sincere thanks, and I embrace the opportunity to assure you and them that my best efforts shall never be wanting to promote their happiness, the approbation of my fellow citizens and friends is the highest reward that could be offered me for the zeal and industry with which I have long devoted myself to their service.

General Sevier pursued the trail of the invading army of Creeks and Cherokees, that killed Cavett's family, as far as Estanaulee and beyond and immediately as his advance consisting of Captain Evans and Lieutenant McClelland with about thirty of his men had passed high town river, a heavy fire was commenced by from 200 to 300 Indians who had formed an ambuscade for the purpose. The first fire they shot down three of his men and pushed forward with great boldness, but the bravery and expertness with which it was returned by Evans and his party for about fifteen minutes equalled anything of the kind ever displayed by any body of men and compelled the Indians to retreat very precipitately, only one Indian, The Fisher, Coody's Uncle, the same that was with him at your house was found dead on the field and fifteen trails well blooded were counted where others had been dragged. More heroism was never exhibited than by Lieut. McClelland. The Infantry in service in the District will be discharged as soon as the time for which they were called out expires which will be in about twenty days, and I have only a part of a company of mounted Infantry now in service. A Creek town of one hundred

houses—called the standing peach tree **was burnt** in September by a part of Georgians from **Greene** County; that State has also determined to **raise an** army, 2,000 Cavalry and 3,000 Infantry to **invade** the Creeks; this will give the Creeks **something** also to do besides invading our frontiers, **you will** please send forward all accounts you may **have** for supplying the Chickesaws or other contingent expenses by the first opportunity, as Mr. Allison will leave this place for Philadelphia via Fayetteville in North Carolina on the first day of December. Castleman says he was to have thirty five dollars for delivering your letter to me and you were silent as to what he was to do for that sum, so I have been forced to give him twenty to return to you with this letter; In future while your letters may require answers—it will be best that you contract for the delivery and the return of the answer.

I am, Sir, with sincere esteem,

Your obedt. Servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brig. Gen. Robertson.

---

(83)

KNOXVILLE, October 20th., 1793.

Sir,

The company of the Davidson Regiment heretofore called the Independent Troop to be discontinued under that name, and in future to be a company of mounted Infantry commanded as heretofore by captain John Gordon equipped with a fire lock, powder horn, shot bag, etc., to remain a part of the Regiment of Davidson County to consist of sixty four privates, six corporals, six sergeants and two musicians. It is expected that none will be received into the company but such as will hold themselves generally in readiness with good horses and arms to pursue or repel hostile Indians at the shortest notice to be in all respects subject to the Military Law.

WM. BLOUNT.

Brig'r Gen. Robertson.

(84)

KNOXVILLE, October 21st, 1793.

Dear Sir,

General Smith in my behalf paid to Thomas Brown to your order thirteen and half dollars. No person has applied for the 100 dollars you mentioned you should want. There is now here Col. David Healey agent for the War Department whose duties are various, among others all sums of money pass through his hands by my warrant. It is necessary you should forward to this place a Power of Attorney to receive your salary as well as other moneys and that you may not meet any difficulty in the business I forward to you a power to Colonel Junius King which you must have executed or acknowledged before a judge or justice of the peace but the form is preferred if equally convenient under hand and seal and when you forward the Power to Col. King you had best instruct him by letter to pay such sums as he shall receive on your acct. into my hand subject to your order.

Since my return home I have been too engaged to turn my attention to the state of our money acct., but I will have it done some time soon and forwarded to you; You had best forward the Power as early as may be, for until you do the money must be locked up in Healy's chest both from you and myself.

I am, dear sir,

Your obt. Servt.

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson.

---

KNOXVILLE, 8th. November, 1793.

General Orders

For duty the 16th. Instant one company of mounted Infantry to consisted of one Captain, one Lieut., one Ensign, five Sergeants, five Corporals, two musicians, and sixty four privates.

	Cap.	Lieut.	Ens.	Serg.	Corp.	Privates.
Sumner County will furnish	1			2	2	26
Davidson do do do		1		2	2	26
Tennessee do do do			1	1	1	12
Detail	1	1	1	5	5	64
Davidson and Sumner Counties will each furnish one musician.						

The commanding officers of Counties will be particular to turn out none but active, able bodied enterprising men that they be well mounted and equipped as the law directs; they must be kept constantly ranging at a considerable distance advanced from the frontier. As no more men can at present be allowed in service their duty will unavoidably be very hard, but it must be submitted to.

The above Company to be in service one month unless sooner discharged.

---

(86)

KNOXVILLE, November 28th, 1797.

Sir,

Upon the representation of yourself and Colonel Winchester of the very exposed and dangerous situation of a great number of the frontier inhabitants of the District of Mero as well as from my own apprehensions of Indian invasions of that District I am induced to order that you if you find it essential to the protection of the inhabitants of that District may order on duty for their protection one company of Infantry in addition to the mounted infantry already or permitted for a month's tour unless sooner discharged, and upon the expiration of that term and the danger continuing to exist you will relieve them by an equal number for the same length of time. If you find the company of mounted Infantry already ordered or permitted to be ordered by you not sufficient to attack and break up the camp of such hostile Indians as may be formed to the annoyance of your frontiers, you



in that case are authorized to order out an additional company of mounted Infantry for fifteen days duty. Two companies will certainly be sufficient to repulse any hostile camp that can probably be found within thirty miles of the frontiers. I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General Robertson,

Mero District.

You will be particular in giving orders to the muster Master Colonel Hays to muster the militia going on and coming off duty.

WM. BLOUNT.

---

(87)

KNOXVILLE, November 29th, 1797.

Sir,

Enclosed you have an order of yesterday's date respecting the protection of the frontiers. Opoiamingo must have the gun from Simpson. It is essential to keep him in good humour with the United States. I am glad to hear that he and the other Chickasaws with him have returned to their nation perfectly satisfied. Their expenses to be sure both here and at Cumberland have been greater than would have been wished but since they had set out on a visit to the President much greater would have been the expense had they continued their journey. I am well aware of your regards for economy in public expenses yet it is my duty to recommend it to you in the strongest terms. Your ideas of a resignation accord well enough with mine but not yet. Bank notes in which your salary will be paid I am informed will not pass in Cumberland and for that reason I shall not send you the 150 dollars in them as requested by Mr. McChown and hard money there is none here neither private nor public. But I will hold myself ready to pay to your order either the Bank bills or bills on Philadelphia. I will endeavor

to have a state of our accounts made and forwarded by  
McCown.

I am, Sir, with the sincerest esteem,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General Robertson.

---

FROM THE ARCHIVES OF THE TENNESSEE  
HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

BOND OF JOHN SEVIER TO LANDON CARTER.

---

[The original manuscript is in possession of the Tennessee Historical  
Society.]

*Territory of the United States* }  
*South of the River ohio.* } Know all men by these  
presents that I

John Sevier Sen. of the county of Washington and  
territory aforesaid am held and firmly bound unto Col-  
onel Landon Carter of the same place in the Just and  
full sum of two hundred thousand silver dollars well and  
truly to be paid unto said Landon Carter his heirs or  
assigns I bind myself my heirs executors and admin-  
istrators Jointly and severally firmly by these presents  
Sealed with my Seal and Dated this first day of August  
one thousand seven hundred & ninety two.

The condition of the above obligation is Such that  
whereas the said Landon Carter & John Sevier Sen.  
have Obtained and procured in partnership land to the  
Amount of one Hundred and twenty eight thousand Acres  
which said warrants is placed in the Hands of the afore-  
said John Sevier in order to have them laid on vacant land  
as Supernumeries so soon as Circumstances will permit  
and to be laid on as Valuable lands as the present Circum-  
stances Will admit of, and the titles to be obtained in the  
Name of said Sevier or any other person or persons that  
he may think fit to impower to obtain and receive them

on behalf of the parties hereto. And after the aforesaid titles shall be obtained and not otherwise the said Sevier Shall make or Cause to be made titles in fee simple defending from him and his heirs or any person claiming Under him, one equal moiety of all the aforesaid lands on which the titles shall be obtained from the State of North Carolina, Unto the aforesaid Landon Carter After first deducting the Quantity of land out of the whole, that the said Sevier may have to give to the Surveyor or other officer or officers for the purpose of Surveying and obtaining Grants On the aforesaid lands. in Witness whereof the said John Sevier Sen. have hereunto Set his hand and seal the Day and year aforewritten.

Witness Present

JOHN SEVIER

JOHN SEVIER JUN

JOHN CARTER

SEAL

#### AN INDIAN "TALK."

[The following is a copy of an old document filed among the papers of the Tennessee Historical Society. The original is written on foolscap paper in a clear, strong handwriting, supposed to be the handwriting of Gen. Daniel Smith. The original bears no date or signature, and no endorsement or note to indicate how it came into possession of the Society. The paper is yellow with age, and is doubtless genuine. It seems to be notes on an important interview with Indian chiefs.]

I am happy on this occasion to speak to you on public business. What I have to say is short and will be concerning things that are yet to come not what is past. I have lately rec<sup>d</sup> a letter from the President a part of which I will read you is as follows—

(Sup. S. inter.)

Your answer to this request of the President if you are not prepared take Time withdraw and consult each other

I want to know if the Nation will go that is the chiefs—all the head men—If they will go I will go with

them any road they choose.—The President supposes if a full and complete Representation will visit him all Matters of difference can be settled to the satisfaction of the Parties. They go to Ph. all difference may be settled. I think so too. In this offer which Pr. makes he gives the greatest proof of his friendship & I hope you will accept it.

Hanging Maw—

I am willing to go—but there must be a consultation of the chiefs—you must not think the time long before we get ready in case we conclude to go—

Here Watts Double Head & Tuskegatahee withdrew and return.

John Watts said

You are our father, have told us you want us to go to Philadelphia—there is no other head man here but the Hanging Maw & myself and I can speak but little—I can give you no answer as to the business you propose—must first consult the chiefs who are gone to the Creeks perhaps when I return they will be at Home. All the nation will gather in 21 days at the Running Water. Then all things will be taken into consideration. You will hear the result & all about going to P. Our chiefs are on business to the Creeks to try to stop them from war—namely My own nation is at war. The creeks and Chickasaws also. I want all these to be at peace then I will take you by the hand and go to Ph. The Glass The Turkey Kittigiska Dick Justice Hooalta Charles—The water hunter—the Breath—the Drunkard Double head. The Person Striker—Chuleoah their linguister The Spider—

John Taylor & Tablostiski are gone to the northwards to sell a negro who for some time past has belonged to Taylor My people wanted me to go to the creeks—I chose to come and see the Maw. They are gone down even to the lower creeks to use their influence to stop them from war.

Gov. What is the reason the creeks go to war as they have been treating with Seagrove at St. Mary's

Watts I have heard the Creeks have said they will be at war with the Cum. people the longest day they have to live on acct of the land—my people have gone to bring them in to measures of peace.—

Gov. Some creeks come here—commit depredations on the frontiers of Wash. district

Watts. 'Tis fellows who live single, not in towns who are bad off for clothes—they steal horses to supply themselves.

Gov. have you heard from McGillevray

Watts. I have heard lately that he Sickened & died at his own house.

W. I am not going to tell you any lies. I know who do all the mischief—'Tis the Creeks. They are about at this time. Yet I agree that some few of my young men go with them.—50 Creeks went out some time since and many small parties of 3 and 4 have since gone—

Gov. You say tis 21 days 'til you are to meet & Consult. immediately after you ought to let me know that I may inform the P. whether you go or not.—Will it be agreeable that McKee should go with you—who can write and do business for you.

W. Your own sort of people like McKee as well as we. But he must wait & and go down with the Maw.—

Gov. I shall now go home & write the P. letting him know what has passed between us and that I believe you will Send a representation to Ph:

W. I want no lies to be told—it is uncertain—it will depend on the result of the council. I want matters settled first.

Gov. To go there is the right way to settle matters. If you should not go he will think you are angry as he promises goods for yourselves and nation.—It will be a great way and expensive, therefore he wants

not many, yet all the head men of the nation ought to go. I hope the business when done will be done forever.

W. I cannot promise how long it will be before I go I want matters settled first.

Gov. You have much influence in the nation—You cannot serve it better than by using it so as to induce a representation to visit Phi. endeavouring to get them to come to Ph.—Pr. writes me all the northwards are to hold a treaty in 45 days. do you think they are in earnest—

Watts. I cannot tell.

Gov. The northwards who went to the creeks I suspect cause the creeks to be cross.

W. What is Cary gone to Phi for.

Gov. to carry letters and he also promised Shaw to meet him there.

W. We do not like Carys doings—he seems not to act fairly.

Gov. I cannot help your liking or missliking Cary you know him best. You introduced him to me as a linguister

Watts. The upper towns are scarce of provisions and my family and friends are numerous I want you to send me to Coyatee some flour bacon & salt to support us home and two kegs of whiskey for my warriors to drink your health when I get home it will have a good effect Danl Carmichael will bring them to me.

Gov. You shall have them—

I have one thing more to say to you—It is that there is a person of my own blood among the white people and his friends want to see him—

Gov. I have never heard of him, where is he—or when did you hear of him—W. He was carried when a small boy & committed to the care of Col. Anderson by his friends and we lately heard he was there working—

G. I shall enquire into it and let you know—if 'tis as you say he shall come down that you may see him.

LETTER OF AN OLD SETTLER.

---

[This letter is headed and identified by the following note under seal of the Tennessee Historical Society.]

The following letter from Mr. Abram Mason of Mason's Grove, Madison C'y Tenn. to his nephew Dr. Jno. Henry Currey of this city is full of interesting reminiscences of old Mr. Mason's early life when this now bustling city was then a forest.

MASON'S GROVE, TENNESSEE, March 27, 1860.

*Dear Nephew,*

After my compliments to you all, and my thanks to *you* for the book you sent me; I will proceed to give you such things as I can recollect about the early settlements in Middle Tennessee.

I was born in the State of Delaware, Revet Cy, in the year 1778. Father moved to Virginia when I was young, and settled in Monongahela County, on Monongahela River. He stayed there until I was about 12 years of age; when he and eighteen of his neighbours, in the Spring of 1790 built a large keel bottomed boat. We did not start till May, we then started down the Monongahela River. It was very troublesome times on the Ohio River. There were no settlements, from Pittsburgh down to the mouth of the Ohio, on the North side of the river, except forts. General St Clair had one where Cincinnati now stands, and one opposite Louisville. It was very dangerous traveling on the Ohio in those times; the indians were taking boats often on the river. St Clair got badly defeated in 1791; he lost nine hundred brave men. We saw the indians crossing the river before us. We made ready for battle. The women and children were placed in the bottom of the boat, and beds placed around them. When we came near to where they were, a gun or two was fired, and they landed and took to the cane, and we saw them no more.

We got to the Falls of Ohio in June, and the river had got so low we could not get the boat over the falls. We stayed in Kentucky the balance of the Summer, and then tried to get her over, and stuck fast. The river took another rise and she went off, and was lost.

In September 1790, nine families out of nineteen built perogerrogs (piroque?), one to each family, and started down the Ohio. There was not a settlement on either side of the river to the mouth of the Cumberland, and none on it, till we got to Clarksville, forty miles below Nashville. If the Indians had met with us, we would have been all killed or taken. We killed some buffaloes, elk, and other game. Our powder gave out before we got up the river, and we got on sufferance, being longer in the way than we expected. We landed about the first of October, three miles below Nashville. Father bought a small tract of land in Davidson County, on Richland Creek, about three miles west of Nashville, in the neighbourhood of old General Robertson's. We heard the guns when the Indians wounded the General and his son close by where he lived. We heard the guns which killed a boy up the same Creek, at Johnson's Ford, where John Bosley now lives. The Indians were killing, and stealing horses all around us. They killed a fine young man at Jonathan Robertson's. They shot him in the evening. I went there that night and sat up with them; he died about midnight. The neighbours raised a party, followed them (the Indians?) and overtook them at Tennessee (River?) where they had made their winters hunt. They killed and took nearly all of them, brought back Helen's scalp and hat, burnt their skins, bears meat, & oil. I was going to school when they came by with the prisoners, with the scalps upon long canes, carrying them like colors. This was in the spring, I think, of 1793. About this time the Indians came in and killed Mr. James Thomson, wife, and a daughter; & took another prisoner, and a marraid lady by the name of Espy; and carried



them to the nation and kept them sometime. When they got back, this young Miss Thomson married a Mr. Edward Collinsworth, and became the mother of a family. Her oldest son, James Collinsworth, a noted lawyer in Nashville, went to Texas and died there. A younger son became my son in law, and is living close by me now. The Indians were still troublesome, and father was drafted to guard the outside forts. I went and served his tour. I hadn't to go but a mile and a half, we were so near the outside. I had to go to Wm. Cash's Fort and set at the back of the field and watch while the others worked. My orders were, if I saw any indians, to fire at them and run for the fort; but none came while I was there. This Wm. Cash was a brother in law to Gen'l Robertson. In the Spring of 1794, the Indians were still troublesome. We fortified up at Philip Sutes fort, only a half mile farther. We would go home in the day and work, and go back at night. Father went to mill in order to lay in for us meal for summer, as there was but the one mill on the South side of Cumberland River. We went to the fort as rest, and looked for father to come to the fort that night; but he went in with his meal, and fed, and belled, and hobbled his horse, thinking to go back the next day, and laid down by himself, without any gun to defend himself. Mother was uneasy at his not coming to the fort, and we started early next morning, and when within two hundred yards of the cabin, heard father calling his horse. I was walking in front carrying a gun, mother and nine children behind; A little brother looked out one side in a thick bunch of priv

[Here the letter ends abruptly. The remaining portion has probably been lost.]

A PROCLAMATION BY ANDREW JOHNSON, MILITARY  
GOVERNOR OF TENNESSEE.

---

[The original and the accompanying order of General Miller are on file in the archives of the Tennessee Historical Society.]

STATE OF TENNESSEE  
EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT

NASHVILLE TENN Sept 9th 1864

Whereas; It has pleased Almighty God to recently vouchsafe great triumphs to the National Arms in the capture of Mobile Bay, The Weldon Rail Road and Atlanta and the Killing of the marauder John Morgan & the defeat & rout of Wheeler & his raiders &

Whereas; The President of the United States has issued the orders which are hereto appended, It is recommended and directed,

1st That on Sunday next the 11th inst there be offered at all the places open for public worship in this city thanksgiving & prayer in accordance with the request of the President of the United States.

2nd That on Monday next the 12th inst between the hours of 6 and 7, o'clock P.M. the bells of all the Churches and public edifices be rung, That between the hours of 7 and 8 o'clock P.M. there be a general illumination of the City and that commencing at the hour of 8, o'clock P.M. of the same evening there be a congratulatory meeting at the Representative Hall of the State Capitol.

ANDREW JOHNSON

Military Governor.

---

HEAD QUARTERS POST OF NASHVILLE

NASHVILLE TENN Sept 9th 1864

Orders.

I\*\* All persons in the Military Service at this Post will comply with the foregoing recommendations of General Andrew Johnson Mil. Gov. as far as practicable.

II\*\*\* The Chief of Artillery of the Post will on Monday the 12th Sept 1864 at 12, o'clock M, cause a salute of One hundred guns to be fired in honor of the Victories and Triumphs of our Arms mentioned in the foregoing Proclamation.

By Command of Brig. Genl. Jno. F. Miller.

L. HOWLAND

Capt & A A G.

## BOOK REVIEWS.

---

### BIOGRAPHY OF JUDGE J. D. GOODPASTURE.

---

WALTER B. PALMER.

---

LIFE OF JEFFERSON DILLARD GOODPASTURE; to which is appended a Genealogy of the Family of James Goodpasture. By his sons, Albert V., and William H. Goodpasture. 8vo., pp. 308, illustrated, cloth, \$1.50. Nashville: Cumberland Presbyterian Publishing House, 1897.

This book, besides being a biography of Judge Goodpasture, contains a rich fund of information, incident and anecdote relating to men who lived and became prominent in the Mountain District of Middle Tennessee. Very little of permanent interest has been published heretofore about this section, and the present work will furnish material for future historians. This portion of the State has not attracted as much attention as others, on account of the comparative slowness of railroads in reaching it, but it is a region of great and diversified resources. In 1802, it was traversed by F. A. Michaux, the eminent French naturalist, and perhaps a secret agent of the French government, who greatly admired the bold and rugged natural scenery, and wrote enthusiastically about the beautiful falls of Roaring River.

In the reminiscences related of prominent characters, a valuable insight is given into the manner and customs of the people who inhabited the Mountain District dur-

ing the first half of the present century. In the latter part of the eighteenth century, James Goodpasture, grandfather of the subject of this work, emigrated from Virginia to what afterwards became Roane County, Tennessee. In 1800, his son, John Goodpasture, moved to a place near the present village of Hilham, in Overton County. He lived to a ripe old age, and reared fourteen children, all of whom, except one, survived their parents. J. D. Goodpasture was the twelfth child.

The town of Hilham was laid off by Moses Fisk, (1759-1843) who was a remarkable man. He was a graduate of Dartmouth College, and had been for seven years a tutor in that institution. His coming to Tennessee was occasioned perhaps by meeting at Philadelphia, in 1796, with William Blount, recently elected one of the first two United States Senators from Tennessee, and who gave him letters of introduction to Governor Sevier at Knoxville. In 1802, Governor Roane appointed Fisk one of the commissioners to locate the boundary between Tennessee and Virginia. Fisk contributed liberally to the cause of education, and endowed Fisk Female Academy at Hilham, the first distinctively female school in the South, and one of the first in America. He was a trustee of other academies also, and he declined the presidency of the University of North Carolina. Through his influence, a number of New Englanders were attracted to Tennessee, among them three other Dartmouth graduates: Moses Madison Fisk, Dr. T. T. Barton and John Dickinson. The latter became a distinguished lawyer in Nashville, and fought in a duel with one of the Overtons. He is sometimes confused with the Dickerson who was killed in a duel with Jackson.

Among other men of note produced in the Mountain District, and described in this book, were Benjamin Totten, at whose house on Beaver Creek the courts of Overton County were organized, and three of whose sons became distinguished judges, one of them, Archibald W.

O. Totten, a justice of the State Supreme Court; the brothers, Judge Alvin Cullom and Gen. William Cullom, each of whom was in Congress several terms, and who were cousins of Shelby M. Cullom, present senior Senator from Illinois; Adam Huntsman, the wooden legged pioneer statesman, who defeated David Crockett for re-election to Congress; Sam Bell Maxey, who became United States Senator from Texas; Edward Cross, sometime Congressman from Arkansas; Judge E. L. Gardenhire, member of the Confederate Congress, and in 1883 of the Tennessee Court of Referees, an uncle of Congressman Benton McMillin; Capt. Simeon Hinds, grandfather of Prof. J. I. D. Hinds of Cumberland University; Chancellor Bromfield L. Ridley, and Judge Andrew J. Marchbanks.

The mountain lands of which Mark Twain writes in the *Gilded Age* lie in Fentress County, and the picturesque village which he calls Obedstown is none other than Jamestown, the county site. One of the most interesting of the minor incidents of Tennessee history was a trial for witchcraft before Esquire Joshua Owens, a leading magistrate of Frentress County. This case, which was carried up to the Circuit Court, was the only one of the kind recorded in the annals of the State. John M. Clemens, father of Mark Twain, was then a lawyer at Jamestown. Subsequently his law library came into the possession of Judge Goodpasture, who a few years ago sent Mark Twain his father's copy of *Tidd's Practice*. He acknowledges its receipt in a characteristic letter; he expressed an appreciation of the book, on account of his father's signature which he recognized, but he regretted that some other book than a law book should not have been preserved, as he was the one man most incapable of understanding the law, unless it was his elder brother who practiced in the West.

Judge Goodpasture was born in 1824. In youth he struggled against the disadvantages of poverty and a

lack of educational privileges, but he evinced a determination to rise above adverse conditions. At the age of seventeen, he began teaching school and decided to study law. A volume of Blackstone was lent him by Judge Cullom, who at death bequeathed him his political library. In 1845, he entered the law office of Judge Gardenhire. In 1847, Chancellor Ridley, without solicitation, appointed him clerk and master. In 1848, he entered Cumberland University, where he was graduated the next year with the second law class of that institution, a class of fifty-six, which included Robert Hatton, John F. House, James D. Porter, Nathan Green, Jr., Abram L. Demoss, William S. McLemore, John Somers, B. J. Tarver, and others who took high rank in the profession.

In 1851, Judge Goodpasture ran for Congress against Col. John H. Savage, who had been elected in 1849, and whose distinguished services he could not overcome. In 1856, Judge Goodpasture was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at Cincinnati. Resigning the office of clerk and master in 1857, he was elected to the State Senate, and he declined a nomination two years later. He practiced law in all the courts of the Mountain District. He enjoyed the highest respect and confidence of the people, and his practice became large and lucrative. In 1879, he moved to Nashville, where he continued in the practice of law for a time, and also took up various business enterprises, in all of which he was successful. For several years he was engaged in importing improved stock, and in 1885-'87, he made three trips to Europe, and in 1888 he visited Mexico. His busy and useful life ended in 1896. He left an honored name and an example well worthy of emulation.

## MR. A. OAKLEY HALL'S ACCOUNT OF THE DUEL BETWEEN JACKSON AND SEVIER.

BY B. G. ALEXANDER, Peabody Normal College.

[Jackson and Sevier had no *duel*. They had two hostile rencontres, both previous to the battle of the Horsehoe. It is, therefore, impossible that General Jackson could have used the language imputed to him, unless there was a third rencontre after March 27, 1814.]

Andrew Jackson is the subject of a very entertaining and excellently illustrated article in the November *Frank Leslie's Popular Monthly*. This contribution, however meritorious in other respects, suffers by the introduction of an improbable story and one or two anachronisms.

The meeting of General Jackson and Colonel Sevier, as related by a grandson of Colonel Tipton, and their improvised duel, provoked by alleged reflections, in a public speech by Sevier, on Jackson's conduct at the battle of Horseshoe Bend, fought March 27, 1814, is doubtless either an interesting invention of some one who delights in a good story, or a confusion of real, though disconnected facts.

Such a meeting, it will be readily seen, if it ever occurred, must have taken place either during the short visit made to his home by Jackson after the battle of Horseshoe Bend, or after his return from New Orleans at the close of the war, in 1815.

The first supposition is very improbable, because of the briefness of Jackson's absence from the army. According to the *Nashville Whig*, May 10, 1814, Jackson arrived at Nashville, the "Monday previous" to that date, and James Parton in his *Life of Andrew Jackson*, Volume II, page 542, tells us that about May 31st, Jackson received notification of his appointment as Major General in the United States Army, and that in obedience to instructions from Washington, he set out at once



for the scenes of late Indian warfare to conclude a definite treaty with the conquered Creeks.

Mr. Parton tells us also that General Jackson took a much needed rest during the three weeks' interval. How then could there have been a meeting between him and Colonel Sevier, who now nearly seventy years of age, lived, when not in Washington, at his rustic home several miles from Knoxville?

Nor is it reasonable that such a meeting could have occurred afterwards, for General Jackson did not return again from the seat of war 'til May 1815. After some time spent about Nashville in responding to popular outbursts of patriotic gratitude, he retired to the Hermitage where he spent several weeks in rest and in an endeavor to repair a badly shattered constitution. "Four months' rest," says Mr. Parton, and then "in the cool days of October we find the General on horseback once more, riding slowly through Tennessee and across Virginia toward Washington," but ere this the spirit of the great Sevier had fled. Having been for some time engaged in negotiations with the Indians, he died on his Indian mission, in Alabama, Sept. 24, 1815, several weeks previous to General Jackson's journey through East Tennessee.

Again, biographers of Sevier tell us that during this, the last year of his life, he was in very feeble health. He was certainly sixty-nine or seventy years old. In the picture drawn by Tipton, Sevier does not figure as either in poor health or old. According to the rules governing affairs of honor, had Jackson killed Sevier under such circumstances he would have been regarded as a murderer.

If any rencontre between Jackson and Sevier ever occurred after the battle of the Horseshoe Bend, James Parton, Jackson's most careful biographer, James R. Gilmore, author of a Life of Sevier, Prof. W. W. Clayton, General John Reid and other historians seem entirely uninformed. Not even a legend of it exists in the neighborhood, and the future biographer of General Jackson

will do well to weigh carefully such statements before accepting them as true.

But after all this we are still unprepared for the carelessness of statement which follows the story of Mr. Tipton. As has been said, if the above-mentioned duel was ever fought between Jackson and Sevier it must have been in either 1814 or 1815. Now Mr. Hall after relating the Tipton account says:

*"Some years later (i.e. later than 1814 or 1815) Jackson was second to ——— Carroll in a duel with a brother of the great Senator Benton. ——— Carroll severely wounded his adversary. This result brought from Washington the elder Benton, who berated him (Jackson) for participating in the duel against his brother. Jackson swore — I shall horsewhip Tom Benton. Accordingly, meeting the latter in the streets of Nashville he drew a cowhide," etc.*

How our author could be led into such an error as this we cannot understand, when the best biographies of Jackson place the affair with the Bentons before the Creek War. Jackson suffered during the war from severe wounds received in the Benton fight. A statement written by Thomas H. Benton, dated Franklin, Tenn., Sept. 10, 1813, settles any doubt about the matter by fixing the date as Sept. 4, 1813.

Here our chronicler is in error, as he is again, when, in the paragraph following the one from which the above quotation is made, he says:

*"Several times in after years Jackson's habitual irascibility — led him to the borderland of the dueling ground, not only with Governor Sevier, upon new provocation, but with McNairy," etc.*

Surely our most entertaining biographer reads his histories after the manner of the Celestials—from last to first—for John Sevier died in 1815. How he and Andrew Jackson could have come to "the borderland of the dueling ground" in "after years," would be hard to explain to the materialistic mind of this age.

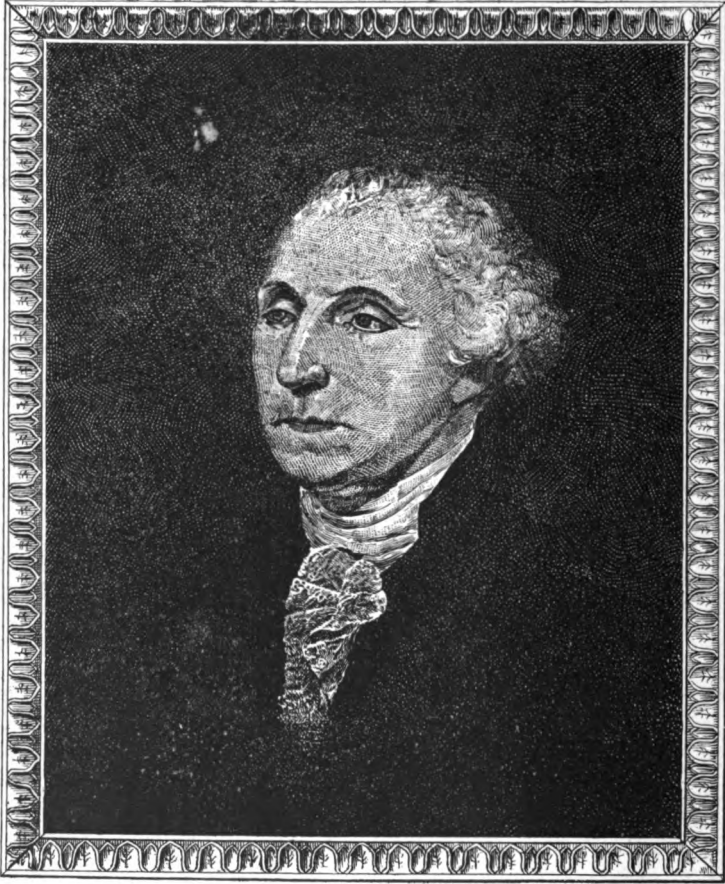
**LIFE AND TIMES OF ARCHBISHOP GRINDAL**, with some account of his kith and kin briefly described. In the Press. Price \$1.00. Pamphlet. (Limited number printed for private circulation only.)

The Rising of the North (1569) and the Reformation. The Winders of Larton. The Winder family of Somerset Co., Maryland, John Winder, William Dacre, and Thomas Wyberg (ancestor of Sir Wilfred Lawson, Bart.,—by change of name)—gents who married the Archbishop's nieces—Rev. Thomas Jefferson—Jonathan Winder one of the two chairmen of United Trade Council of India (1706)—Edward Stephenson, Governor of Calcutta (died 1768).

Compiled by F. A. Winder, E. Southsea, England.

To be obtained from F. A. Winder, or Miss Mary Winder Garrett, Williamsburg, Va.





**WASHINGTON.**

(From the bust portrait of Charles Wilson Peale. The property of Gen. G. P. Thruston, Nashville, Tenn. See page 132.)

# THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE,

REPRESENTING THE CHAIR OF AMERICAN  
HISTORY IN THE PEABODY  
NORMAL COLLEGE.



DEVOTED ESPECIALLY TO THE HISTORY OF  
TENNESSEE AND ADJOINING STATES.

---

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE PEABODY NORMAL  
COLLEGE, AT NASHVILLE, TENN.

---

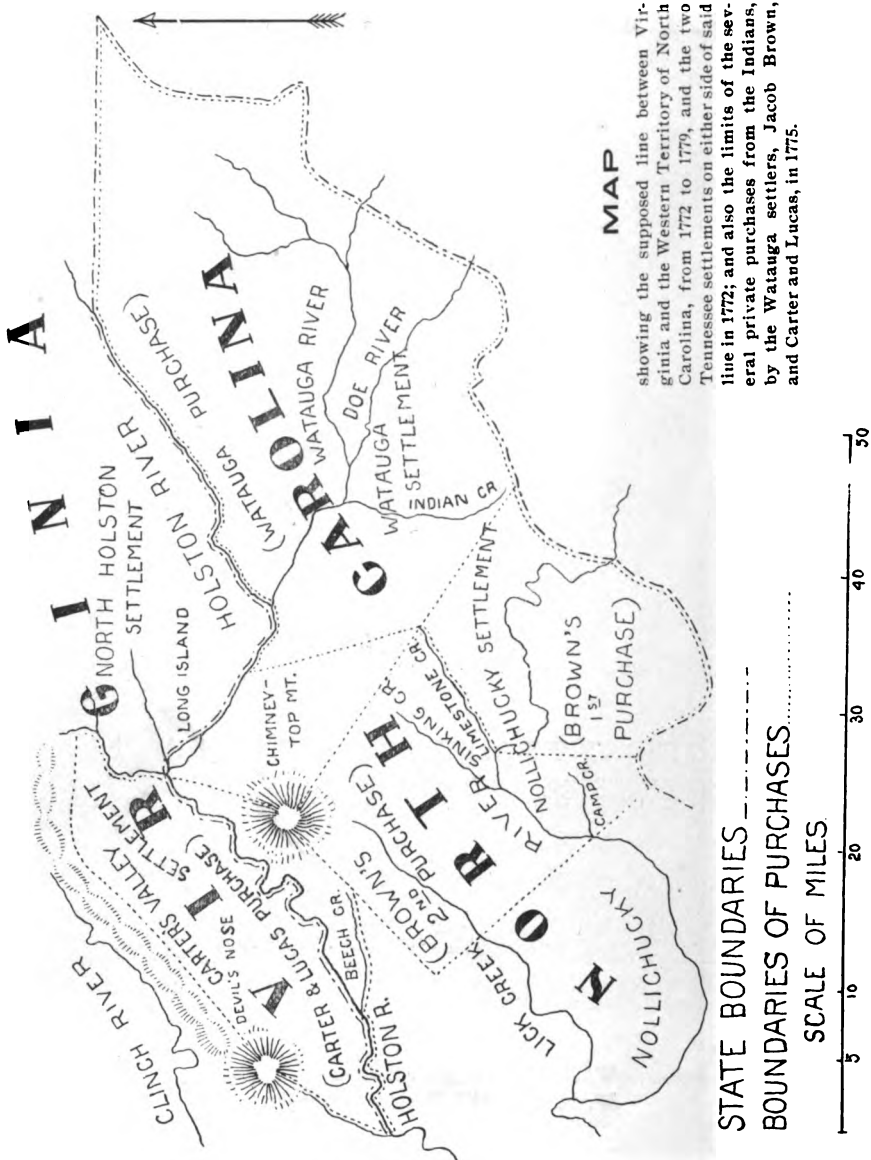
W. R. GARRETT, Editor.  
W. R. PAYNE, Business Manager.

---

\$3.00 PER ANNUM.

SINGLE NUMBER, 85 CENTS.

University Press, Nashville, Tenn.



# THE American Historical Magazine.

---

VOL. III.

APRIL, 1898.

No. 2.

---

## THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION.

A. V. GOODPASTURE, A.M., Nashville, Tenn.

[See map on opposite page.]

The political history of Tennessee begins with a convention of the settlers on the Watauga River, in 1772, which organized the Watauga Association, and appointed a court consisting of five members, which was entrusted with the entire administration of its laws; and its military history commences some three years later, when a joint convention of the Watauga and Nollichucky settlements met in 1775, and unanimously declared for the American cause, and appointed a committee of safety of thirteen members, authorized to pledge the settlements for their part of the continental expense, to co-operate with the United Colonies, and to direct and control the military affairs of the settlements.

The first settlements in Tennessee were made under widely varying conditions. Those lying north of the Holston River and along the Virginia border were only extensions of the frontier settlements of that Province, and have no history independent of that of Botetourt, Fincastle and Washington Counties, in which, successively, they were believed to be included,<sup>1</sup> earlier than 1779, when

---

<sup>1</sup>Fincastle County, Virginia, was taken from Botetourt in 1774. In October, 1776, Fincastle was divided into Kentucky, Washington and Montgomery, the name of Fincastle being dropped. Old Churches and Families of Virginia.—Mead, pp. 425-6.



the extension of the line by Walker and Henderson revealed the fact that they were in North Carolina.<sup>1</sup> There were two of them—that east of Long Island, generally called the North Holston settlement, and the Carter's Valley settlement, which was west of Long Island.

The North Holston settlement was east of the Indian line established by the Treaty of Lochaber, in 1770, which commenced at the south branch of Holston River, six miles east of Long Island, and ran to the mouth of the Great Kanawha<sup>2</sup>, and its people adhered to the government, and lived under the laws of Virginia<sup>3</sup> until 1779. Its leading family was the Shelbys. Gen. Evan Shelby (1720-1794), a native of Wales, emigrated with his father to Maryland, when about fifteen years of age. Here he became a noted woodsman, and figured prominently in the Indian wars on the border. He reached the Holston in 1771, and settled at King's Meadows. He held the rank of colonel in the Virginia service at the time the Walker-Henderson line was run in 1779, and his place being found to lie in North Carolina, his office was vacated, and William Campbell was promoted to the full rank of a colonel in his stead<sup>4</sup>. His son, Isaac Shelby (1750-1826), who came to Holston with him, was first a lieutenant, then a captain, afterwards a commissary, and in the spring of 1779, was elected a member of the Virginia Legislature from Washington County. In the fall of that year he was commissioned a major by Governor Jefferson and put in command of the guards which were

---

<sup>1</sup>The boundary line between this State and the State of Virginia, hath never, until lately, been extended by actual survey, further than that part of Holston River that lies directly due west from a place well-known by the name of Steep Rock, and all the lands westward of the said place, lying on the north and northwest side of the said River Holston, hath, by mistake of the settlers in that part of the country, been held and deemed to be in the State of Virginia, etc., Acts of N. C., 1779, Ch. 25, Sec. 1; Haywood and Cobb, Vol. 2, p. 23.

<sup>2</sup>Ramsey, p. 102.

<sup>3</sup>Ramsey, p. 106.

<sup>4</sup>King's Mountain and its Heroes.—Draper, p. 387.

to accompany the commissioners for extending the line between Virginia and North Carolina, which line disclosed his residence to lie within the limits of the latter State. He was immediately appointed a magistrate and a colonel in the new County of Sullivan, in North Carolina.<sup>1</sup>

The Carter's Valley settlement was likewise believed to be in Virginia, but was beyond the Indian line, so that they were deprived of the blessing of being under the immediate direction of any regular judicature.<sup>2</sup> Still, they hoped to hold their lands as first settlers, under the law of that Province.<sup>3</sup> In May, 1776, they petitioned the Virginia Convention that they might "be incorporated into and deemed a part of the Colony of Virginia, whose protection they claimed, and whose direction and jurisdiction they acknowledged in the fullest extent."<sup>4</sup>

Among the settlers in the Carter's Valley was John Carter, for whom the Valley was named, and who afterwards became a prominent member of the Watauga settlement,<sup>5</sup> and chairman of its committee of safety. Carter, in partnership, it is stated, with one Parker,<sup>6</sup> opened a store in the Valley, which was robbed by the Indians. When Henderson held his treaty with the Cherokees at Sycamore Shoals in 1775, Carter appeared and demanded the Valley as compensation for the injuries he had sustained. The Indians agreed to part with the land, but required additional compensation, which was agreed to and paid, Robert Lucas having been admitted as a partner, in order to enable him to raise the requisite

---

<sup>1</sup>King's Mountain and its Heroes.—Draper, pp. 411-12.

<sup>2</sup>American Archives (Fourth Series) Vol. VI, 1533.

<sup>3</sup>Ramsey, p. 106. The first claim presented to the commissioner to grant certificates for settlement and pre-emption claims in Kentucky County was that of Isaac Shelby for raising a crop of corn in the county in 1776. It was granted. Butler's Kentucky, (Ed. 1834), p. 100.

<sup>4</sup>American Archives (Fourth Series), Vol. VI, 1533.

<sup>5</sup>John Carter's residence was about half a mile north of Elizabethton. Ramsey, p. 141.

<sup>6</sup>Parker is not mentioned in connection with Carter and Lucas, either in the Petition of Inhabitants of Pendleton District, or in the Act of North Carolina making compensation for the Indian purchase.

amount.<sup>1</sup> Prior to this time, persons emigrating to Natchez frequently stopped on the Holston for a year or two, cleared land and made crops of corn, for the purpose of securing settlement and pre-emption rights under the laws of Virginia, which they sold to Carter and Parker, who usually conveyed them to immigrants coming to reside permanently in the country. After their purchase, however, Carter and Lucas leased their lands to job-purchasers, and it was at this time, probably, that they removed to the Watauga settlement. In 1776, the inhabitants of Carter's Valley complained bitterly to the Virginia Convention, "that John Carter and Robert Lucas, two gentlemen of the neighboring settlement, called Washington District, taking advantage of the present disorder, pretend that they have purchased the lands of the petitioners, and have exercised many unwarrantable oppressions, in seizing their improved possessions without allowing them any reward, or giving them the least notice, and publicly declaring that all others who will not accede to their terms, and receive titles of them, at such exorbitant prices as they shall think proper to exact, shall be turned out of possession."<sup>2</sup> And when the Valley was ascertained to be in North Carolina, they refused to longer hold under the Carter-Lucas purchase, that Province having promptly refused to recognize their right to buy lands from the Indians.<sup>3</sup>

These two settlements, therefore, lived, during all the historic life of the Watauga Association, under the laws and protection of Virginia, and had no other connection with the South Holston settlements than that of near

---

<sup>1</sup>The North Carolina Legislature, 1783, granted to Landon Carter, the son and heir of John Carter, who did not live many years after this transaction, and to the heirs of Robert Lucas, who was killed in defense of Davidson County, for their expense, trouble and risk in making this purchase of land from the Cherokee Indians, ten thousand acres of land on Clinch River, in the same act by which Henderson and his associates received one hundred and ninety thousand acres. Martin's Private Acts of North Carolina, p. 116.

<sup>2</sup>American Archives (Fourth Series) Vol. VI, 1533.

<sup>3</sup>Haywood, pp. 55-6.

and friendly neighbors, who stood in common peril from the Indians during the wars which commenced with the first struggles for American independence. And the only distinctively Tennessee history from 1769 to 1779, was made by the people south of the Holston River.

During this period there were two South Holston settlements, that on the Watauga River, called Watauga, and Brown's on the Nollichucky River. The latter settlement was just being planted at the time the Watauga Association was formed in 1772, and took no part in its organization.<sup>1</sup> Jacob Brown (1736-1785), a native of South Carolina,<sup>2</sup> brought one or two families from North Carolina,<sup>3</sup> and opened a store on the north bank of the Nollichucky in 1772. He was afterwards a member of the committee of safety, by whose appointment he became a colonel, and distinguished himself as a patriot and soldier, both in the Indian wars and at King's Mountain. He died from a wound accidentally received while out hunting.<sup>4</sup> Following the example of the Watauga settlers, and in the same year, Brown, who had ingratiated himself with the Indians, obtained from them a lease of the lands on the Nollichucky River, similar to that made to the Watauga settlers.<sup>5</sup> But Brown's settlement was not admitted to the Watauga Association until the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, some three years after its organization.<sup>6</sup>

The first decade of Tennessee history centers in the little settlement on the Watauga River, of which James Robertson (1742-1814) was the leading spirit. Robertson was a native of Brunswick County, Virginia, but in his youth had removed with his parents, John and Mary

---

<sup>1</sup>Ramsey, pp. 109 and 145.

<sup>2</sup>King's Mountain and its Heroes.—Draper, p. 424.

<sup>3</sup>Ramsey, p. 110.

<sup>4</sup>King's Mountain and its Heroes.—Draper, p. 424.

<sup>5</sup>Haywood, p. 55.

<sup>6</sup>Haywood, p. 61.

(Gower) Robertson, to Orange County, North Carolina,<sup>1</sup> made famous by the battle of the Alamance, where the first blood was shed in resistance to British oppression in America.<sup>2</sup> His father seems to have been poorer than the average, even in Orange County, where at that time, extreme poverty prevailed, and his education was wholly neglected. Like another distinguished citizen of Tennessee who emigrated from the same place,<sup>3</sup> and afterwards rose to the Presidency of the United States, Robertson received the first rudiments of an education from his enlightened wife.<sup>4</sup> But his native talent, his resolute spirit and his inspiring manner were such that he could neither have been an indifferent spectator in the stirring scenes of the first years of the Regulators, nor could he have passed unnoticed through them. At the very time they were charging Edmund Fanning, the County Clerk, with demanding and receiving fifteen dollars for a marriage license, and only a month after he had pleaded guilty to an indictment for six several instances of extortion,<sup>5</sup> on October 20, 1768, Robertson was married to Charlotte, daughter of George and Mary Reeves, who had come to Orange from Northampton County. If such an exorbitant fee were exacted of him no doubt he found it difficult to pay.

During the year or more of quiet dejection following the dispersion of the Regulators in the fall of 1768, he determined to seek a home beyond the reach of British oppression, and accordingly, in the spring of 1770, he crossed the mountain with the avowed intention of finding a home for himself and family, and with commissions to do a like

---

<sup>1</sup>Putnam, p. 18.

<sup>2</sup>Wheeler's North Carolina, Vol. I, p. 59.

<sup>3</sup>Wake County, North Carolina. The Legislature that met Dec. 5, 1770, dismembered the refractory County of Orange, and distributed parts of it among three new counties, the home Robertson was about to leave, falling into that of Wake. Wheeler's North Carolina, Vol. I, p. 58.

<sup>4</sup>Putnam, p. 21.

<sup>5</sup>Wheeler's North Carolina, Vol. I, p. 57.

service for many of his friends who wished desirable locations near his own.<sup>1</sup> Reaching the beautiful valley of the Watauga he selected a satisfactory place, accepted the hospitalities of one Honeycut, raised a crop of corn, and returned, alone, for his family and friends. On the trackless mountain he lost his way, and would have perished but for the providential relief afforded by two hunters who chanced to discover him, when his strength was fairly exhausted from hunger and fatigue.<sup>2</sup>

On his return he found great excitement, not only in Orange, but in Rowan and Dobbs Counties as well. Goaded to desperation, the Regulators had defied and resisted civil officers, assaulted and beaten attorneys and broken up courts.<sup>3</sup> The tyrannical and energetic governor took active steps, not only to suppress, but to crush them. Public meetings were forbidden, Orange County dismembered, the sale of powder and lead prohibited, an army was raised, and by the fourteenth of May, 1771, Governor Tryon encamped on the banks of the Alamance, with a force of more than eleven hundred men.<sup>4</sup> On the sixteenth the battle of the Alamance was fought, in which the Regulators were routed and their power completely broken. But, to use the language of Mr. Bancroft, "It is a mistake if any have supposed that the Regulators were cowed down by their defeat at the Alamance. Like the mammoth, they shook the bolt from their brow and crossed the mountain."<sup>5</sup> And the first fruits of this great exodus were James Robertson and his family and friends, who crossed over to their Watauga homes in the spring of 1771.

Robertson has justly been called the "Father of Tennessee." It is true his name is more intimately linked

---

<sup>1</sup>Putnam, p. 21.

<sup>2</sup>Haywood, pp. 52-3.

<sup>3</sup>Wheeler's North Carolina, Vol. I, p. 57.

<sup>4</sup>Wheeler's North Carolina, Vol. I, p. 58.

<sup>5</sup>Bancroft to Swain, Ramsey, p. 102.

with the history of the middle portion of the State, but his public services here antedate the settlement of the Cumberland valley by a period of nearly ten years, during which time he was the leading spirit of the Watauga settlements, where he proved himself in every way worthy of the affectionate title he has received. He had an elevation of soul that enabled him to take upon himself the burden of the whole community. He was wholly unconscious of self. He never sought popularity, nor honor, nor position. If there were a service too humble to attract the ambitious, a post so perilous as to make the brave quail, or a duty so difficult as to fill every other heart with despair, that service or post or duty was accepted as a matter of course by James Robertson. And his head was so cool and clear; he had such a brave, resolute and devoted spirit; and his vigilance was so alert and active, that success followed him like the blessings of a special providence.

He was not the first to settle on the banks of the Watauga. Perhaps that distinction is properly accorded to William Bean, who built his cabin near the mouth of Boone's Creek in 1769. But by the spring of 1772, when the first political organization in the State was effected, their little community numbered many families. Some of them had settled there in consequence of the Treaty of Lochaber, by which the western boundary of Virginia was moved back to within six miles of Long Island,<sup>1</sup> and at first they hoped to be found within the limits of that Province.<sup>2</sup> In 1771, an experimental survey from Steep Rock to Beaver Creek, made by Anthony Bledsoe, indicated clearly that they would fall in North Carolina upon an extension of the line.<sup>3</sup> This however, was only a private survey, and they do not seem to have taken any

---

<sup>1</sup>Petition of the Inhabitants of Washington District, Ramsey, p. 135.

<sup>2</sup>Same, Ramsey, p. 135.

<sup>3</sup>Haywood, p. 54.

action in consequence of it. But in 1772 Virginia made a treaty with the Cherokee Indians, by which it was agreed that her southern boundary should be a line running west from White Top Mountain in latitude thirty-six degrees and thirty minutes. This line was not actually surveyed, but the Holston River was tacitly accepted by all parties as the southern boundary of Virginia. Under this treaty Alexander Cameron, an agent of the British government residing among the Cherokees, ordered the Watauga settlers to move off.<sup>1</sup> It is worthy of notice that the order did not mention either the Nollichucky or Carter's Valley settlement. Brown was just then planting the Nollichucky settlement, which seems not to have attracted the agent's notice, but he recognized that he was within the Cherokee hunting ground, and made terms with the Indians to secure his possession. Carter's Valley, on the other hand, lying north of the supposed line, was not included in the order, and its settlers took no notice of it.

The order was leveled at the Watauga settlers, and placed them in a most critical situation. They suddenly found themselves without laws, and beyond the protection of any power stronger than their own feeble arm. It would have been folly to rely for protection on North Carolina, if they had been so inclined, but we have reason to believe they did not desire a political connection with her, at that time, as they neither adopted her laws nor sought her recognition until after she had asserted her independence of Great Britain. Moreover, they were now officially declared to be trespassers on the Cherokee hunting ground, and could obtain title to their lands neither from the Indians nor from the Provincial government. The proclamation of the King, in 1763, "strictly enjoined and required that no private person" should presume to purchase any lands from the Indians.<sup>2</sup> Fortunately for them a profound peace existed between the Col-

---

<sup>1</sup>Ramsey, p. 109.

<sup>2</sup>Ramsey, p. 71.



onies and the Southern Indians, and when the British agent ordered them to move back, some of the Cherokees expressed a wish that they might be permitted to remain, on condition that they should make no further encroachments.<sup>1</sup> This seems to have disarmed the agent, but it left the settlers in the precarious condition of tenants at will of the Indians.

At this juncture, a convention of the Watauga<sup>2</sup> settlers was called to consider their anomalous and unhappy situation, and to devise means for its improvement. They never thought of abandoning their homes. They said they were "too inconveniently situated to move back," and, besides, they were "unwilling to lose the labor bestowed on their plantations." Inspired by the genius of common sense, they determined to do two things: First: to form a government of their own for the administration of justice in their settlement; and second, to lease for a term of years the lands on which they lived, conceiving that the King's proclamation of 1763, prohibiting them from buying the land from the Indians, did not extend to a leasing.

Accordingly, they entered into a written association and articles for the government of the settlement,<sup>3</sup> which was the first written constitution adopted by the consent of a free and independent people in America.<sup>4</sup> The

---

<sup>1</sup>Haywood, p. 54.

<sup>2</sup>Caldwell, in his excellent little work, entitled *Studies in the Constitutional History of Tennessee*, p. 18, says: "The settlements originally composing the Association were Watauga and Carter's Valley," but he is manifestly in error.

<sup>3</sup>Haywood, p. 54.

<sup>4</sup>Compare Ramsey, p. 107; Kelly, in *Proceedings of the First Scotch Irish Congress*, p. 153; Allison, in *Proceeding of the Seventeenth Meeting of the Tennessee Press Association*, p. 27; Roosevelt's *Winning of the West*, Vol. I, p. 184; Caldwell's *Studies in the Constitutional History of Tennessee*, p. 27. Caldwell, p. 29, criticises Bancroft for the statement that Watauga "set to the people of America the example of erecting themselves into a State independent of the authority of the British King," apparently without having his attention called to the fact that the language is substantially that of the British Governor of Virginia to the Secretary of State, who says, "it at least sets a dangerous example to the people of America, of forming govern-

instrument itself has not been preserved, and much confusion and inaccuracy respecting its scheme of government have been caused by an incorrect interpretation of the Petition of the Inhabitants of Washington District to the Provincial Council of North Carolina, by the able and laborious historian to whose careful and persistent research we owe its publication.<sup>1</sup>

The nearest contemporary authority we have, states that "they appointed magistrates, and framed laws for their present occasion, and to all intents and purposes, erected themselves into, though an inconsiderable, yet a separate State."<sup>2</sup> Moses Fisk (1759-1843), who had a wide acquaintance among the pioneers of Tennessee, and did much careful investigation in matters touching its history and antiquities, writing in 1816, says: "A code of laws was drawn up to be signed by every individual. If any should refuse he was to be debarred from its benefits. But there was no recusant. \* \* \* Magistrates were elected under the denomination of trustees, by whom all controversies were to be decided, conformably to the written code. There was much energy in the system, and it proved very satisfactory. Thus organized, their affairs continued prosperous till the commencement of the Revolutionary War."<sup>3</sup> Haywood is in substantial accord with Fisk and almost as brief, though he adds some important information not noticed by the latter. From him we learn that the magistrates, whom he calls commissioners, were five in number, and that James Robertson was one of the five; and also that they had a clerk

---

ments distinct from and independent of his Majesty's authority." Dunmore to Dartmouth, May 16, 1774, Bancroft (First Ed.) Vol. 6, p. 401, note.

<sup>1</sup>Ramsey.

<sup>2</sup>Dunmore to Dartmouth, May 16, 1774, Bancroft (First Ed.) Vol. VI, p. 401, note.

<sup>3</sup>A Summary Notice of the First Settlements Made by White People within the Limits Which Bound the State of Tennessee, Mass. Historical Collections (Second Series) Vol. VII, p. 59; reprinted with a Sketch of the Author in THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE, Vol. II, p. 17.

and a sheriff, and held their sessions at stated and regular times, taking the laws of Virginia as the standard of their decisions.<sup>1</sup>

The substance of these several statements is, that the Watauga settlement met in mass convention and adopted a written constitution, in which the laws of their own State were repudiated and the Virginia system adopted. This constitution was signed by every member of the community, and a court, consisting of five magistrates, having a clerk and a sheriff, were appointed to administer the law, under the constitution. This is entirely consistent with the Petition of the Inhabitants of Washington District, when rightly understood. But Ramsey, after repeating without qualification what Haywood says, confounding the court with the committee of safety, adds the irreconcilable statement that, "the Watauga settlers, in convention assembled, elected as commissioners thirteen citizens," and names as such commissioners the thirteen members of the committee who signed, in their official capacity, the Petition of the Inhabitants of Washington District,<sup>2</sup> although, according to all the authorities, some of them, like Jacob Brown, for instance, who was just then forming his little settlement on the Nollichucky, were not originally members of the Watauga Association. Of these, he says it is believed, but on what authority does not appear, that John Carter, Charles Roberson, James Robertson, Zack Isbell and John Sevier, were selected as the court, with John Carter, who, we have every reason to believe, was then, and for some years afterwards engaged in selling goods and trading in settlement and pre-emption claims in Carter's Valley, as its chairman.<sup>3</sup>

These statements, coming from an author usually so accurate and trustworthy, have misled as able and dis-

---

<sup>1</sup>Haywood, pp. 54, 59.

<sup>2</sup>Ramsey, p. 107.

<sup>3</sup>Ramsey, p. 107.

criminating writers as Phelan, Roosevelt and Caldwell, and has given them an immense deal of trouble in undertaking to construct a government by amalgamating the court with the committee of safety. Phelan says, "having assembled in general convention, like the inhabitants of the old New England towns, a committee of thirteen was elected as a kind of general body for legislative purposes. The executive and judicial power was lodged in five commissioners elected by the thirteen from their own body. The five commissioners elected one of their number chairman, who was *ex-officio* chairman of the committee of thirteen.<sup>1</sup> A clerk was elected by the committee. Among the most important legislative functions performed by this body was the establishment of instruments for the recording of wills and deeds."<sup>2</sup> Roosevelt follows in the same line, but a little more picturesquely. He says, after "holding a kind of folk-thing, akin to the New England town-meeting, they then elected a representative assembly, a small parliament or 'witenagamot,' which met at Robertson's station. Apparently the freemen of each little fort or palisaded village, each blockhouse that was the center of a group of detached cabins and clearings, sent a member to this first frontier legislature."<sup>3</sup> Evidently he had not observed the fact that, at that time, there was not a fort or palisaded village or blockhouse in the settlement.<sup>4</sup> Caldwell, in his critical analysis of the Watauga constitution, quotes what both Haywood and Ramsey say, and giving credence to both, of course, finds the matter in inextricable confusion. He says: "This court or board of five commissioners, appears to have exercised all judicial and executive authority."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>It would be a remarkable thing if a sub-committee were permitted to name the chairman of the full committee. The reverse is often done.

<sup>2</sup>Phelan, pp. 33-4.

<sup>3</sup>Winning of the West, Vol. I, p. 184.

<sup>4</sup>Ramsey, p. 146; Haywood, p. 61.

<sup>5</sup>Studies in the Constitutional History of Tennessee, p. 17.

"It is impossible to define the respective powers of the committee of thirteen, and of the court or commission of five. \* \* \* The thirteen do not appear to have had any part in the actual conduct of the public business."<sup>1</sup> "Nothing can be said definitely concerning the committee of thirteen, except that it met in 1772, and appointed the court, to which it appears to have entrusted all the functions of administration."<sup>2</sup> And, speaking of the Cumberland compact: "I do not find the equivalent of the sub-committee or court of five, which seems to have had the actual administration in Watauga."<sup>3</sup> "The most striking of these variances is the omission of the sub-committee or court of five, from the Cumberland organization. It is impossible to say with certainty why this was done; my own opinion is, that the Watauga people had found by experience that it was not necessary to have both the court of five and the committee of thirteen. It is to be inferred that in Watauga the large body became practically of no value, rendering no service."<sup>4</sup>

A careful study of the Petition of the Inhabitants of Washington District, in the light of contemporary history, will reveal the fact that the court and committee were wholly distinct and separate bodies, created at different times and for different purposes. Fisk says, "When it appeared that this grand conflict [the Revolutionary War] would inevitably become universal, Cameron sent very enticing letters to them, endeavoring with many fine promises of protection in case of their loyalty, to attach them to the British interest. The peril of their situation was too obvious; but they unanimously resolved, whatever the issue should be, to participate in the struggle for independence."<sup>5</sup> June 15, 1775, George Wash-

---

<sup>1</sup>Studies in the Constitutional History of Tennessee, p. 21.

<sup>2</sup>Id., p. 22.

<sup>3</sup>Id., p. 39.

<sup>4</sup>Studies in the Constitutional History of Tennessee, pp. 43-4.

<sup>5</sup>AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE, Vol. II, p. 21.

ington was elected commander-in-chief of the American forces, and in July the Virginia convention met and appointed a committee of safety for the Province, naming Edmund Pendleton as its President. The committee of safety of Fincastle County was headed with Rev. Charles Cummings, a zealous whig, and a son-in-law of John Carter, of Lancaster County, Virginia.<sup>1</sup> In August the North Carolina Congress declared that the people of that Province would pay their due proportion of the continental expense, and appointed a Provincial Council, consisting of thirteen members, and provided for the election of a committee of safety, of thirteen members, in each district in the Province.<sup>2</sup> About this time, the settlers on the Watauga and Nollichucky, who styled themselves Washington District, appointed a committee of thirteen, not materially different, to say the least, from the committee of safety in each of the six recognized districts of North Carolina. And their neighbors in Carter's Valley formed themselves into a society, called Pendleton District, appointed a committee, and presented a petition to the committee of Fincastle County, through whom it was forwarded to the Virginia Convention, in which "they think it unnatural that they, though few, should remain inactive, while their brethren are bleeding in the field."<sup>3</sup> July 4, 1776, the American Declaration of Independence was adopted, and immediately after that event the inhabitants of Washington District presented their petition to the Provincial Council of North Carolina, praying to be annexed to the Province, in such a manner as might enable them to share in the glorious cause of liberty; enforce their laws under authority, and in every respect become the best members of society. It bears no date, but was received August 22, 1776.

---

<sup>1</sup> Foote's *Sketches of Virginia*, (Second Series), pp. 122-124.

<sup>2</sup> Wheeler's *North Carolina*, Vol. I, pp. 73-4.

<sup>3</sup> American Archives (Fourth Series), Vol. VI, 1533.

The petitioners speak of the Donelson treaty with the Cherokee Indians (1770), which induced many of them to settle on the Watauga, expecting to be in Virginia, and to hold their lands by their improvements as first settlers; of their disappointment, when the line was run, to find themselves in North Carolina; of their lease of land from the Cherokees (1772) for the term of ten years; and of yielding to the precedent set by Henderson & Co., many of whom, they declared, were gentlemen of the law, and making a purchase in fee simple, (1775). Then they proceed:

"The purchase was no sooner made<sup>1</sup> than we were alarmed by the report of the present unhappy differences between Great Britain and America, on which report (taking now the United Colonies for our guide), we proceeded to choose a committee, which was done unanimously by consent of the people."<sup>2</sup>

They next give the causes that led them to form a court (and they never confuse the terms "court" and "committee"), show the legality of its proceedings and their want of proper authority to try and punish felons.

Turning to matters connected with the War, they give an account of their military establishment, which they say were chosen agreeable to the rules established by convention, and officers appointed by the committee,

The whole is then submitted to the candid and impartial judgment of the Provincial Council, and is signed by the members of the committee, and by one hundred others.<sup>3</sup>

It clearly appears from this petition that, while the court was established in 1772, the committee was not created until 1775. Take the committee, therefore, out of the Watauga constitution, and the nature and func-

---

<sup>1</sup>The purchase was made March 19, 1775, and the battle of Lexington was fought April 19, 1775.

<sup>2</sup>Ramsey, p. 135,

<sup>3</sup>Ramsey, pp. 134 to 138.

tions of both court and committee become plain and simple.

Finding themselves without laws and beyond the jurisdiction of any government, the people of the Watauga settlement met in mass convention, in 1772, adopted a constitution, and appointed a court of five commissioners, to whom they entrusted all the powers of the government. This was in a time of profound peace, which continued until the beginning of the Revolutionary War.

Afterwards in 1775, when that great conflict came on a second convention was held by the two settlements on the Watauga and Nollichucky, to take into consideration the "unhappy differences between Great Britain and America," which convention "taking now the United Colonies for their guide, proceeded to choose a committee," whose duties were identical with those of a committee of safety, as they were understood at that time. "They resolved to adhere to the rules and orders of the Continental Congress, and in open committee acknowledged themselves indebted to the United Colonies their full proportion of the continental expense."<sup>1</sup> They took charge of the military establishments, and appointed the military officers.<sup>2</sup> They administered the oath of allegiance to such persons as were suspected of disaffection to the American cause.<sup>3</sup> They enlisted a company of fine riflemen for service on the sea shore, who were actually embodied and put under command of Captain James Robertson, when an Indian invasion being threatened, it became necessary to send them to the frontiers.<sup>4</sup> They strengthened the forts and took every measure that could add to the security of their people, and having exhausted their own resources, they sent an express to Virginia for aid

---

<sup>1</sup>Ramsey, p. 136.

<sup>2</sup>They appointed Carter from Watauga, and Brown from Nollichucky, colonels, and Womack of Watauga, major. Rainsey, p. 145.

<sup>3</sup>Carter, who had the oath administered, was chairman of the committee. Ramsey, p. 145.

<sup>4</sup>Ramsey, p. 137.



and supplies of powder and lead.<sup>1</sup> We may well conclude that the committee did not become valueless nor cease to render service until Washington District was annexed to North Carolina, and both the court and committee of safety gave place to the regular government of that State.

---

### REVOLUTIONARY AND MILITARY PENSIONERS—LIST FOR TENNESSEE, JUNE 1, 1840.

---

The general pension law of April 10, 1806 (see *Annals of Congress* 1805-6, page 1255), extending and enlarging previous acts, provided only for officers, soldiers and seamen, "disabled by known wounds."

This Act became the subject of subsequent debates in Congress, in which the strictness of its requirements was criticised. March 3, 1809, it was amended by an act entitled "An Act Concerning Invalid Pensioners," by which a long list of petitioners were added by name.

Various discussions subsequently arose in Congress leading to amendments. In 1818, in order to render legislation more systematic, standing committees on pensions were appointed in both houses, Mr. John Rhea of Tennessee being the chairman of the House committee; (*Annals of Congress* 1818-19, pages 20, 291). An act was passed March 3, 1819, "regulating the payments to Invalid Pensioners."

Notwithstanding the careful limitations and strict administration of these early pension laws, charges were made of extravagance and counter charges of undue severity of construction. The general trend, however, was toward extension of the law and increase of the pension list. At various times committees were appointed to investigate, and officers were required to report. Mr. Calhoun, while Secretary of War, reported a complete list of all pensioners then on the rolls. These investiga-

---

<sup>1</sup>Ramsey, p. 150.

tions and reports led to debates, the most extended and acrimonious of which occurred in the Senate in 1830.

The most important acts of legislation between 1819 and 1840, were:

1. The Act of Feb. 4, 1822, reviving and continuing previous acts.

2. The Act of 1836, a general law, which Mr. Calhoun subsequently styled "the permanent law." This Act extended the benefits to the widows of soldiers and sailors.

3. The Act of 1838, which extended the benefits to widows of soldiers and sailors in cases where the marriage had been contracted after the war.

These and other Acts added largely to the list of pensioners, and to the cost of pensions.

Feb. 28, 1839, President Van Buren sent a message to Congress, transmitting a communication from the Secretary of War, and recommending that the officers employed to take the census be required to make a return of the names and ages of all pensioners in the United States. A provision in accordance with the recommendation of the President was incorporated in the census law of March 3, 1839.

A special appendix of the census of 1840, gives the entire roll of honor. The following is the title page of this appendix:

A  
CENSUS OF PENSIONERS  
FOR  
REVOLUTIONARY OR MILITARY SERVICES;  
WITH THEIR  
NAMES, AGES, AND PLACES OF RESIDENCE,  
AS  
RETURNED BY THE MARSHALS OF THE SEVERAL JUDICIAL  
DISTRICTS,  
UNDER  
THE ACT FOR TAKING THE SIXTH CENSUS.

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY OF AN ACT OF CONGRESS, UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE  
SECRETARY OF STATE.

WASHINGTON:  
PRINTED BY BLAIR AND RIVES.  
1841.

Below is the list of those living in Tennessee, June, 1, 1840.

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—EASTERN DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.	NAMES.	AGES.
<b>ANDERSON COUNTY.</b>		<b>DISTRICT NO. 2.</b>	
James Trowell .....	78	Francis Hughs.....	80
Douglas Oliver.....	88	<b>CARTER COUNTY.</b>	
William Cross .....	80	<b>DISTRICT NO. 1.</b>	
William Patterson .....	87	Charles Moreland.....	76
Peter Johnson .....	81	James Campbell .....	80
Page Portwood.....	83	<b>DISTRICT NO. 3.</b>	
Thomas Brummett .....	87	Jeremiah Campbell .....	78
J. J. Williams.....	81	<b>CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 5.</b>	
<b>BRADLEY COUNTY.</b>		Ephraim Buck .....	49
Charles Lain.....	81	John Scott .....	87
Joseph Lain.....	83	Isaac Taylor .....	84
Sarah Cry.....	78	<b>DISTRICT NO. 6.</b>	
Robert McCormack .....	83	Solomon Hendrix .....	86
James Hamilton.....	84	Andrew Taylor .....	80
William McAllister, sen.....	80	<b>DISTRICT NO. 7.</b>	
Robert Forrester.....	80	Abner McLeod .....	44
William Dodd .....	83	Elizabeth Carter.....	75
James Sellers.....	85	<b>SCHOOL DISTRICT NO. 8.</b>	
<b>BLOUNT COUNTY.</b>		John Miller.....	75
Robert McCay .....	81	George Emert.....	83
Thomas Hunter.....	82	Richard Kelley .....	76
James Houston .....	82	<b>DISTRICT NO. 9.</b>	
William Tipton .....	79	Leonard Bowers .....	80
James Taylor .....	82	<b>CLAIBORNE COUNTY.</b>	
John Davis .....	86	Harman Hopper.....	78
Robert Tedford .....	80	Richard Harper.....	76
James McKensey.....	87	Andrew Presley.....	90
Robert Bryant .....	93	Thomas Nun .....	90
George Haden .....	91	Jesse Webb .....	63
James Symms .....	90	Thomas Hardy.....	74
George Ewing .....	80	John Ousley.....	82
James Carathers.....	80 to 90	Solomon Lewis .....	90
Robert Rhea.....	76	John Braden.....	80
William Hamby.....	97	John Jones, sen .....	77
<b>BLEDSOE COUNTY.</b>		Peter Peck.....	78
<b>DISTRICT NO. 1.</b>		Whorton Nunn.....	85
John Narramore.....	79	Matthew Bussle.....	93
<b>DISTRICT NO. 2.</b>		<b>COCKE COUNTY.</b>	
Chatten D. Pollard .....	79	William Bragg.....	75
John Ford, sen.....	78	Peter Wise.....	89
<b>DISTRICT NO. 3.</b>		Darius O'Neal.....	76
Charles Shurmon .....	86	Bartlett Sisk.....	79
<b>DISTRICT NO. 6.</b>		Samuel Yeates.....	83
Philip Shurmon.....	82	Joseph Burke .....	75
John Hail.....	86	Henry Click.....	59
Andrew Davis.....	83	Allen Seratt.....	77
<b>DISTRICT NO. 7.</b>			
Andrew McDonough .....	80		

# REVOLUTIONARY AND MILITARY PENSIONERS. 123

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—EASTERN DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.
CAMPBELL COUNTY.	
John Cabbage.....	83
James McDonald.....	79
Martha Rogers.....	75
Dennis Trammel.....	—
Richard Crabtree.....	76

GREENE COUNTY.	
Peter Kent.....	80
John Sexton.....	79
William Houston.....	77
George House.....	78
Thomas Morgan, sen.....	88
Martin Waddle.....	80
Nasma Sevier.....	97
Joseph Dunlap.....	92
William Sharp.....	79

NORTHERN DIVISION.	
Jacob Bruner.....	76
John Morrison.....	83
John Gass, sen.....	83
Azariah Doty.....	96
John Carter.....	83
Thomas Bryant.....	86
Frederick Shaffer.....	82
John Kesterson.....	85

GRAINGER COUNTY.	
John Tanner.....	81
Lewis Collins.....	87
Chapman Poindexter.....	81
Richard Grantham.....	85
John Bethel.....	84
Joseph Yadon.....	84
James Hines.....	89
William Clay.....	80
Thomas Brown.....	77
Joseph Ellis.....	77
Adam Cabbage.....	85
John Hammock.....	86
Israel McBee.....	79
Thomas Lay.....	79

HAMILTON COUNTY.	
Moses Nelson.....	41
Robert Martin.....	84
William Reid.....	75
James Davis.....	80
Thomas Palmer.....	81
Joseph Campbell.....	86

HAWKINS COUNTY.	
William Thurman.....	79
Robert Hensley.....	81
Mary Beaty.....	86

NAMES.	AGES.
Henry Frazier.....	57
Thomas A. Fletcher.....	90
Robert Campbell, sen.....	80
Washington Denham.....	54
William Molsbey, sen.....	82
James Simmons, sen.....	81
Henry Blevins.....	84
John Hicks.....	80
Thomas Brooks.....	80
Wright Bond.....	87
James Lovin.....	81
Richard Matlock.....	79
Notley Thomas.....	93
John Sowell.....	80
Momon Lawson.....	95
Littleton Brooks.....	90
Seth Manis.....	78
Alexander Trent.....	81
Bartlet Belcher.....	76
Francis Winstead.....	81
John Rains.....	81
Abner Gordon.....	82
Pharaoh Cobb.....	90
Samuel Riggs.....	80
Elizabeth Smith.....	79
Thomas Price.....	79
Jonathan Long, sen.....	78
Letitia Rorack.....	93
John Leonard.....	82
Daniel Jones, sen.....	86
William Bussell.....	77
John Light, sen.....	76
William Jewell.....	97
James Morrison.....	86
Flower Mullins.....	77
William Skelton.....	79
Joseph Britton.....	87

JOHNSON COUNTY.	
William Wilson.....	82
James McDaniel.....	82
Jacob Hood.....	96

JEFFERSON COUNTY.	
NORTHERN DIVISION.	
Stephen McLaughlon.....	82
John Petty.....	83
Jacob Maddox.....	76
Allen Kelley.....	55
William Murphy.....	83
Benjamin Bradshaw.....	82
William Caldwell, sen.....	80
John McCoy.....	88
John Hasket.....	90
Samuel McSpadden.....	83
Jesse Gammon.....	75
Spencer Watkins.....	80

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—EASTERN DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.
Richard Cheek.....	79
Tide Lane.....	78
James Anderson, sen.....	80
Michael Treace.....	85

## SOUTHERN DIVISION.

George Turnley.....	78
John Fain.....	51
Zaccheus Copeland.....	76
George Gregory.....	61
James Fuller.....	49
John Russell.....	55
Michael Barnett.....	80
John Henry.....	81
Jesse Webb.....	74
Joel Davis.....	77
Ely Sartin.....	55

## KNOX COUNTY.

David Pinn.....	80
Philip Titlow.....	57
Edward Smith.....	80
Samuel Tarver.....	80
Thomas Dove.....	86
Perrin Cardwell.....	76
Absolom Rutherford.....	78
Vincent Jackson.....	95
Marcus Swadley.....	80
Thomas Sumpter.....	76
Joseph Brown.....	84
Mitchell Childress.....	90
John Fox.....	83
David Falkner.....	83
Joseph Large.....	84
Edmund Newman.....	77
James Campbell.....	83
Harris Gammon.....	83
John Childress.....	81
Garnett Smith.....	78
Jesse Wells.....	91
Jacob Gallespie.....	86
Card Cox, sen.....	77
Luke Stansbury.....	88
Richard Porterfield.....	82
Jesse Perry.....	83
James Crews.....	86
Robert Johnson.....	81
John McLemore.....	85
Abraham Hankins.....	86

## MCMINN COUNTY.

Isaac Lane.....	81
Jno. Honey.....	79
Will Peters.....	79
William Norman.....	76
Spencer Benson.....	76
Edmond Roberts.....	83

NAMES.	AGES.
Elizabeth McNabb.....	80
James Cunningham.....	80
John Raney.....	84
James Riggins.....	88
Maximilian Rector.....	82
Henry Matlock.....	54
Charles Carter.....	73
William Barnett.....	79
Simeon Eldridge.....	78
John Kurtus.....	85
Benjamin Brown.....	87
E. Cooper.....	45

## MONROE COUNTY.

## 26TH REGIMENT.

Gideon Morgan.....	65
Henry Stephens.....	66
Nathaniel Watson.....	99
Christopher Boston.....	81
Bergiss Wit.....	79
William Duggan.....	49
John Allgood.....	85

## 27TH REGIMENT.

Thomas Vernon.....	88
Jacob Patton.....	83
Thomas Duncan.....	76
James Montgomery.....	49
John Pannel.....	49
John Simms.....	90
John Denton.....	81
James McGill.....	83
Samuel Steel.....	81

## MORGAN COUNTY.

Betsey Staples.....	76
Rebecca Holloway.....	76
Joseph McPeters.....	83
Marsha Green.....	87
Abel Peak.....	79
Esther Sexton.....	79
Nathaniel Milton.....	80
Jonathan Deldine.....	77
John Howard.....	73
Ryal Pren.....	77
John Williams.....	80
Joseph Patton.....	78
Joseph Stineuphor.....	85
Thomas Kindred.....	81
John Crinshaw.....	83
Matthew Williams.....	85

## MEIGS COUNTY.

John Dyer.....	80
John Sutton.....	90

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—EASTERN DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.	NAMES.	AGES.
<b>MARION COUNTY.</b>		Thomas Morrell.....	80
Ransom Smith.....	81	Joshua Hamilton.....	79
Ezekiel Stone.....	83	Elijah Cross.....	84
Letitia Rains.....	71	Abraham Cross.....	90
Laton Smith.....	84	Edward Cox.....	83
William Everett.....	78	Jacob Bealer.....	89
James Morgan.....	81	Joseph Grey.....	76
<b>POLK COUNTY.</b>		Jacob Hawk.....	82
William May.....	75	George Bushong.....	48
William Longley.....	82	Jacob Slaughter.....	84
Samuel Walker.....	80	William Snodgrass.....	80
Thomas Towns.....	89	Samuel Taylor.....	85
Samuel Carter.....	85	Thomas Cox.....	84
<b>RHEA COUNTY.</b>		Henry Maggot.....	80
Daniel Broiles.....	80	John Hudson.....	85
James Furgison.....	81	Henry Maggot.....	54
Thomas Hamilton.....	80	Ankey Godsey.....	77
Thomas McKeddy.....	86	William King.....	88
Mary Reace.....	23	William Bolen.....	83
Harris Ryan.....	76	David Childress.....	78
<b>ROANE COUNTY.</b>		Benjamin Birdwell.....	74
Thomas Landrim.....	86	William Goad.....	86
James Acree.....	86	Richard Parkers.....	55
John Baman.....	86	John Chester.....	86
Adam Miller.....	83	John Douglass.....	76
David Blackwell.....	82	Robert Tribbett.....	57
Benjamin Chapman.....	78	Micajah Adams.....	81
Samuel Evans.....	84	<b>SEVIER COUNTY.</b>	
John Hood.....	78	Penelope Porter.....	77
John Wooddy.....	81	Lydia Atchley.....	75
John McNatt.....	78	Jacob Layman.....	78
James Allen.....	81	William Trotter.....	77
Edward Wyatt.....	81	Jeremiah Compton.....	87
James Akin.....	80	George Parson.....	79
Robert Liles.....	81	Daniel Fox.....	66
Thomas Ives.....	82	John McCroskey.....	84
Carter Barnard.....	78	<b>WASHINGTON COUNTY.</b>	
Solomon Gearran.....	80	John Crouch.....	84
Tandy Senter.....	82	Loyd Ford.....	83
Lard Burns.....	85	Amon Hale.....	83
John Cox.....	82	William Ledmon.....	67
George Fuller, sen.....	83	Jeremiah Keys.....	43
Nathaniel Orsbourn.....	89	Elizabeth Lacky.....	80
William Boyd.....	84	James Simmons.....	49
William Moore.....	82	William Slaughter.....	85
Benjamin Clark.....	77	John Thornburg.....	61
William Hyden.....	76	Jacob Brown.....	91
David C. Demey.....	86	Hugh Harriss.....	84
<b>SULLIVAN COUNTY.</b>		Adam Harman.....	75
Thomas King.....	86	Andrew Hannah.....	79
David Hughes.....	82	Zadoc Freeman.....	55
John Almoney.....	58	Adam Ingle.....	86
John Grier.....	79	James Sevier.....	76
Thomas Jones.....	78	Elizabeth Jackson.....	75
		Darling Jones.....	77

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—MIDDLE DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.	NAMES.	AGES.
BEDFORD COUNTY.		DE KALB COUNTY.	
Robert Majors .....	79	John Fite .....	81
Samuel Knox .....	83	Leonard Fite .....	81
Richard Keel .....	87	James Saunders .....	79
Matt Martin, sen. ....	77	Elijah Duncan .....	90
John Davidson .....	77	Elijah Hooton .....	93
Zadoc Wood .....	74	Joseph Rankhorn .....	81
John Moore, sen. ....	80	John Pucket .....	76
John Gibbs .....	81	John Bevert .....	86
Horatio Coop .....	84		
Jackson Lisle .....	78	DAVIDSON COUNTY.	
John Morrison .....	77	Norvell Lipscomb .....	84
David Osteen .....	79	Perkinson Jackman .....	77
John Tacke .....	86	James Haley .....	84
Jacob Bledsoe .....	79	Peter Leslie .....	80
Ezekiel Reynolds .....	80	Gideon Johnson .....	86
Abram Hilton .....	90	James Barnes .....	79
James Murry .....	88	Nicholas Hale .....	78
John Williams .....	79	CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 9.	
CANNON COUNTY.		Cabler Frederick .....	82
John Bynum .....	83	Joseph Vick .....	78
Enoch Berry .....	77	CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 10.	
John Stephenson .....	89	John Williamson .....	79
Isaac Eoff .....	79	CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 11.	
Daniel Carroll .....	77	John McCutchin .....	87
Hardy Lassetor .....	88	CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 12.	
David Faulkenburg .....	101	William Watkins .....	85
Gisbin Lane .....	89	Caleb Mason .....	87
COFFEE COUNTY.		CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 18.	
Isaac Street .....	78	John Casey .....	77
Morton Jones .....	91	Isaiah Alley .....	91
John Nelson .....	84	CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 19.	
Lewis Taylor .....	79	Peter Bashaw .....	78
Charles Pearson .....	80	Benjamin Morgan .....	78
Sterling Pearson .....	87	CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 20.	
George D. Sherrell .....	77	William Coats .....	80
DICKSON COUNTY.		CIVIL DISTRICT NO. 22.	
Benjamin C. Waters .....	92	John McCaslin .....	90
Abraham Hogins .....	85	DISTRICT NO. 23.	
William Willie .....	90	Thomas Hickman .....	78
James Daniel .....	54	DISTRICT NO. 24.	
George Clark .....	94	Thomas Douglass .....	84
Christopher Strong .....	80	George Smith .....	80
John Nesbitt .....	84		
Robert Nesbitt, sen. ....	80	FENTRESS COUNTY.	
Simon Deloach .....	57	Lucy Chapman .....	70
William James .....	45	Andrew Shortridge .....	85
Gideon Carr .....	90	Anna Flowers .....	78
John Maybourn .....	97	Jane Evans .....	72
Isaac Walker .....	85	Bailey Owen .....	82
Gustavus Rape .....	77	George Chilton .....	88
William Tatorn .....	80	George Helm .....	89
Mary Thompson .....	71	Smith Willis .....	78
Benjamin Darrow .....	78	William Dorse .....	78

# REVOLUTIONARY AND MILITARY PENSIONERS. 127

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—MIDDLE DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.	NAMES.	AGES.
FRANKLIN COUNTY.		DISTRICT NO. 5.	
Samuel Handley.....	89	Josiah Pucket.....	91
Enoch Breedon.....	82	Alexander Anderson.....	85
Thomas Wakefield.....	76	DISTRICT NO. 9.	
Elihu Berk.....	75	Isaac Hale.....	78
Patrick McElyea.....	91	William Gibson.....	98
Richard Erwin.....	30	JACKSON COUNTY.	
William Calwell.....	78	DISTRICT NO. 1.	
Larkin Ragan.....	93	James Cayson.....	83
Ann Wilson.....	40	Richard Gordon.....	78
William Jackson.....	78	DISTRICT NO. 2.	
William Calwell.....	78	Thomas Wilkerson.....	77
Jonas Hill.....	76	DISTRICT NO. 3.	
Jacob Reynolds.....	47	Reuben Graves.....	79
Samuel Reynolds.....	84	DISTRICT NO. 4.	
GILES COUNTY.		William Carlisle.....	75
Joseph Jones.....	82	Yelvaton Neville.....	76
Nathaniel Tatum.....	79	DISTRICT NO. 5.	
Henry Goodnight.....	79	John Wood.....	92
John Jones.....	90	DISTRICT NO. 9.	
John Everly.....	74	Joseph Hawkins.....	74
John Ross.....	89	Jeremiah Brown.....	86
Thomas Williams.....	79	DISTRICT NO. 10.	
Benjamin Cheatham.....	89	David Phillips.....	85
James Tinner.....	81	Charles Harmon.....	83
Aaron Grigsby.....	85	DISTRICT NO. 11.	
John Erwin.....	85	David Lyles.....	84
Richard Jones.....	77	Daniel Ramsey.....	77
George Dodson.....	79	DISTRICT NO. 12.	
Hugh King.....	85	Michael Sayers.....	82
Elles Wood.....	87	DISTRICT NO. 13.	
John Bradberry.....	104	John Henley.....	89
James Higgins, sen.....	89	Peter Crumb.....	81
John Watkins.....	83	Joseph Jared, sen.....	80
Lester Morris.....	80	Jacob Newman.....	75
Robert Patterson.....	83	DISTRICT NO. 15.	
Samuel Baker.....	86	William Ferrel.....	83
Lawson Hobson.....	86	LINCOLN COUNTY.	
Thomas Hudson.....	78	DISTRICT NO. 1.	
Samuel Watson.....	79	Thomas Davis.....	81
HICKMAN COUNTY.		DISTRICT NO. 2.	
Elijah Mayfield.....	80	John McNott.....	105
Josiah Grimett.....	74	DISTRICT NO. 3.	
Jerdon Milum.....	90	Samuel Isaacs.....	82
John Tucker.....	87	Josiah Brandon.....	80
Richard Campbell.....	82	DISTRICT NO. 6.	
Richard Nalls.....	77	Thomas Armstrong.....	85
HUMPHREYS COUNTY.		Aaron D. Gage.....	82
DISTRICT NO. 1.		William Pamplin.....	77
John Plant.....	56	DISTRICT NO. 7.	
DISTRICT NO. 3.		William Shaw.....	82
Simon Steptoe.....	77		



## STATE OF TENNESSEE—MIDDLE DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.
DISTRICTS NOS. 10 AND 11.	
William George.....	85
David Henderson.....	49
W. C. Smith.....	82
Benjamin Rowe.....	82
Philip Koonce.....	75
DISTRICT NO. 14.	
John Gibson.....	80
DISTRICT NO. 17.	
William Beard.....	80
DISTRICT NO. 22.	
William Brown.....	70
DISTRICT NO. 23.	
John R. Vickers.....	91
Alexander Forbes, sen.....	79
Rapel Smith, sen.....	77
LAWRENCE COUNTY.	
Wilson Rogers.....	82
Palmore Kendred.....	95
Richard Robinson.....	104
Joseph Spears.....	80
John Evans.....	77
Jeremiah Bentley.....	82
James Waters, sen.....	88
William H. Redding.....	81
MARSHALL COUNTY.	
Lewis Parham.....	55
Benjamin Copeland.....	76
William Martin.....	81
John Dysart, sen.....	91
Richard Long, Sen.....	82
James Shaw.....	69
Robert Walker.....	86
James Wilson.....	86
Ezekiel Billington.....	82
James Bass.....	83
Sylvester Chunn.....	86
Robert Cowden.....	86
Frederick Fisher.....	78
Shadrach Weaver.....	74
William Dickson.....	54
Emanuel McConnell.....	84
Jacob Lawrance.....	82
Samuel Hilles.....	81
William Bingham.....	84
Elijah Alexander.....	81
Alexander Ewens.....	79
MONTGOMERY COUNTY.	
Benjamin P. Persons.....	58
Lucinda Pool.....	75
John Vick.....	84
James Fentress.....	77

NAMES.	AGES.
Alexander Frazier.....	81
*Joseph Ligon.....	85
Thomas Hackney.....	88
James Bowers.....	84
MAURY COUNTY.	
4TH DISTRICT.	
Joseph Haynes.....	89
9TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
Zachariah Butler.....	78
Jacob Biffle.....	78
10TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
Samuel Mayers.....	81
Joel Fagg.....	88
12TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
William Gordon.....	88
James Mitchell.....	74
14TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
Jacob Gilliam.....	79
15TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
James Love.....	78
17TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
Martin True.....	80
David Dobbins.....	82
Abner Johnson.....	81
20TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
Abraham Parker.....	77
22D CIVIL DISTRICT.	
Jacob W. Young.....	78
23D CIVIL DISTRICT.	
James Lockridge.....	84
James Hardison.....	81
Elisha Williams.....	80
David Long.....	82
24TH CIVIL DISTRICT.	
George Barker.....	81
OVERTON COUNTY.	
Samuel Tays.....	79
Cornelius Carmack.....	82
William Phillips, sen.....	91
Jesse Ashlock.....	84
Abraham Sevier.....	80
Henry Dillon.....	80
Benjamin Reader.....	80
Henry Hoover, sen.....	86
Joseph Taylor, sen.....	78
Smith Ferril.....	80
Andrew Swallow.....	80
David Gentry, sen.....	97
George Henderson.....	81

\*Great grandfather of J. B. Killebrew.

STATE OF TENNESSEE—MIDDLE DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES	NAMES.	AGES.
<b>RUTHERFORD COUNTY.</b>		<b>STEWART COUNTY</b>	
Cornelius Saunders.....	79	William Gregory.....	76
William Burnett.....	91	Francis Cauly.....	100
John M. Leak.....	88	Dabney Cooper.....	84
George C. Booth.....	82	Her Wakefield.....	88
John Ealter.....	81	Benjamin Jones.....	1
Joseph Bennett.....	83	Susanna Boon.....	79
John Bruce.....	45	<b>SUMNER COUNTY.</b>	
Peter Jennings.....	88	Bathl. Stovall.....	80
William Mitchell.....	75	Thomas Parrish.....	80
William Leckie.....	77	John Carney, sen.....	106
A. Miles.....	91	Reuben Pruett.....	80
John Brady.....	84	William Fortune.....	94
Samuel Rillough.....	77	James Gamblin.....	90
Joshua Ford.....	88	Hudson Thompson.....	77
James Saunders.....	77	William Beard.....	86
John Brown.....	80	William Bruce.....	77
John Stephenson.....	87	James Pond.....	75
John Barclay.....	77	John McMurtry.....	86
Jordan Williford.....	85	Joseph Jackson.....	84
Benjamin Todd.....	78	Henry Pitt.....	75
Daniel Bowman.....	82	John B. Miller.....	79
John Newman, sen.....	85	Richard Johnson.....	80
Thomas Blanton.....	78	Elijah Bayles.....	81
Stephen White.....	77	John Sloan.....	82
Joseph Newman.....	81	John Cleburne.....	82
Timothy Parker.....	81	Benjamin Haynes.....	94
George Bruce.....	81	William Morris.....	80
John Stone.....	76	John McClung.....	80
Daniel McCoy.....	89	Albert Hendricks.....	80
Nathaniel Winston.....	73	Samuel Cochram, sen.....	84
Sylvania Tucker.....	84	William May.....	85
John Clark.....	80	John McAdams.....	79
<b>ROBERTSON COUNTY.</b>		Ezekiel Marshall.....	82
John C. Coon.....	85	William Bell.....	82
Charles Gent.....	85	<b>WHITE COUNTY.</b>	
James Jones.....	88	<b>DISTRICT NO. 2.</b>	
David Jones.....	86	Patrick Hewet.....	100
Martin Walton.....	79	John White, sen.....	83
William W. Walker.....	25	Turner Lane, sen.....	78
David Henry.....	89	John H. Miller.....	77
Fendal Roland.....	80	<b>DISTRICT NO. 3.</b>	
John Zeck.....	81	Edward Helton.....	77
Charles Ellison.....	76	Thomas Hill.....	84
Ann White.....	81	Elijah Alverson.....	78
<b>SMITH COUNTY.</b>		<b>DISTRICT NO. 4.</b>	
Willis Hodges.....	93	Thomas Crawley.....	86
Philip Pope.....	78	<b>DISTRICT NO. 5.</b>	
William Denny.....	47	Burgess Clark.....	77
Isom Beasley.....	87	George Ailsworth.....	83
Elizabeth Darnes.....	79		
Ann Ford.....	67		
Robin Hayse.....	46		
Berry Gregory.....	79		

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—MIDDLE DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.
DISTRICT NO. 8.	
John Ditty.....	84
John Ellisson.....	78
DISTRICT NO. 11.	
Thomas Welch.....	91
DISTRICT NO. 12.	
Alexander Cooper.....	77
Samuel Weaver.....	78
Henry Marsh.....	75
William Bertram.....	81
Isaac Graham.....	100
John Weaver.....	78
DISTRICT NO. 13.	
Solomon Yager, sen.....	82
DISTRICT NO. 15	
Thomas Moore.....	78
Abel Pearson.....	78
Thomas Shockley.....	80
Joseph Cummings.....	78
Jesse Hopkins.....	78
Samuel Moore.....	81
WAYNE COUNTY.	
Benjamin Shaw.....	75
Richard Copeland, sen.....	81
Zachariah Goforth.....	81
Robert Cypert.....	85
Isaac Horton, sen.....	81
John Broadway.....	80
WILLIAMSON COUNTY.	
James Potts.....	81
Benjamin Ragsdale.....	82
Tapley M. Lightfoot.....	81
Isaac Ferguson.....	83
Charles Allen, sen.....	82
Joshua Pierce.....	82
Richard Vernon.....	82
Jacob Grimmer.....	84
John Secrest.....	82
William Kennedy.....	85
Zachariah Smith.....	81

NAMES.	AGES.
Robinson Ross.....	78
20TH DISTRICT.	
David Ivey.....	82
Laban Hartley.....	95
Sherrod Smith.....	79
John Hall.....	83
WILSON COUNTY.	
Samuel Shepard.....	78
Abednego Rutland.....	80
Samuel Williams.....	80
John Crunk.....	78
John W. Beashamp.....	33
John Garrison.....	82
John Gunn, sen.....	80
Robert Crisswell.....	80
Nancy Williams.....	83
George Avery.....	70
William L. Sybert.....	45
Thomas Conner.....	83
John Bonner.....	76
William Colly.....	88
Austin Colly.....	84
Susan Oakley.....	82
Moses Allen.....	86
Henry Criswell.....	80
Jonathan Tipton.....	85
Charles Blalock.....	75
William Donald.....	94
Charles Smith.....	88
William Teag.....	78

WARREN COUNTY.	
Robert Brown.....	78
Thomas Brown.....	91
William Bond.....	75
John Cunningham.....	93
Samuel Hand.....	85
Reuben Roberts, sen.....	80
Robert Carson.....	87
John Lockheart.....	83
John Kersy.....	84

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—WESTERN DISTRICT.

BENTON COUNTY.	
William Cockran.....	73
Samuel Wadkins.....	80
Thomas Petty.....	76
CARROLL COUNTY.	
Elias Miars.....	83
Thomas Seamore.....	80
William Matheny.....	96
Pleasant Henderson.....	84

John McKenzie.....	84
Frederick Miller.....	81
Matthew Sparks.....	79
Jonathan Montgomery.....	78
John Chamuers.....	88
Arthur Brown.....	78
William Whitesides.....	77
DYER COUNTY.	
John Given.....	76
Joseph Scoby.....	66

STATE OF TENNESSEE—WESTERN DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.
FAYETTE COUNTY.	
Samuel Martin.....	84
David Blalock.....	93
Mark Miller.....	75
James McKee.....	78
Benjamin Starret.....	78
John Birdsong.....	77
Andrew Pickens.....	86
James Belloat.....	80
Henry Randolph.....	84
Charles Turner.....	75
Hugh Luckey.....	77

GIBSON COUNTY.	
Thomas Frazier.....	81
Thomas May.....	78
David Hambleton.....	89
Stephen Richards.....	75
John Crisp.....	85
Beverly Williams.....	57
Thomas Morton.....	45
James Givens.....	78
Anderson Davis.....	30
Josiah Reed.....	84
Jacob Trout.....	105
James Bell.....	79

HARDIN COUNTY.	
1ST DISTRICT.	
William Lingo.....	44
Allegany McGuire.....	78
2D DISTRICT.	
Ezekiel Fortner.....	79
5TH DISTRICT.	
John Throp.....	63
7TH DISTRICT.	
George Ross.....	79
8TH DISTRICT.	
Stephen Austin.....	82
John Perkins.....	77
9TH DISTRICT.	
Shadrach Nolen.....	89
10TH DISTRICT.	
Richard Strame.....	77
12TH DISTRICT.	
Samuel McFerren.....	79

HARDIMAN COUNTY.	
Sames Vales.....	82
Richard Glasgow.....	87
Jeremiah Doxey.....	87
John Holiday.....	78
Elijah Warren.....	87

NAMES.	AGES.
HENDERSON COUNTY.	
Joseph Purviance.....	78
Nathan Green.....	80
Archibald McCorcle.....	81
John Foster.....	86
Daniel Murphy.....	78
John Andrews.....	52

HAYWOOD COUNTY.	
Westword A. Jones.....	64
John Maxwell.....	76
Hemdon Hamilton.....	82
John Moore.....	77

HENRY COUNTY.	
Elias Bowden.....	77
Daniel Rogers.....	72
Alexander Craig.....	85
Polly Simmons.....	74
Susanna Palmer.....	77
Matthew Alexander.....	85
William Powel.....	74
Joseph Weatherington.....	82
Matthew Myrick.....	88
James Haynes.....	79
Martin Neace, sen.....	82
William Bunton.....	73
Robert Ramsey.....	82
Britton George.....	102

LAUDERDALE COUNTY.	
James Barefield.....	58
Shadrach Elkins.....	79

MCNAIRY COUNTY.	
Pugh Cannon.....	80
Jovan Cox.....	79
Alexander N. McColler, sen.....	81
William Barns.....	75
Robert Moore.....	78
James Roland.....	87
John Stewart.....	83
Daniel Hill.....	83
Robert Rankin.....	83
Allen Sweat.....	81

MADISON COUNTY.	
Daniel Madding.....	45
Ann Fenner.....	73
David Eckleburger.....	43
Jonas Clark, sen.....	82
Bradley Medlin.....	80

OBION COUNTY.	
Thomas Parker.....	85

## STATE OF TENNESSEE—WESTERN DISTRICT.

NAMES.	AGES.	NAMES.	AGES.
PERRY COUNTY.		TIPTON COUNTY.	
Philip Rushing.....	78	Colonel Thomas Good.....	81
Bartholomew Murphey.....	81	William McFerrin.....	85
John Tolly.....	78	Vincent Voss.....	84
William Higginbottom.....	79	Henry Yarbrough, sen.....	84
James Kelly.....	81		
John Eply.....	78	WEAKLEY COUNTY.	
Edward Box.....	68	John Chester.....	88
William Gibson.....	92	Presley Thonton.....	86
Richard Rushing.....	92		
John Bregins.....	67		
SHELBY COUNTY.			
A. B. Shannon.....	48		
William Hope.....	79		

## ORIGINAL PORTRAITS OF WASHINGTON.

The noble countenance and commanding figure of Washington, are well preserved in portraiture. He was in fact, a martyr to the portrait painters. The artists waylaid him. They followed him about. They visited him at Mount Vernon, and quartered upon his hospitality for weeks at a time. They came over from Europe to paint him. They sketched him from the church galleries, when he attended religious services, after the snap-shot methods of the modern kodak. Even towns petitioned for his picture.

To save time he occasionally gave a sitting to three or four artists at once. Gilbert Stuart reports that he called upon the President one day, hoping to be fortunate enough to get a sitting, and was disgusted to find that Charles Wilson Peale, and his brother, and his two sons, were all diligently at work with pencil and brush, upon various sections of the old hero. Meeting Mrs. Washington at the time, Stuart told her, that her husband was in great danger, that they were "just *peeling* him."

Even the miniature painters beset him, and sometimes made his life a burden. The distinguished French sculptor, Houdon, crossed the Atlantic to take a plaster cast of his head, face and body, and to measure him with scientific exactness, in preparation for the fine statue erected at Richmond, Virginia.

The old General has sometimes been charged with having a high temper, but his experience with the artists as recorded in his diary, from time to time, proves beyond all controversy, that he must have been both patient and amiable.

His trials are amusingly reported in a letter he wrote in 1785, to his friend Francis Hopkinson, who had requested a sitting for an artist friend.

"I am so hackneyed," he writes, "to the touches of the painter's pencil, that I am now altogether at their beck and sit like patience on a monument, whilst they are delineating the lines of my face. It is proof among many others of what habit and custom may effect. At first, I was as impatient at the request, and as restive under the operation as a colt is of the saddle. The next time, I submitted very reluctantly, but with less flouncing. Now, no dray horse moves more readily to the thill, than I to the painter's chair."

Washington's carefully kept diary contains a surprising number of entries, stating the days and hours he sat for his pictures. Sometimes they continued through several successive days, with sittings occasionally lasting as long as three hours. As a public man, full of duties and responsibilities, his patience must have been sorely taxed by such inroads upon his time.

Washington's generosity and even extravagance as to his portraits, and miniatures, are also well authenticated; the entries in his diary indicating that he paid the artists most liberally for the many pictures he had painted for his family and friends.

Charles Wilson Peale, of Philadelphia, painted some

fourteen original portraits of Washington, many more than any other artist. Peale was a remarkable and versatile genius. He went to England to study his profession under Benjamin West. He was a soldier-artist. As captain of a gallant company, he accompanied Washington upon the campaigns of the Revolution. One of his finest portraits of the General was painted at Valley Forge in 1778, amid the privations of camp life. In a chronicle of the time, one of his comrades reports that "he painted and fit, and fit and painted."

A well-known incident of the campaign in New Jersey illustrates Washington's generous nature. During the battle of Princeton a ball from a cannon on the American side pierced old Nassau Hall of Princeton College, and destroyed a fine portrait of King George the Second, hanging on the wall. When Washington heard of the mishap he promptly sent the trustees fifty guineas to pay for the injury, a very liberal and considerable sum for an oil portrait at that early day.

The trustees of the college soon afterwards paid the money to the soldier artist Peale for a portrait of Washington, to hang in Nassau Hall in the place of the English King's. It proved to be one of Peale's finest paintings.

A very excellent and well preserved original portrait of Washington by Charles Wilson Peale is illustrated in this number of the AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE in the frontispiece. The illustration, however, gives rather an indifferent and somber impression of the original oil portrait, which is rich in coloring and is one of Peale's most artistic works.

In the elaborate work entitled "Original Portraits of Washington" by Miss Johnson, published by Osgood and Company in 1882, the author gives a brief history of the picture as follows: "The only bust portrait of Washington of cabinet-size from the hand of Charles Wilson Peale, once belonged to Captain Williams of the Topo-

graphical Bureau, who married Miss Peter, a great-granddaughter of Mrs. Washington. This portrait in 1832 became the property of Judge Thruston, of Kentucky, and descended to his daughter, the late Mrs. Janette Thruston Powell. It is very brilliant in tone, and readily identified as a work of Peale, though there was a tradition attributing it to Gilbert Stuart. It is now in the possession of Admiral L. M. Powell, of Washington City."

By the will of Admiral Powell, the picture was left to his nephew, the writer, who prizes it most highly. It is probably the only original portrait of Washington in Tennessee.

The writer is also the fortunate possessor of a beautiful miniature of Washington painted upon ivory, an antique of the revolutionary period. Washington appears in the miniature, in his brilliant military costume as Colonel of the Virginia Militia, a blue coat with bright scarlet facings, as he was first painted by Charles Wilson Peale, at forty years of age, in 1772, a few years before the Revolution.

Strange to report, the miniature was discovered, and purchased in Dresden, Germany, a few years ago.

Occasionally fine pictures of our American heroes are found abroad. Some original portraits of Washington are still in London. Louis Philippe of France, commissioned our distinguished American artist Healy, to paint the portrait of Gen. Andrew Jackson for him. It now hangs in the palace at Versailles. The finest medallion of Jackson I have ever seen, I discovered in the Swedish exhibit at the Chicago Exposition, and purchased for my collection of historic medals. In artistic merit and force of expression, it surpasses any of the medals issued by the United States government in Jackson's honor.

Rembrandt Peale, son of Charles Wilson, painted a number of admirable portraits of Washington. His finest picture was purchased by the government, and now



hangs in the national capitol. His admiration for the General became almost idolatry, and in his extreme anxiety to place Washington's noble countenance and expression upon canvass, in a face that satisfied his own lofty conception, he became almost crazed with the fever of his excitement and ambition.

Col. John Trumbull, an artist of distinction, an officer of the Revolution and aide to Washington, also painted several fine portraits of the General, and of military groups in which he was the conspicuous figure. His military service and intimacy with Washington gave him special advantages. Long after the war when at Philadelphia, to enable Colonel Trumbull to represent him correctly in his large painting "The Capture of the Hessians," Washington is reported to have arrayed himself in his long unused continental uniform, mounted a spirited horse, and pranced about the street, creating quite a sensation in the quiet city of brotherly love.

To Gilbert Stuart, however, must be accredited the honor of painting the masterpiece of Washington portraits. No other picture quite satisfies our lofty ideal of what the nobleness of Washington's countenance and expression must have been. It is full of dignity, benevolence, repose and strength. In that single work, the genius of the artist won the lasting gratitude of posterity. Stuart was pre-eminent. No other painter of his time, equalled him in vividness of coloring, and delicacy of finish.

The portrait was painted upon an express commission from Mrs. Washington, but after the face and head were finished, Stuart was so enraptured with it, and with his success, that he left the back-ground unfinished and managed by various excuses to retain it in his possession, until he had copied or attempted to copy, the nobility and serenity of its expression into more than a score of duplicate portraits.

In fact, Washington never received the original picture, but long afterwards Stuart sent him a good copy,

and the fine companion picture of Mrs. Washington that hung in the mansion at Mount Vernon.

I remember well my surprise and delight on seeing Stuart's glorious portrait for the first time at the Athenæum in Boston. It was a revelation. It inspired even a new and more exalted conception of the greatness of Washington's character. After seeing that face, no other copy in oil or paint, or different presentation of it quite comes up to one's ideal. No wonder that all the artists of his day, wished to associate their art and names with Washington's fame and greatness. He was a great subject, the center and chief of a galaxy of great men, at a great time—the heroic period of our history.

In this brief outline, it would not be possible to even suggest the names of the score and more of artists, who attempted to place upon canvass the portrait of our illustrious hero. Some of them, who were complimented by Washington with sittings, made unhappy failures. We even fail to recognize the likenesses in some portraits. If we may judge from the many engravings and photographs we see, the portrait painted by Wertmuller, a German artist, presents one of the best, truest impressions of Washington's fine face.

The exquisitely executed miniatures of Archibald Robertson should not be forgotten. One of them descended to his grand-daughter, the wife of Charles W. Darling of Utica, N. Y., the well-known author and writer of valuable historical papers.

The family mansion at Mount Vernon was originally well stored with portraits, miniatures, silhouettes, busts, engravings and other souvenirs of Washington. They descended to various relatives and branches of the family. George Washington Parke Custis, the grand-son of Mrs. Washington and adopted son of the General, probably carried the greater part of them over to the fine old Custis homestead, Arlington House.

I had the good fortune when in Virginia, soon after I

left college, to receive an invitation to spend the day at Arlington, then in the glory of its ante-bellum stateliness, and hospitality. Ideal Southern life was probably nowhere better illustrated than in this grand old time Custis-Lee mansion, before the desolation of war cast its deep shadows upon it. Robert E. Lee, then a Lieutenant-Colonel in the regular army, sat opposite me at the dinner-table. I remember well his handsome face, his dignified bearing, and kindly manner. How little I dreamed of the great events the future had in store for him, or of the very serious trouble that peaceful looking gentleman had in store for "us Yankees"!

One feature of the old mansion that I recollect more vividly than any thing else, excepting its stately architecture, was the number of Washington's portraits upon the walls. They seemed to hang everywhere, in the great halls, the parlor, the dining-room, in every niche and corner visible. Old Mr. Custis noticing my interest in them, seemed to take pleasure in showing them to me, and in narrating their history and incidents of Washington's life. He was very entertaining. He seemed indeed, a most interesting link between the far off past and the present. I do not know what became of this large collection of Washington's portraits. I was not competent to judge of the merits of the pictures, but the recollection of having had them shown and described to me by General Washington's adopted son, has always stimulated my interest in these historic portraits.

G. P. THRUSTON.

## THE BEGINNINGS OF MAURY COUNTY.

---

In 1805, Nicholas T. Perkins was one of the Representatives of Williamson County in the Legislature.

Williamson County was erected into a separate county in 1799 (not 1779, as stated on page 308, October number, 1897, of this magazine), and of course embraced a large area. In 1807, this Nicholas T. Perkins was a State Senator from Williamson County. He was not the captor of Aaron Burr, as some have erroneously supposed. Among the multitudinous Nicholas Perkinses in Williamson County, the captor of Burr was Nicholas Perkins born March 14, 1779; died Jan. 6, 1848, called "Bigby" Nicholas to distinguish him. He was son of Nicholas Perkins and of his wife Leah Pryor. Nicholas Tate Perkins was a cousin of "Bigby" Nicholas. He, Nicholas Tate Perkins, was called Colonel Perkins and his commission as Major in 1805 is record evidence of that rank. I do not know if he was really a colonel, but I think he was.

The Roberts-Jackson correspondence of the Creek War, 1813-14, shows he was colonel of the "first regiment of mounted gunmen."

Colonel Perkins was born 1767; in 1790, he married Anne Perkins, his cousin, a sister of "Bigby" Nicholas, the captor of Burr, who was also known as Major Perkins. It is Col. Nicholas Tate Perkins to whom reference is made herein.

The Indian title to what is now Maury County was extinguished by a treaty with the Cherokees in October of 1805—their north boundary line being left at Duck River; (Hildreth, History United States, Vol. 2, Second Series, page 557). In 1806, the Cherokees gave up all

claims north and east of the Elk River, (same work, same volume, pages 650-651, and "Errata," Vol. 3.) Straggling white settlers had possibly come into this section, possibly—although not probably, as early as 1805—says McCallum's MS. History of Giles County. Settlements began in 1807. McCallum's history, chapter 2, as it appears partially in print in the October, 1897, number of this magazine, goes into details about these treaties. In July, 1805, the Chickasaws ceded their rights to all lands north of Duck River, but did not cede all their claims to territory embraced in what is now west and southwest Giles County till 1816. (See pages 306 and 307, October number, 1897, same magazine, for details.)

Among the papers left by Nicholas T. Perkins and recently found among the effects of his grand-daughter, Mrs. Charlesanna H. Carter, who died August 6, 1897, at Pulaski, Tenn., are four petitions from "the undersigned Citizens of Duck River"—constituting a memorial to the Assembly to erect a new county, dated August 22, 1807. This was most likely the first effort at organized government in this section. Three of these papers are duplicates and in the same handwriting.

---

#### THE PETITIONS AND SIGNERS.

"We whose names are undersigned being Citizens of Duck River, Represent that our bounds and number of inhabitants, respectfully intitle us and our Situation requires and urges us that we Petition the Genl Assembly of the State of Tennessee, and expect that their Political Wisdom and Justice will grant us a Seperate new County, to be bounded on the West by the great road leading from Nashville to Natchez, on the East by a line run due South from a point on the South boundary line of the Orriginal County of Williamson, so as to Pass a point twenty-eight miles due East of John Gordons Ferry (on duck River) on the North as near the Orriginal South

boundary line of Williamson County as practicable and on the South by a line to be extended East and West at a proper distance to contain the constitutional limits of a County in order that we may enjoy the advantages arising from a Permanent seat of Justice."

(Signed) WILLIAM CRAIG.  
ISAAC ROBERTS.

NOTE.—This was Brig.-Gen. Isaac Roberts of the Tennessee militia. He was the chairman of the first county court of Maury County, Dec. 21, 1807. (See page 1, Order Book 1, at Columbia.) His "stock mark" was "crop off the left ear," and the brand "30." (See page 2, same records.)

There are scores of interesting references to him in these old Maury County records.

On Monday, May 20, 1816, Mary Roberts qualifies as the executrix of the nuncupative will of Isaac Roberts, bond \$30,000. See County Court Record Book "C." At Columbia. (Not paged.)

General Roberts was probably born a Pennsylvanian, but of this I am not positive.

He was born March 1, 1764, and died Feb. 19, 1816. Largely owing to his death so early in the State's history and to his opposition to what Goldwin Smith calls "the tyrannous egotism of Andrew Jackson," scant justice has been done the memory of this pioneer. His grave is at his old settlement, three miles north by east from Columbia, Tenn., on the Nashville pike.

Some of his old commissions and letters are now in the possession of his grand-daughter, Mrs. Joseph H. Fussell of Columbia, Tenn.

The oldest I have seen is dated Nov. 14, 1789, from Gov. Johnston of North Carolina, and appoints "Isaac Roberts, Esquire" to be "First Major of the Davidson Regiment of militia."

The next commission is dated Dec. 15, 1790, by Governor Blount, the territorial governor, and appoints him "First Major of the Regiment of Militia of Davidson County."

This appointment also appears from page 231, this

magazine for July, 1897, Governor Blount's Journal there published.

On June 10, 1791, he was appointed by Governor Blount "Lieutenant-Colonel of Davidson County in the place of Elijah Robertson promoted." (For this, see page 238, July Magazine, 1897, Governor Blount's Journal.)

The next commission is Oct. 27, 1792, to be a Lieutenant-Colonel Commandant of said Regiment. (See same in Governor Blount's Journal, page 247, July, 1897, this magazine.)

On Oct. 4, 1796, this appointment was confirmed for the new State by Gov. John Sevier's commission appointing him to same rank.

On Sept. 20, 1804, Governor Sevier commissioned him Brigadier General of the Fifth Brigade of Tennessee. So he had held important military trusts under North Carolina, the Territory and the State.

His differences with Jackson in the Creek campaign, his siding with the troops in their construction of the terms of their service, his court-martial—all are parts of the history of the Creek War.

I may write of them later.

The next signers:

ROBERT HILL.

JAMES LOVE, (or Long?)

JACOB LINDSEY.

RICHARDS BONDS.

Then comes a name I can't decipher.

JOHN ANDERSON.

ELKER TAYLOR.

ISAAC BILLS.

EDWARD LINDSEY.

(See below.)

JOS. LEMASTER.

NOTE.—A Huguenot name—now exists in Giles County.

JOHN LINDSEY.

(See below.)

GEORGE BRECKINRIDGE.

NOTE.—Name appears often in old deeds in Giles and Maury.

WILLIAM LINDSEY.

(I think it is William.)

JOHN LINDSEY, JR.

ROBERT BOYD.

BRYAN W. NEWLIN, (or Nowlin?)

NOTE.—Afterwards a Giles County name, now extinct here.

JABUS NEWLIN, (or Nowlin?)      WILLIAM KILCREASE.

NOTE.—Name now extinct.

On Thursday, Dec. 22, 1808, he was appointed by Maury County court to take a list of the taxables "from the Chickasaw line to Bedford County and from Elk Ridge to the Georgia line." (Page 60, Maury County Court Records.)

What the "Chickasaw line" was can be seen by reference to page 306, October number, 1897, of this magazine.

In July, 1805, the Chickasaws granted their claims to everything north of Duck River and east of the line there described, commencing at the grave of Meriwether Lewis in Lewis County, and running east, southeast to Tennessee River at Ditto's Landing beyond the present Huntsville, Ala.

"Elk Ridge" is the watershed between tributaries of Duck and Elk rivers and the line of Giles and Maury Counties.

So his territory was nearly all of the present Giles County.

At the March term he reported, I think. (See entry, page 63, March 20th, 1809.)

Then follows:

SIMPSON LEE.	WM. SMITH.
JOHN HOGARD.	JOHN HINDS, (or Hinch?)
JOHN KILCREASE.	ARCHABLE HOUSTON.
THOMAS WELLS.	GEORGE WATTERS.
THOMAS AYDELOTT.	ROBERT BAXTER, (or Barton?)
JOHN MILROY.	JAMES SISSON.
HENRY LEVISTON.	CHARLES COTTEN.
JOEL CURTIS.	JOSEPH WILSON.
SAMUEL WELLS.	JOSEPH DOIL.
JOSEPH LONG.	DAVID BURCHAN.
DANIEL CLIFF, (or Cliff? can't tell.)	JOHN DAVIS.
ABNER HARELSON.	WILLIAM ROSS.
JOHN ANDERSON.	ALLEN PREWITT.
WILLIAM MCGEE.	WILLIAM HOUSTON.
BENJAMIN WILLIAMS.	JOHN SISON.
	HENRY GOODNIGHT, JR.



GEORGE PAINE, (Raine or Rains? THOMAS MERCER.

can't tell.)

JOHN ROSS.

ELIJAH HUNTER.

ANDREW RILEY.

ALEX. WILKINS.

NATH'EL WILSON.

WILLIAM HARRALSON.

JOEL B——

JOS. JOHNSTON.

(Can't make this name out.)

WILLIAM COUGHARN.

RICHARD HARRIS.

LAZER ANDRESS, (or Andrews?) JESSEE TAIT.

WILLIAM HUMPHRIES.

JOHN PICKENS.

EBENEZER SMITH.

WILLIAM HARRISON.

DAVID LOGAN.

CHARLES DEVER.

JOHN HOUSTON, SR.

RANDOLPH GIBSON.

RICH'D COCKE.

JOHN HARRIS.

JAMES STEELE.

JOHN WILSON,

JOHN JACKS.

(or Wilson or Wisner?)

GEORGE ROSS.

GEORGE CONDER.

JAMES McNIEC.

JACOB (?) GIBSON.

JOHN GOODNIGHT.

JAMES LEATH.

JOHN HOUSTON, JR.

SAM'L LONG.

DAVID ORTON.

JAMES MILLER.

JONATHAN PICKENS.

PETER RAGSDALE.

JAMES HUTCHISON.

(Possibly ancestor of the recent sheriff of Maury County and ex-warden of the State prison.)

JAMES CAMPBELL.

JAS. STEPHENSON.

THOS. RAGSDALE (?)

ISAAC LANGSTON.

JOS. WHITESITT.

This first petition is endorsed "General Roberts," and was probably sent in by him.

Two of the other petitions are practically duplicates of the first, a few verbal differences, and are in the same handwriting.

They are signed:

JACOB WILLIAMS.

WILLIAM JONES.

S. POLK.

JAMES MONTGOMERY.

AARON CUNNINGHAM.

JOHN GWIN.

WILLIAM PETIGAUL (?)

THOS. ALLEN.

JOHN JONES.

JOHN GOFF.

NOTE.—Probably grandfather of Col. John Goff Ballentine, of Pulaski.

ROBERT CARR.

GEORGE DAVIDSON.

WM. NEILL.

McCAMPBELL, (or Wm. Campbell?)

SAMUEL B. FARISS.

JAMES HUEY.

JOHN McKNIGHT.

ROBERT McDANIEL.

JOHN McDANIEL.

REUBEN WISSEKER (?)

MATTHEW CUNNINGHAM.

TRUMAN FRY. (or Trueman Frey?) Name appears later in Giles County records.

WILLIAM MORRIS.

JOHN RAY (?)

WM. POLK.

NOTE.—This was Col. William Polk of the Revolution, father of the late George W. Polk, and Andrew J. Polk, of Maury County; I recognize the writing.

WM. BOYKIN.

(In Colonel Polk's hand.)

ROBERT CAMPBELL.

GREENHAM DODSON.

JOHN F. COUSEN.

JOHN POLK.

ELIJAH BOYD.

THOS. McNEAL.

JOHN KENNEDY.

SAM'L CHAMBERS.

WILLIS DODSON.

HENRY BAUGUSS.

ROBERT HAM (?)

NOTE.—This connection live around Spring Hill and Thompson Station now.

WM. BOYKIN.

NOTE.—Seems to be in Colonel Polk's handwriting again.

JOHN HOOD, (or Wood?)

JOSEPH RHODES.

HIGHTOWER DODSON.

JOSEPH S. JONES.

JOEL PHILLIPS.

LEMUEL WHITE.

ELISHA DODSON.

THOMAS REED.

WM. ALLEN.

ISAACH RHODES.

SAMUEL GRIGG.

SOLOMON TUTTEL.

BRYAN BAUGUS (?)

ISAAC ADARE.

JAMES SEGRIST.

JOHN GREGORY.

DAVID FARISS.

LOKLEY (?) SELF.

GEORGE DOSON, (or Dodson?)

LORD BOYD.

STEPHEN COLLINS.

DANIEL DOUGLASS.

JOHN GEMMESON (?)

REUBEN PARKS.

SAMUEL GEMESON (?)

WM. TAILOR.

JOHN DOUGLASS.

THOS. DODSON.

DAVID DOUGLASS.

JOSHUA SALLANCE,

MARTIN HARDIN.

(Gallance or Ballance?)

BURGESS HARDIN.

JOSEPH JONES.

MARK HARDIN.

WILLIAM RUSH.

THOS. H. HARDIN.

JOHN RUSH.

MARTIN HARDIN, JR.

DAVID RANKIN.

FRANCIS ROSE.

MARY RANKIN.

BENJAMIN CUTBIRTH.

NATHANIEL BALLANCE.

ERASMUS TRACY.

JOHN W. BEASLEY.

SHEROD WILLIAMS.

(Giles County name.)

JOSEPH MOORE.

NATHANIEL SIMMONS,

JAMES RANKINS.

(or Limmons?)

JOSIAH GOFORTH.

WILLIAM CALDWELL.

HUGH MORRIS.

AMOS CALDWELL.

DAVID RANKIN.

JOHN MONTGOMERY.

JAMES WITHERO.

JOHN MONTGOMERY, SR.

WILLIAM COLE.

GEORGE W (?) McGAUGHEY.

JESSEE JOB.  
 DANIEL EVANS.  
 WILLIAM ARMSTRONG.  
 JOHN ARMSTRONG.

JAMES McCAIN.  
 WM. CRAWFORD.  
 JOHN DONOHUE.

The last of these duplicates has the following signers:

ISHAM JOHNSON.

JOSHUA WILLIAMS.  
 EPHRAIM MACLEAN, SR.  
 EPHRAIM MACLEAN, JR.  
 JOHNATHAN KING.  
 WILLIAM McLEAN.  
 JAMES McLEAN.  
 SPENCER GRIFFIN.  
 RICHARD CHURCHWELL.  
 JOSEPH BRITTAIN.

ABRAHAM COLE, (or Cale?)  
 THOMAS STALLINGS.  
 HENRY JAMESON.  
 JOSEPH AYRES.  
 JESSE HAYS.  
 GEORGE HAYS.

MATTHEW JOHNSTON.

(Long well-known settler in Giles County.)

EPHRAIM CHURCHWELL.  
 WILLIAM CHURCHWELL, SR.  
 WILLIAM CHURCHWELL, JR.  
 SAMUEL COUGHRON.  
 MATHIAS SMITH.  
 WILLIAM TALLEY, (or Folley?)  
 HARRISON BLACKGRAVE.  
 JAMES WILSBY, (or Welsh?)  
 SAM'L H. WILLIAMS.

(Afterwards high sheriff of Maury County.)

JONATHAN HAYES.  
 ALEXANDER GILLESPIE.  
 SAM'L McLANE.  
 CHARLES McLANE.  
 HUGH READ.  
 JOSEPH BROWN.

NOTE:—This was undoubtedly Col. Joseph Brown of pioneer fame, whose "Narrative" is set out in Ramsey's "Annals of Tennessee."

His daughter Ann married John Lindsey Jr., set out above, and yet survives, (a veritable daughter of the Revolution, universally esteemed) at her home on Egnew's Creek, district 18th of Giles County, some seven miles west of Pulaski. Colonel Brown became a Cumberland Presbyterian preacher, and is buried at old "Mount Moriah" churchyard, four miles west of Pulaski.

Rev. George W. Mitchell of Pulaski has had in preparation a "Life" of Colonel Brown. He was the first Ranger of Maury County. (Order book one, page 2, at Columbia, Dec. 21, 1807.) His cattle mark as recorded on page six of same minute book is, "crop, hole and under bit in left ear; brand, "J. B."

Colonel Brown was always called Colonel, but I do not know if he really held this rank.

DAVID TAIDE, (or Tarde?)  
 BENJAMIN THOMAS.

ADDAM HUDSON.  
 JOSEPH B. PORTER.

(First county court clerk in Columbia.)

The next Petition is worded somewhat differently, and "sheweth that those whose names are hereto subscribed are citizens of the State of Tennessee that live south of Duck on a neck of land lying east of the Natche road and west of the eastern boundary line of dickson so as to be included with in dixon County. the undersigned request the legislature to examine a map of the County

and they will see how inconvenient for them to continue a part of Dixon County as they live on an arm of the County fifty or sixty miles from the center of it.

the undersigned therefore pray if a new county is laid off south of Williamson—the dividing ridge between Duck and Harpath may be made the boundary on the north side of the new County and the present Natche road Crossing at Gordon's ferry be made the western boundary of it so as to include the undersigned in the County opposite to williamson."

"Sined august the 22<sup>d</sup> 1807."

JAMES FARRISS.  
ISAAC FERIS, (or Faris?)  
WILLIAM CAMPBLE.  
JAMES LUSK.  
JAMES BELL.  
JOSEPH PAYTON.  
JOHN BURNS.  
SAMUEL WHITESIDE.  
JAMES MAYFIELD.  
WILLIAM SHARP.  
WM. RHOADES.  
JAMES RHOADES.  
WM. DUNTON.  
WILLIAM ALEXANDER.  
STINSON BELL.  
WILLIAM ERWIN, (or Ewin?)  
JAS IVEY.  
THOMAS WILLIAMS.  
STOLING (?) BELL.  
SAMUEL W. LOVE, (or Long?)  
  
JOS. JONES.  
STEPHEN JONES.  
EZEKIEL SMITH.

THOMAS WHITESIDE (?)  
BENJAMIN DENTON.  
JOHN FARRISS.  
DAVID DOBENS.  
THOMAS BELL.  
ROBERT LUSK.  
ROBERT WHITESIDE.  
JAMES LOVE.  
JOHN HARRIS, (or Hanniss?)  
JOHN LINDSEY.  
EDWARD McCAFFERTY.  
(Name in Giles County now, in 18th district.)  
CHARLES BURNES.  
DAVID DOBINS.  
JOHN TUMLINSON.  
MILES BURNS.  
JOSHUA RENFROW.  
ROBERT H. EAKINS.  
ROBERT BROWN.  
(The only one who signs with mark in the entire list.)  
JONATH. ISOM.  
(Isom's store a postoffice in Maury County now.)  
THOMAS SMITH.  
JAMES RENFROW.  
SQUARES CHOAT. 44.

---

"We the annexed subscribers admit this petition and are inhabitants of the North Side of duck River."

EPH'M MACLEAN JR.  
EPH'M MACLEAN SR.  
ROBERT HILL.

JOSHUA WILLIAMS.  
JOHN SCOTT.  
WILLIAM McLEAN.

JAMES McLEAN.  
 ALEX. GILLESPIE.  
 ROBERT SELLERS.  
 JOHN BOOKER.  
 SAMUEL CRAWFORD.  
 JAMES WELSH.  
 GEORGE WELSH.  
 LORD SELLERS. C. P.  
 JEDIAH PECK, (or Peek?)  
 J. A. JOHNSON.  
 MARTHA JOHNSON.  
 GEORGE HOGE.  
 SPENCER GRIFFIN.  
 ANDREW LEWIS.  
 JOSEPH BRITTAIN.  
 DAN'L (?) FIELDS.  
 ISAAC SELLARS.  
 JAMES SELLARS.  
 ISHAM JOHNSON.  
 THOMAS STALLINGS.  
 RICHARD CHURCHWELL.  
 JAMES ISOM.  
 JOSEPH CHOATE.  
 JOHN HARRELSON.  
 GEORGE ISOM.  
 JAMES JOHNSON.  
 ISAAC HOLLIS.

JOSEPH AYERS, (or Agnes?)  
 WILLIAM TOLLEY.  
 GEORGE HAYS.  
 JONATHAN KING.  
 WILLIAM CHURCHWELL.  
 SAMUEL COUGHORN.  
 JOHN ROBINSON.  
 METHIAS SMITH.  
 JOHN CHAMBERS.  
 • JOHN EAKIN.  
 WM. EAKIN.  
 SAMUEL EAKIN.  
 JOHN CARR.  
 WILLIAM FARIS (?)  
 WILLIAM HARRISON?  
 JOHN JOHNSTONE.  
 ROBERT JOHNSTON.  
 AND'W KENNEDY.  
 SESINTH (?) ROCH.  
 GRIFFITH CATHEY.  
 (Cathey's Creek named for him, I presume  
 —Maury County.)  
 WM. DEVER.  
 DAVID LOGAN.  
 JAMES HAY, (or May?)  
 JNO. (or Jna.) ANDERSON.  
 EZEKIEL HARRELSON.  
 ABNER HARRELSON.

---

#### WHAT THE ACTS AND JOURNALS SHOW.

The Senate Journal for 1807, shows on pages 100 and 101, Thursday, Oct. 29th and Friday 30th, 1807, that Mr. Perkins procured the passage through the Senate of his bill to reduce Williamson County to its constitutional limits. It was once proposed to call the town "Murray" too, (page 126,) but "Columbia" prevailed, Nov. 13, 1807. On this same day, Nov. 13, 1807, the bill passed the House. The Senate concurred in some House amendments and sent Mr. Perkins and Mr. Russell to see amendments made, Friday, Nov. 13, 1807. (House Journal, page 115.)

On page 109, of House Journal, Wednesday, Nov. 11, 1807, "Received from the Senate a petition of sundry citi-

zens of Williamson County on the waters of Duck River, praying that they have a new county;" referred to committee on propositions and grievances.

November 16, 1807, the prayer of the petitioners was granted by the passage of an act, entitled "An Act to reduce Williamson County to constitutional limits and to form a new county to the South and West of the same." (Acts, 1807, Chapter 94.) This act prescribes the boundaries of the new county and designates it by the name of "Maury;" appoints Joshua Williams, William Fryerson, Isaac Roberts, John Lindsey, and Joseph Brown as commissioners to "fix on a place the most convenient on, or near Duck River as the nature of the case will admit of"—to lay off a town by the name of Columbia, "neither of which streets shall be less than one hundred feet wide, reserving two acres as near the centre as may be, on which the court house, prison and stocks shall be erected." The Act contains provisions for the sale of lots; for taxes, bonds and security of the commissioners, accounts; the court of pleas and quarter sessions, the first court to be held "at the house where Joseph Brown now lives;" elections, etc. It also provides that Maury County shall be a part of Mero District; that its militia shall constitute the twenty seventh regiment; and appoints James Gideon to run and mark the boundary line, to be paid \$2.00 per day, with power to appoint two chain-carriers and one marker at \$1.00 each, per day, the expenses to be paid "in equal proportions by said counties of Williamson and Maury."

The Act concludes, as follows:

"Sec. 16. *Be it enacted*, That this act shall be in force from and after the fifteenth day of December next." (1807.) \*

On May 30, 1808, John White of Williamson County

---

\*NOTE:—Only the last four met for organization, see Order Book at Columbia. The tradition is that Commissioner Williams insisted on locating the town on the north side of Duck River and when his associates persisted in placing it on the south side he retired in disgust!

conveys them one hundred and fifty acres on the South Fork of Duck River for that purpose. (Deed Book "A," page 55, Columbia.)

William Frierson, Isaac Roberts, John Spencer, John Lindsay, Joshua Williams, John Miller, James Love, William Dooley, Lemuel Prewitt, were the first justices of the Peace. (See Legislative Journals, 1807.)

On Dec. 21, 1807, these met at the house of Joseph Brown "the place appointed for holding the courts" and organized the new county. Isaac Roberts, chairman of the court, Joseph B. Porter, clerk, John Spencer, sheriff.

\*The next day (Tuesday) Wm. W. Thompson was chosen register, Edmund Harris, coroner, Joseph Brown, ranger, Benjamin Thomas, trustee, Peter R. Booker, county solicitor. (See Order Book "A," pages 1, 3, County Court Records, Columbia.)

Examination into the County Court records and deed books at both Franklin, Tenn., and Columbia, Tenn., would add much information that would be interesting, of all these pioneers. The county court records always repay research.

FLOURNOY RIVERS.

Pulaski, Tenn.

---

\*NOTE:—Various orders recite the creative act as of Nov. 24, 1807, see Records at Columbia.

## A PROCLAMATION BY WILLIAM G. BROWNLOW, GOVERNOR OF TENNESSEE .

---

[The following characteristic fulmination of the "*eccentric parson*," is copied from the original in his own handwriting, on file in the archives of the Tennessee Historical Society. The characterization of Hon. Isham G. Harris, the Tennessee Statesman, is ludicrous, but serves to illustrate the "Parson's" style.]

### \$5,000 REWARD.

The Legislature of Tennessee now in session, having adopted the following proceedings in both Houses with absolute unanimity, therefore I, WILLIAM G. BROWNLOW, Governor of Tennessee, do issue this my Proclamation, and offer a reward of FIVE THOUSAND DOLLARS for the apprehension and delivery to me at Nashville, of the fugitive ISHAM G. HARRIS.

"Whereas, Treason is the highest crime known to the laws of the land, and no one man is presumed to understand the pure meaning of the term better than Governors of States and certainly no one should be held to a more strict account for the commission of the crime of treason; and whereas,

The State of Tennessee before the rebellion enjoyed a high social, moral and political position and bore the well earned reputation of the Volunteer State; and whereas, by the treason of one Isham G. Harris, Ex-Governor of Tennessee, the State has lost millions of dollars and thousands of her young men who have been killed in battle and died of disease, while thousands of the middle aged and old men have been murdered or imprisoned and defenceless women & children driven from the State heart broken & penniless; and whereas, the voters of Tennessee did, in the month of February, 1861, by a ma-



jority of sixty thousand, repudiate treason and rebellion, but the aforesaid Isham G. Harris well knowing the true sentiment of the people on treason & rebellion, and entirely disregarding the overwhelming expression of popular sentiment, did use his position as Governor of the State to precipitate it in rebellion and hostility to the government of the United States; and whereas, by such acts he is guilty of treason, perjury & theft, and is responsible to a great extent, for the misery & death of thousands of the citizens of the State, and the devastation of the same from east to west, & north to south—the cries of the wounded & dying, the wail of the widow, and weeping of the orphan are wafted on every breeze, imploring a just retribution on the instigators of this rebellion; be it therefore

Resolved, by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee, that the Governor of this State is hereby authorized & instructed to offer a reward of five thousand Dollars for the apprehension & delivery of the said Isham G. Harris, to the civil authorities of the State. He shall fully describe said fugitive from Justice & cause the publication of the same to be made for three months or longer as he may deem proper, in one newspaper in each of the three Grand Divisions of the State, and in papers published in Richmond, Va., Raleigh, N. C., Savannah, Ga., Little Rock, Ark., New Orleans, La., and publish these preambles & resolutions with his proclamation."

Passed May 1st 1865.

WM HEISKELL

Speaker of the House of Representatives.

SAML. R RODGERS

Speaker of the Senate.

The aforesaid fugitive from justice, without the authority of law, and in violation of all law human and divine was the chief instrument in thrusting upon Tennessee this terrible Rebellion and its innumerable evils—

a Rebellion which has stormed every citadel of order, every defence of virtue, every Sanctuary of right, and every abode of decency. When those villainous but frantic efforts were astonishing mankind with their success as much as appalling them with their atrocity; when the fairest portion of this great Commonwealth had been made hideous by the triumphs of this arch traitor and his corrupt & treasonable associates and their prelusive orgies had profaned our churches like dastards they ingloriously fled, upon the approach of the National flag of beauty & glory, carrying with them to the heart of treason, the funds and other valuables of the State. From that period until now, the said ISHAM G. HARRIS has been roving through the South, swept along by the unparalleled hurricane of licentiousness, and furious tempest of anarchy, never before equalled upon earth! Said Harris has been periodically visiting the border counties of this State, issuing bogus proclamations, and collecting revenue, falsely pretending to be the Governor of Tennessee.

This culprit Harris is about five feet ten inches high—weighs about 145 pounds and is about 55 years of age. His complexion is sallow—his eyes are dark and penetrating—a perfect index to the heart of a traitor, with the scowl and power of a demon resting upon his brow. The study of mischief and the practice of crime, have brought upon him premature baldness and a gray beard; with lion hearted impudence he talks loud and boastingly, about the overthrow of the Yankee Army, and entertains no doubt but the South will achieve her independence.

He chews tobacco rapidly and is inordinately fond of liquors. In his moral structure, he is an unscrupulous man—steeped to the nose and chin in personal and political profligacy now about lost to all sense of honor & shame—and blind to all the beauties of patriotism—with a heart reckless of social duty & fatally bent upon mischief. If captured he will be found lurking in the rebel strong holds of Mississippi, Alabama, or Georgia, and in

*female society*, alleging with sheep faced modesty of a virtuous man, that it is not a wholesome state of public sentiment, or of taste, that forbids an indiscriminate mixing together of married men & women! If captured the fugitive must be delivered to me *alive*, to the end that justice may be done him here, upon the theatre of his former villainous deeds.

The city papers of Nashville, & Memphis, as well as the Chattanooga Gazette and Knoxville Whig, will each insert three times in addition to the other papers suggested by the Legislature.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand & affixed the seal of the State in the city of Nashville this 3<sup>rd</sup> day of May 1865

By the Governor

WILLIAM G. BROWNLOW.

Andrew J. Fletcher  
Secretary of State.

PEDIGREE OF THE POLLOK OR POLK FAMILY,  
FROM FULBERT, THE SAXON, (A.D.,  
1075) TO THE PRESENT TIME.

---

BY MISS MARY WINDER GARRETT, Williamsburg, Va.

---

[Continued from last issue, January, 1898.]

As a matter of interest to persons interested in the genealogy of this extensive and distinguished family, and to authenticate some statements heretofore made, the following documents are given below:

1. Copy of the affidavit of Mrs. Octavia Rowena Polk, relative to the commission of Ezekiel Polk.

2. Letter certifying that Col. William Polk was in command of the Liberty Bell.

3. The circular vindicating Col. Ezekiel Polk from the charge of being a tory in the Revolution.

During the political campaign in which James K. Polk was candidate for the Presidency, the charge was brought by his opponents and extensively circulated, that his grandfather, Col. Ezekiel Polk, was a tory in the Revolution. To meet this charge, the Tennessee Democratic State Central Committee issued a circular in pamphlet form, containing statements and affidavits from many old Revolutionary soldiers then living, and from others familiar with revolutionary history. Among these is an interesting statement from Andrew Jackson.

This pamphlet, while devoted to the defence of Col. Ezekiel Polk, incidentally bears testimony to other interesting historical facts. It was circulated as a campaign document, but is now out of print. The Tennessee Historical Society preserves in its archives, one printed copy of 16 pages, from which, unfortunately, four pages are missing. The society, however, has a type-written copy, duly authenticated from the original. Only one other printed copy is known to exist.

State of Missouri, City of St. Louis.

Octavia R. Polk, of Bolivar, Tennessee, and of lawful age, being duly sworn, on her oath says that she is the widow of Edwin Polk, deceased, youngest son of Ezekiel Polk, deceased; that the said Ezekiel Polk, deceased, was commissioned a Captain by the Council of Safety of South Carolina, in a Regiment of Rangers, commanded by Col. William Thompson, on June 18, 1775, as appeared by a commission to that effect, which this affiant had in her possession for some years prior to and during the late Civil War; that she came into possession of said commission after the death of her husband, said Edwin Polk, who had received the same from Maj. Jno. H. Bills, deceased, of Bolivar, Tennessee; that during the said Civil War and while the said commission was in the house of this affiant (said house being then and now her residence and being one mile west of Bolivar, Tennessee), the said commission was stolen and carried away or destroyed by Federal soldiers, and affiant has no knowledge or information of it since that time.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 1st day of August, A.D., 1896.

The above is a copy of the original in the possession of Mrs. O. Polk Brooks, of 3330 Morgan Street, St. Louis, Mo.

Copy of letter in regard to Liberty Bell.

524 Walnut Street, Philadelphia, January 4, 1896.

Mr. Allen J. Polk—Dear Sir:—I take great pleasure in replying to your favor: First, to state that the extract from Liberty Bell is correct. Your grandfather (Col. William Polk) was in command of the Virginia and North Carolina Continental soldiers who conveyed the bell as far as Bethlehem from Trenton where bells of Christ Church were also first taken. The train of baggage-wagons went with the bell. The diary from which the extract is taken was printed in the Bethlehem Seminary Souvenir, edited by the late Rev. William C. Reichel, a former member of our historical society, Lippincott & Co., Philadelphia 1858, see pages 181-2. See also Lossing's Field Book of the Revolution, Volume II., page 44; also Lossing, Volume II., page 496, for portrait and biography of your grandfather. \* \* \* \* Dr. Stone of our society is the authority in this city on these matters. I refer you to him for further in-

formation. Address Dr. Stone, Historical Society of Pennsylvania, Locust street, Philadelphia.

CHARLES S. KEYSER.

VINDICATION  
OF THE  
REVOLUTIONARY CHARACTER AND SERVICES  
OF THE LATE  
COL. EZEKIEL POLK,  
OF MECKLENBURG, N. C.

Published and prepared by order of the Tennessee State Central Committee.

In all communities, and in all ages of the world, there has existed a class of men who, suffering under a galling sense of conscious inferiority, and despairing of improving their own condition by a course of manly and virtuous conduct, prostitute themselves to the ignoble purpose of detracting from the merits and defaming the character of the virtuous, the patriotic, and the good. Has any one attained a niche in the temple of fame, to which the base and vicious dare not aspire, he becomes at once an object of their calumny and detraction. Time and truth and justice rarely fail to expose the motives, and counteract the effect of such assaults. Tested by fire the crucible metals become more pure and brilliant, and coin is often not known to be genuine, until subjected to this ordeal. It is so with the character of men. In our country, and especially in seasons of political excitement, illiberal opponents traduce and villify, whilst honorable and candid men of all parties will scrutinize the facts and ultimately award a just verdict.

The false and calumnious charges which have recently been made against the revolutionary character and services of Col. Ezekiel Polk, are intended not so much to defame the memory of the patriotic dead, as to effect the popularity and well-earned fame of his grandson, James K. Polk, who has been presented by the Democratic party to the people of the United States as their candidate for the Presidency. How ignoble the purpose, and how despicable the means resorted to to effect it. The charge is not only unsustained by proof, but fortunately the evidence is still in existence to show that it is calumnious and wickedly false. It has been the fortune of James K. Polk, the Democratic can-

didate for the Presidency, to have passed repeatedly through the fiery ordeal of the closest scrutiny while canvassing for public station before the people. He has had on every occasion competitors and political opponents who have with eagle eyes examined every act of his life. His conduct in all private relations of citizen, neighbor, son, husband, brother, friend; his official acts as Representative in the State Legislature, and in the Congress of the United States for fourteen successive years, and as Speaker of the House of Representatives, and as Governor of Tennessee, have all been the subject of public examination; and even his political opponents admit that he has passed through the scrutiny with a character, private and public, pure and unspotted. Not a stain rests upon his escutcheon—not a blot sullies the purity of his fair fame. In the private relations of life, he is known to be as amiable and worthy, as in public and official acts he is admitted to be consistent and irreproachable. In the private circles of society he shares largely, not only in the respect, but in the esteem of those politically opposed to him.

It is certainly a matter of congratulation and of pride to the friends of James K. Polk, that in the midst of the rancor of political animosity, and the assaults of partisan warfare, the more reckless of his political opponents, having sought in vain for any part of his own conduct in life which they can successfully assail, have been driven to the disgraceful necessity of invading the sanctity of the tomb, of digging up the moldering bones of one of his ancestors, who has slept with his father's for near a quarter of a century; and by assailing his character, and making false representations of his conduct in the glorious war of the Revolution, seek to make political capital against his grandson. This infamous attempt has met with few apologists in the Whig party in Tennessee, where James K. Polk is best known. To their honor and credit be it spoken that most of them have refused to stoop to such means, and repudiate it as unworthy of their cause. Their leading presses have refused to lend themselves to purposes so ignoble and base. It is a sin against nature. *Demortuis nil nisi bonum*, is a maxim which finds a cordial response in every manly and patriotic bosom. The charges made against the memory of Col. Ezekiel Polk are for acts on his part falsely alleged to have occurred twenty years before James K. Polk was born, and half a century before he entered the stormy sea of political life. They are made, too, twenty

years after the death of Ezekiel Polk, and must, therefore, even if true, when levelled at the fame of his grandson, fall harmless at his feet. But they are not true, and justice to the memory of the patriotic dead, the Whig soldier of the Revolution, and the outraged feelings of a very numerous and respectable family of the direct and collateral lines, embracing in it many members of both the present political parties of respectable and unblemished character, as well as the sacred demands of truth, require that the reputation of the slandered dead should be vindicated.

The charge when first made, was that Samuel Polk, the father of James K. Polk, was a tory in the Revolution. It was soon, however, ascertained that Samuel Polk was not born until the year 1772, and was not three years old when the war of the Revolution broke out. That was abandoned, and then the charge was made that Ezekiel Polk, the grandfather, and not the father, was a tory. The charge against the one was as false as against the other. The numerous posterity and collateral relations of the late Col. Ezekiel Polk may well be proud of his history, and especially of his patriotic conduct in the war of the Revolution. They only may not object, but now, that the charge is made, they may confidently and proudly demand that the fullest possible examination shall be fairly and impartially had.

In the revolutionary history of the Carolinas the name of Polk has always been intimately associated with patriotism, valor, public spirit, a firm and unyielding attachment to the cause of the colonies, struggling to break the bonds of British oppression and to establish free government. In a volume "published by the Governor of North Carolina, and by the direction of the General Assembly of that State," it is fully established that a Declaration of Independence and resolutions, were passed by the citizens of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, (the residence of the Polk family) on the 20th of May, 1775, by which they absolved themselves from all allegiance to the British crown, and "declared themselves a free, sovereign, and self-governing association." These bold and patriotic proceedings were sustained and carried through by the leading and most influential men of that county, and amongst others by two brothers, Thomas and Ezekiel Polk. The proof of this is most incontrovertible. Besides the Declaration itself, and the testi-



mony of many living witnesses, it is to be found in the following certificate of Capt. Jack, given on the 7th of December, 1819, when the State of North Carolina was collecting the proofs to establish the fact of the Declaration of Independence by the citizens of Mecklenburg on the 20th of May, 1775. Capt. Jack's certificate will be found appended to the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, in the public archives, at page 858, volume II.; and it is in the words following, to-wit:

#### CAPTAIN JACK'S CERTIFICATE.

"Having seen in the newspapers some pieces respecting the Declaration of Independence of the people of Mecklenburg County, in the State of North Carolina, in May, 1775, and being solicited to state what I know of that transaction, I would observe that for sometime previous to, and at the time these resolutions were agreed upon, I resided in the town of Charlotte, Mecklenburg County; was privy to a number of meetings of some of the most influential and leading characters of that county on the subject, before the final adoption of the resolutions, and at the time they were adopted. Among those who appeared to take the lead, may be mentioned Hezekiah Alexander, who generally acted as chairman; John McKnitt Alexander, as secretary; Abraham Alexander, Adam Alexander, Maj. John Davinson, Maj. (afterward General) William Davinson, Col. Thomas Polk, Ezekiel Polk, Dr. Ephraim Brevard, Samuel Martin, Duncan Ocheltree, William Wilson, Rob. Irwin. When the resolutions were finally agreed on, they were publicly proclaimed from the courthouse door, in the town of Charlotte, and received with every demonstration of joy by the inhabitants.

"I was then solicited to be the bearer of the proceedings to Congress. I set out the following month (say June), and in passing through Salisbury, the General Court was sitting; at the request of the court I handed a copy of the resolutions to Col. Kennon, an attorney, and they were read aloud in open court. Maj. William Davinson and Mr. Avery, an attorney, called on me at my lodgings the evening after, and observed they had heard of but one person (a Mr. Beard) but approved of them.

"I then proceeded to Philadelphia and delivered the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, of May, 1775, to Richard Caswell and William Hooper, the delegates to Congress from the State of North Carolina.

"I am now in the eighty-eighth year of my age, residing in the county of Elbert, in the State of Georgia. I was in the Revolutionary War from the commencement to the close.

"I would further observe, that the Rev. Francis Cummins, a Presbyterian clergyman, of Greene County, in this State, was a student in the town of Charlotte at the time of the adoption of the resolutions, and is as well, or perhaps better, acquainted with the proceedings at that time, than any man now living. Col. William Polk, of Raleigh, in North Carolina, was living with his father, Thomas, in Charlotte, at the time I have spoken of; and although then too young to be forward in the business, yet the leading circumstances I have related cannot have escaped his recollection.

"JAMES JACK.

"Signed this 7th of December, 1819, in presence of

"JOB WATSON, C. C. O.,

"JAMES OLIVER, Attorney-at-Law."

Thus early did the two brothers, Thomas and Ezekiel Polk, participate actively in civil and political affairs of their country.

It remained for them to sustain the bold declaration which they had made by the sword. This each did, as did also William and Charles Polk, and every member of the Polk family.

No man of the name or blood was ever known to be a tory. They were all Whigs of the Revolution. The Council of Safety of South Carolina, shortly after the Mecklenburg Declaration was made, appointed Thomas Polk colonel, in the Salisbury district, and afterward colonel of Mecklenburg County. Col. Thomas Polk continued throughout the struggle, and to the close of the Revolution, a firm, active, unshrinking, and fearless defender of the cause of the colonies against the British crown. Few, if any, officers of the Revolution in the Southern States performed more valuable services against the British and tories throughout the whole war, than did Col. Thomas Polk. His younger brother, Ezekiel Polk, the grandfather of James K. Polk, the Democratic candidate for the Presidency, performed also important and valuable services in the Whig army. On the 18th day of June, 1775, he was commissioned a captain by the Council of Safety of South Carolina, in a regiment of rangers, commanded by Col. William Thompson. Fortunately for truth, that commission has been preserved, and the original parchment on which it is written and printed is now before the writers of

this paper. A member of the family who differs widely with Gov. Polk in his political opinions, and is a highly respectable member of the Whig party, feeling indignant at the false charge of toryism made against the memory of his grand uncle, Ezekiel Polk, a few weeks ago caused the following authentication of the commission of captain, granted to Ezekiel Polk, to be made, to-wit:

"The undersigned, citizens of Maury County, Tennessee, at the request of some of the members of the family of the late Col. Ezekiel Polk, formerly of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, and afterward of this State, who died about twenty years ago, have this day inspected an original commission of Captain of Rangers, in the Whig army of the Revolution, granted to Ezekiel Polk by the authorities of South Carolina, which is as follows:

"SOUTH CAROLINA.

"In Pursuance of the Resolutions of the Provincial Congress:

"We do hereby certify that Ezekiel Polk, Esquire, is second captain in regiment of rangers, in the Provincial Service. Dated the eighteenth day of June, 1775.

"WM. WILLIAMSON,

"J. HARRIS,

"THOS. BEE,

"CHARLES C. PINKNEY,

"M. BREWTON,

"ARTHUR MIDDLETON,

"THOMAS HEYWARD, JR.,

"WM. H. DRAYTON,

"JAMES PARSONS,

"HENRY LAURENS,(?)

"RAWS LOWNDES,

"THOMAS FURGINSON,

"BENJ. ELLIOTT."

"This commission is now in the possession of the family and descendants of said Ezekiel Polk, and bears all the evidences of authenticity. The parchment on which it is printed and written has an ancient appearance, and the signatures to it evince a different hand writing, and no doubt is left in our minds that it is genuine, and was executed at the period it bears date. We are informed by members of his family that the commission was

left by him at his death among valuable papers, and was preserved by his executors and family.

"Given under our hands, this 12th day of July, A.D., 1844.

"S. D. FRIERSON,  
 "GEO. M. MARTIN,  
 "GIDEON J. PILLOW,  
 "H. LANGTRY,  
 "ROBERT MACK."

This statement is made by gentlemen of high character and standing of both political parties: S. D. Frierson, Esq., an attorney of high standing; George M. Martin, Esq., Clerk and Master of the Chancery Court; and Hon. Robert Mack, formerly Judge of the Circuit Court, are members of the Whig party. Gen. Gideon J. Pillow and H. Langtry, Esq., post-master at Columbia, are members of the Democratic party.

This commission thus signed by the Council of Safety, composed of the chivalry, the virtue and patriotism of Carolina, attests the confidence reposed by such patriots as Pinckney, Drayton, Middleton, Laurens, and Lowndes, in the valor and devoted revolutionary principles of Ezekiel Polk. A spirited campaign was carried on late in the year against the tories in the upper districts of South Carolina. It is known as the Snow Campaign. Capt. Ezekiel Polk, at the head of his company, was in that campaign, and was in the engagement against the tories at Rayburn's Creek, as was also his nephew, William Polk, late of Raleigh, North Carolina, who was severely wounded (See the statement of George Alexander and others, hereto appended). William Polk was afterward promoted to the rank of colonel commandant in the army of Washington, and was severely wounded in the battle of Germantown. After the Snow Campaign, Col. Thompson and his regiment of rangers marched to Charleston, taking with him the prisoners which he had taken. This gave him and his regiment the opportunity of participating in the brilliant defence of Sullivan's Island against the enemy under Peter Parker. Such a defence was never surpassed by veterans. It extorted admiration from the enemy and drew from the Continental Congress the following resolution, to-wit:

"Resolved, That the thanks of the United States of America be given to Maj.-Gen. Lee, Col. William Moultrie, Col. William Thompson, and the officers and soldiers under their command,

who, on 28th of June last, repulsed with such valor the attack which was made that day, on the State of South Carolina, by the fleet and army of his Britannic Majesty:

"That Mr. President transmit the foregoing resolution to Gen. Lee, Col. Moultrie, and Col. Thompson (See Journals of the American Congress from 1774 to 1778, volume I., page 418, July 20, 1776). It is thus clearly established by the most authentic proofs, that Ezekiel Polk was among the first to shake off the British yoke; that he bore arms and did good service in the cause of the Colonies, and aided in achieving that freedom, which he lived many years to enjoy; and which has been transmitted by himself and his companions in arms to their posterity. It is strange that party malevolence should assail the reputation of such a man. But the political enemies of the grandson, not being able to controvert the undeniable facts which have been stated, attempt to make out their charge of toryism, by alleging that Ezekiel Polk, at a subsequent period of the war (1780) took what was called a protection from the British commander; a protection against the atrocious cruelties and wanton depredations of the tories. If Ezekiel Polk was forced to take such protection to save his family and property from the outrages of the British and tories, it proves the reverse of the charge that he was a tory. A tory did not ask protection from the British commander because he needed none. The British commander did not doubt a tory's loyalty to the crown. A tory had not renounced his allegiance and taken up arms against the British crown as the Whigs of the Revolution had done, and, therefore, he was secure in his person, his family, and his possessions. None but true Whigs could, or ever did, take protection from Cornwallis, and this under the most pressing and absolute necessity, it being the only means of saving their lives and their property.

What is meant by protection, and what were the circumstances which led to it at that day? The history of that period will furnish the answer. After the fall of Charleston, and after Gates' defeat, South Carolina was overrun and the success of the British arms was uninterrupted. Every post from the seacoast to the mountain fell in rapid succession. There was no organized military resistance to the British power. The British traversed the State, which was declared at length to be a conquered province, and the defeat of Gates at Camden nearly made

it so. A military government was established and command-  
 ants were placed over it, with undefined and dictatorial powers.  
 Every trace of popular government was for the time subverted,  
 and the bloody conflicts between the tories and the defenceless  
 Whigs were renewed. In recurring to the history of these times,  
 no language can describe the atrocities of that dismal civil war,  
 that desolated the fair fields of Carolina, and that deluged the  
 dwellings of the Whig inhabitants with tears and blood. Under  
 the favoring countenance of the victorious British army, tories  
 of the worst character emerged from their hiding places in the  
 swamps; men of all sorts of crimes—marauders, thieves, and  
 murderers—who drove the patriotic Whigs from their homes,  
 ravaged their possessions, plundered their property, burnt their  
 dwellings, insulted and abused their wives and daughters, and  
 converted the sweetest homes of happiness into places of sorrow  
 or solitude. There was but one mode left for these unhappy  
 patriots in Carolina, who still devoted to their country's liberties,  
 were yet liable to be torn and tortured through the bosom of  
 their exposed and suffering families, by the tories and the  
 British. The mode was to accept temporarily (as many of the  
 best Whigs and truest patriots in Carolina did) the protection  
 offered by the British commander against the aggravated excesses  
 of the tories, upon condition that they would lay down their  
 arms. This condition was similar to that of any army in battle,  
 overpowered by superior numbers, and finding itself conquered,  
 surrender themselves prisoners of war, and lay down their arms  
 upon condition that they shall be protected in their persons and  
 property. Among many other gallant spirits who were driven  
 to this necessity was the chivalrous Col. Hayne, now well known  
 in Carolina history as having fallen a martyr in his country's ser-  
 vice. The case of the martyred Hayne is mentioned, not be-  
 cause it is an isolated one, but because its tragic issue has made  
 it familiar to all conversant with the events of the Revolutionary  
 War in the Southern States. He had commanded a troop of  
 horse at the siege of Charleston. He was afterward under the  
 necessity of taking protection from the British commander. It  
 was involuntary on his part; and considering it to be the result  
 of coercion and necessity, he broke the protection as soon as the  
 opportunity offered, and again took up arms against the British.  
 He was pursued and captured by the British and taken into the  
 British camp, and soon after executed. Was Hayne a tory?

Who ever heard a charge of such absurdity? So it was with Col. Ezekiel Polk. His case was a parallel one with that of Col. Hayne, and hundreds of other good and true Whigs of the Revolution. Forced as Hayne and hundreds of other patriot Whigs were, he yielded to a compulsory submission to British power. Like Hayne and others, but a few days afterward, and as soon as hope dawned on the patriot cause, he broke the protection, and again took up arms in defense of the patriot cause. He was pursued by the British army, but made good his escape, losing part of his property, which they took in pursuit. If he had been captured he would have shared the fate of the martyred Hayne, and been executed. If Polk was a tory because he was compelled for a short time to take protection, so was Hayne and hundreds of others of the best Whigs of the Revolution, who were compelled for a short time to take protection. It is by confounding protection taken under such circumstances, with toryism, that the false charge has been made.

After the lapse of so many years, from the date of these transactions, but few of the soldiers of the Revolution remain on the stage of action to vindicate the truth by their testimony. Fortunately a few of them do yet survive. Their testimony is hereto appended. Gen. Michael McLeary, long honored as a member of the Legislature of North Carolina, and others whose testimony is here appended, were actors in the war of the Revolution, knew Ezekiel Polk well throughout the whole war, and served with him; and they all place the brand of falsehood on the charge that he was at any time a tory. Gen. McLeary and others of these venerable men still reside in Mecklenburg, upon the very spot where Ezekiel Polk lived, and where these transactions took place, and where they were best known. One of them, Maj. Thomas Alexander, had stated the fact that Ezekiel Polk, when Cornwallis marched his army into Mecklenburg, had taken protection; from this the inference was falsely drawn that he (Thomas Alexander) meant to charge Ezekiel Polk with being a tory during the Revolutionary War. Maj. Alexander having seen that a false inference had been drawn from his first statement, corrects it in the annexed statement of the 3rd of August, 1844. In that statement he says: "I served as a soldier under him" (Ezekiel Polk). "He never took sides in any shape, form, or manner against his country, nor did I ever intend to charge

that he did; and I now consider the charge to be false, nor did I ever hear the charge made, until of late I heard it."

George Oliver, whose testimony is appended, states that he was a "soldier in the Revolution, that he was well acquainted with Ezekiel Polk, that the charge that he was a tory in the Revolution is a base slander and falsehood. It is true he was forced from his residence in South Carolina by Cornwallis on his way from Camden to Charlotte, to take protection or leave all his property to the ravages of the tories; but left him on the first chance and headed a scouting party of patriots, who annoyed and fought the British tories in South Carolina."

Reuben Hood, whose testimony is here appended, states that "he (Ezekiel Polk) was forced in order to save his property from destruction, to take protection. Many Whigs were compelled to do this. The British threatened to burn his house and destroy his property. Col. Polk escaped with his property as soon as he could, some of which the troops of Cornwallis captured in crossing the Yadkin River. I heard that Cornwallis said if he could catch him he would hang him. That he was a true Whig there can be no doubt. And I consider the charge of toryism false."

John Smith, whose testimony is hereto appended, states that "the revolutionary services and zeal of Col. Ezekiel Polk against the British and tories, with whom he was in frequent battles during the war and at its close, were well known to hundreds, if not thousands, of his then living countrymen, and he was afterward esteemed through life accordingly."

The testimony of George Alexander, Rev. Solomon Reese, Thomas Gribble, Abram Farney, H. L. Wilson, P. J. Wilson, Susan Alexander, Col. Augustus Alexander, Wm. Queary, Jacob Lowrance, and John Potts, hereto appended, all bear the most undoubted testimony to the fact that Ezekiel Polk was throughout the Revolutionary War a true Whig of that day; and the charge that he was a tory, lately gotten up, is basely false.

At the close of the Revolutionary War such was the estimate placed upon the revolutionary patriotism and services of Ezekiel Polk, that "he was appointed to and held the office of colonel of the militia, vacated by the promotion of Thomas Polk to the office of brigadier general." This fact was known to thousands at the time, and is proved by the testimony of Rev. Solomon Reese, hereunto appended. He bore the title of colonel ever



afterward; and during his whole life, and until it became important to prejudice the political standing of his grandson, the breath of slander never breathed the base and false charge of toryism against him. He continued to reside in the county of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, from the close of the war until about the year 1806, when he emigrated with his family to Tennessee. He was one of the most intelligent and influential citizens of that county. In politics, he was the zealous and ardent advocate and supporter of the policy of Mr. Jefferson. He took an active and leading part in the support of Mr. Jefferson against John Adams, and firmly and unyieldingly maintained his Republican principles until the hour of his death, which occurred in 1824. During his residence in Tennessee, from 1806 until his death, no man was more respected. Being possessed of a considerable estate, he was remarkable for his benevolence to the poor. The records of the county of his residence show that he actually made a donation of small tracts of land to the poor families who were collaterally related to him. In the immediate vicinity of his residence in Tennessee were numerous immigrants who had been his neighbors in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina. During all this time not a whisper was heard of the calumnious charge of toryism now made against his memory. He died as he had lived, universally respected and esteemed as a man, and as a patriot and soldier of the Revolution. His grandson, James K. Polk, has been a candidate before the people of his county and late congressional district for more than twenty years. A large portion of his enlightened constituents consisted of immigrants from that part of North Carolina in which his ancestors had resided, had removed to the west with them, and were familiar with their conduct in "times that tried men's souls," and yet these very men, the early and intimate acquaintances of the Polks and Knoxs always supported the grandson; and no one ever heard the charge of toryism imputed to Ezekiel Polk. It was first insinuated in 1840, in a low and contemptible Whig paper at Jonesborough in East Tennessee, more than three hundred miles from the residence of the Polk family. It was unsustained by proof, attracted but little attention, and made no impression. The respectable Whig press of the State made no reference to the base and calumnious charge, and have never to this day done so. It has recently been revived by a portion of the Whig press with a view

to effect prejudicially the Democratic candidate for the Presidency in the pending political contest; and its circulation has become so general that the cause of truth and justice seemed to require the vindication of the reputation, both of the living and the dead, which has been here given.

## APPENDIX.

Extract from a speech made by Hon. Romulus M. Saunders, a member of Congress from North Carolina, at a large mass meeting held at Charlotte, in the county of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, on the 23d day of July, 1844, in the neighborhood in which Col. Ezekiel Polk had lived, and within forty feet of the spot on which the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence of 1775 was proclaimed. Several of the survivors of the Revolution and others who had known Col. Polk, were present, and sustained Mr. Saunders in the declaration that Col. Ezekiel Polk was a true Whig of the Revolution, from the commencement to the close of the war.

Gen. Saunders said: "The next proof I offer is a commission of Ezekiel Polk, of a captain of rangers, as granted by the civil authorities of South Carolina, in pursuance of resolutions of the Provincial Congress. The authenticity of this document is beyond question; and it establishes the fact of Capt. Polk's feelings of that day, as one of the principal duties enjoined upon him in his command of the rangers, was the destruction of the tories. It shows the confidence reposed in him as an enemy of the very band with which he is now accused of associating. Thirdly, this is the letter of the eldest son of Ezekiel Polk, who had preserved the original commission granted his father, as a sort of family relic; not as he supposed to save the character of his venerated parent from the tongue of the slanderer, but as a proud testimonial of the patriotism of an ancestor. Fourthly, the affidavit of George Alexander, who speaks from personal knowledge, and who upon his oath pronounces the charge to be false. As to the protection of which he speaks, those who know anything of the ravages which followed the downfall of Charleston, when the enemy overrun the country with the sword of death and the torch of conflagration, will not be surprised that one who had been so active in routing the tories should have been forced, for a time, to save his wife, children, and property, from an enemy more cruel and vindictive than the savage him-

self. If this made Capt. Polk a tory, so was the brave and gallant Col. Hayne a tory. He fell a victim and a martyr to British cruelty as a captive, after having been forced to entreat their protection, when everything was gloom and despondency. I now turn in support of this proof to my venerated friend by my side, Gen. Michael McLeary, now more than eighty years old, but of sound and accurate memory, who himself was an actor in the Revolution; was one who met Cornwallis as he marched through this country, and aided in capturing the provisions intended for the support of his army—a worthy citizen of high character, whom you have often honored as your Senator in your State Legislature. I am authorized by him to say, which I now repeat in his presence and in your hearing, that he knew Capt. Ezekiel Polk during and after the close of the Revolution; that he then knew him as an active Whig; that he was at all times esteemed and respected as such, and that he never heard him charged as being a tory until he saw the charge in the dirty sheet called the Charlotte Journal, printed in this town. I ask you then, whom you will believe, this venerated man, whom you have at all times delighted to honor, or the foul tongue of the slanderer? And here I leave the proof, with the fact that Ezekiel Polk, like Col. William Polk, and others of his family, was at all times after the close of the Revolution esteemed and respected in this county of his residence as a soldier and a patriot.”

The following is a copy of a letter of William Polk, now a citizen of Arkansas. He is now about seventy years old, and is the eldest surviving son of Capt. Ezekiel Polk:

September 15, 1840.

Dear Sir:—Yours of August 27 has come to hand this day, and I forthwith comply with your request. The commission which Maj. Bills referred you to, in my hands, I have preserved, and now inclose it herein (after taking a copy of it), and forward it to you. I cannot believe for a moment that such malignant fabricated calumnies are, or ever will be, believed. Knowing as I do, the high standing of our father amongst the other soldiers of the Revolution during the whole of his residence in North Carolina, and there is no man at this time more venerated than old Capt. Ezekiel Polk, both for his patriotism, unwavering Democratic principles, his talents, and stern integrity. I think it was near the close of the Revolution that he and Col. Wil-

liam Polk obtained a colonel's commission (both about the same time), which title he ever afterward bore.

With high respect yours,

WM. POLK.

Statement of Mr. George Alexander.

Panola County, Mississippi, March 25, 1840.

I was acquainted with Col. Ezekiel Polk from the time he came to Mecklenburg County, from South Carolina. I have always understood that he was an officer in the South Carolina rangers, together with Col. William Polk, who was an officer under his uncle, Col. Ezekiel Polk. This regiment of rangers performed a campaign and dispersed the tories at Rayburn Creek, where Col. William Polk was wounded. This was called the Snow Campaign. After this Col. Ezekiel Polk (and also Col. William Polk, as soon as he could be brought with safety, not having recovered from his wounds) removed to Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, I think about the year 1778. There my personal acquaintance commenced with him, it being also an intimate one. From my knowledge he stood high among the citizens of Mecklenburg County. He then farmed in Mecklenburg County, and accumulated property there. When Cornwallis overrun the country in 1780, and came to Charlotte, after Gates' defeat, there were no regular organized troops in the field, and the country was overrun. It was my understanding that then in order to save his property from destruction, he, together with others, took protection from Cornwallis. When Cornwallis left for the south, he (Ezekiel Polk) removed his property from Cornwallis' protection, a part of which was taken by Cornwallis' troops when he (Ezekiel Polk) was crossing the Yadkin. He went from there to Pennsylvania, and returned in the summer of 1781. That he was a tory, or acted in anywise with the British, I consider a slander against him, and to be false. He stood high among the citizens of Mecklenburg County.

GEO. ALEXANDER.

[Mr. George Alexander, who makes the foregoing statement is a member of the present Whig party.]

Statement of Mr. John Smith.

Warren County, Tennessee, July 21, 1844

The undersigned, formerly of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, where he resided during the Revolutionary War, and

until his removal in the year 1832, with his family, to Warren County, Tennessee, where he now resides, having understood that charges have been made derogatory to the fame and patriotism of the late Col. Ezekiel Polk, as a soldier of the Revolution, and knowing the same to be untrue, respectfully submits the following statement for the purpose of doing justice to the memory of a deceased friend:

I was well acquainted with Col. Ezekiel Polk from the time he settled in Mecklenburg, North Carolina, I believe in the year 1778. He and his kinsman, the late Col. William Polk, of Raleigh, came to reside in Mecklenburg about the same time, as I believe. Col. Polk had previously borne the title and commission of an officer in the service of his country against the British and tories. I know the whole of the family well, some of them intimately, and among others Col. Ezekiel Polk, who is the paternal grandfather of Gov. James K. Polk, of Tennessee, whose father, Samuel Polk, deceased, was the son of Col. Ezekiel Polk. The revolutionary services and zeal of Col. Ezekiel Polk against the British and tories, with whom he was in frequent battles, during the war and at its close, were well known at the time to hundreds if not thousands of his then living countrymen, and he was afterward esteemed through life accordingly. I have seen and read the statement of Mr. George Alexander, in relation to his (Col. Polk's) conduct and services, and the same is just and true in every particular, according to the best of my recollection of events so far back; of the main facts stated by Mr. Alexander, I have a personal knowledge, as things of public occurrence at the time. Taking a British protection, after the British arms had, for the time, totally subjugated that part of the country, as was particularly the case in both Carolinas, especially after Gates' defeat, as the martyred Hayne and others did, on the condition of not bearing arms for the time being, was what hundreds of the purest and bravest of the Whigs were compelled by overruling necessity to do in order to save their property from destruction and the rapine of the tories, and their families from brutal insults. The tories and friends of the British, open and private, needed no such protection, being under the immediate and secure protection of the regular British army and troops, who were then in possession of, and had overrun all that part of the country. The circumstance of having taken these protections, under a necessity rendering it proper and just

in the eye of God and man, was never esteemed dishonorable, or as favoring the British or tory side; and especially where those who took them, as Col. Polk and Col. Hayne did, again drew their swords in their country's behalf, as soon as hope again smiled upon the American cause, and the British had retreated and sufficiently evacuated the previously conquered portions of the country to admit of hope of success in renewed efforts of the Whigs to drive out or make head against the common enemy. Many men in the situation of those who took these temporary protections, of whom Col. Polk and Col. Hayne were two most prominent instances, were and ever will be, esteemed in their lives, and in their memories, as among the purest and bravest soldiers of the Revolution. A grateful posterity to the latest generation will revere their memories as such. I never heard it hinted during Col. Polk's life, or until lately, that he had been a tory, or in any manner friendly to the British cause in the Revolution. I feel clear that I can truly say, in view of the great account of my life, which I must shortly give before the dread tribunal where the secrets of all hearts are known, that the charge is, and must be, false, malicious, and unfounded; for if it were true, or had been true, in any sense, it could not have escaped my knowledge and recollection, and the knowledge of other men who lived at the time. In Mecklenburg, among jealous, ardent, and vigilant Whigs of 1775 and 1776, and of 1781 and 1782, it could not have been hidden or unknown. I feel happy that my life, under Providence, has been prolonged in sound health and memory, so as to enable me to make this statement, as an act of justice to the living as well as the dead.

(Signed)

JOHN SMITH.

Statement of Thomas Gribble, Esq.

Warren County, Tennessee, July 22, 1844.

Having heard that it is reported, and even has been charged in print, that Col. Ezekiel Polk, formerly of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, the paternal grandfather of Gov. James K. Polk, of Tennessee, was a tory in the Revolutionary War, and considering the charge as an unfounded slander upon a soldier of 1776, I feel happy that my life has been prolonged so as to enable me to give my contradiction to the charge. I lived in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, during and at the close of the Revolutionary War. I have read the statements of George

Alexander, and my friend and neighbor, John Smith. I had an acquaintance with Col. Ezekiel Polk from the time he settled in Mecklenburg, and from personal knowledge, concur fully in the statements of Messrs. Alexander and Smith. Col. Polk lived about nine miles from where I lived and had been raised. I knew him and Col. William Polk well. They were both known to have served faithfully, and as Whigs and good soldiers, in the Revolution. That Col. Polk could have ever at any time, been a tory or friendly to the British I esteem to be wholly impossible, and a slander on the dead. If it had been so I must in some way have heard of it. I continued to live in North Carolina until 1814, since which time I have lived in Tennessee. The statements of facts and dates, by Mr. Alexander and Mr. Smith, correspond from my recollection, with all I ever knew or heard. In his life, no man was more beloved or more esteemed after the Revolution, as a patriot, than Col. Ezekiel Polk.

(Signed)

THOMAS GRIBBLE.

Statement of Gen. A. Shields and others.

McMinnville, Warren County, Tennessee, July 24, 1844.

The undersigned, citizens of Warren County, and of the State of Tennessee, have been long and intimately acquainted with Mr. John Smith and Thomas Gribble, Esq., two old and venerable citizens, who have signed and given the foregoing statements, in regard to the revolutionary conduct and character of the late Col. Ezekiel Polk, grandfather of Gov. James K. Polk; and take pleasure in saying that, from their religious and moral characters, as well as intelligence—no men in the State possessing more unblemished characters—the said Smith and Gribble, in any statement they make, are entitled to the fullest and most entire belief.

(Signed)

A. SHIELDS,  
G. R. SMARTT,  
JESSE LOCKE,  
L. D. MERCER,  
THOS. H. HOPKINS,  
W. S. S. DEARING.

Statement of Rev. Solomon Reese, of Alabama, a worthy minister of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church.

Tuscumbia, Alabama, July 24, 1844.

To the editors of the Franklin Democrat:

Gentlemen:—Whereas there is a tale going the rounds of the Whig papers, asserting that the grandfather of Hon. James K. Polk was a tory. Now this is to certify that I was intimately acquainted with Ezekiel Polk, the grandfather of James K. Polk, during the Revolutionary War, and that neither him nor any of his relations ever had a drop of tory blood in their veins; but on the contrary, Ezekiel Polk was appointed to, and held the office of colonel of the militia, vacated by the promotion of Thomas Polk to the office of brigadier general. Any one who says or publishes that Ezekiel Polk was a tory, says or publishes that which is utterly false.

SOLOMON REESE.

Statement of Gen. Michael McLeary, of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, a soldier of the Revolution, who was present and personally referred to by Gen. Saunders in his speech at Mecklenburg, hereinbefore inserted.

Mecklenburg County, August 8, 1844.

I was personally acquainted with Col. Ezekiel Polk in the Revolutionary War. I knew him to be a friend to his country and an active Whig. I never heard anything else than this until I saw the charge of toryism in the Charlotte Journal. I consider it an outrageous slander upon a patriot that deserves the rebuke of every honest man. I was in Charlotte on the day the independence of Mecklenburg was declared. It was notorious at the time, that Ezekiel Polk was active in getting up that declaration, and signed that instrument. Of this there can be no doubt. I never even heard that he took protection for a time to save his family and property, and I was acquainted with many who took it. If anything of the kind had happened, I certainly would have heard of it. He stood high always as a man of business, of strict integrity and fine talent.

M. McLEARY.

In presence of Michael Moore.



Statement of George Oliver, about eighty-five years old, of Lincoln County, North Carolina.

Lincoln County, August 5, 1844.

I was born and raised in North Carolina, and was a soldier in the Revolutionary War (which the pension records will show). I was well acquainted with Ezekiel Polk, Thomas Polk, and all the Polk family that served in the Revolution in the Carolinas; and state that they were all good and active Whigs, and that the charge made against Ezekiel Polk at this late day, that he was a tory in the Revolution, is a base slander and falsehood. It is true that he was forced from his residence in South Carolina, by Cornwallis on his way from Camden to Charlotte, to take protection or leave all of his property to the ravages of the tories; but left him on the first chance, and headed a scouting party of patriots, who annoyed and fought the British tories in South Carolina. It was said that Cornwallis was so anxious to induce him to raise arms against his country, that he offered him a commission of colonel. I went to live with Col. William Polk, near the town of Charlotte, at the close of the war, and lived with him several years, and knew Ezekiel Polk, and never heard the charge of toryism against him; and on the other hand, he was considered a patriot and friend to his country, and useful citizen, being a talented and business man.

GEORGE OLIVER.

Signed in presence of Pleasant Oliver and S. C. Caldwell.

Statement of Abram Forney, eighty-five years of age.

Lincoln County, North Carolina, August 3, 1844.

I served in the Revolution under Col. Thomas Polk, elder brother of Ezekiel Polk; I knew all the Polks; I was not in the army with Ezekiel Polk, but always understood he was a true friend to his country, and was an active Whig, and indeed I know that there was no tory among any of the Polks; and I consider the charge that Ezekiel Polk was a tory to be false in every particular; and I did not hear even that he took protection under Cornwallis, nor do I believe that he did. And I heard at the time that Ezekiel Polk was among the foremost in getting up the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, and

that he ((Ezekiel Polk) and a Brevard and a minister by the name of Balch wrote the declaration.

His  
ABRAM X FORNEY.  
Mark.

Subscribed in presence of J. W. Hampton.

(Mr. Abram Forney, who makes the foregoing statement, is a member of the present Whig party.)

Statement of Reuben Hood eighty-four years of age.

Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, August 7, 1844.

I was acquainted with Col. Ezekiel Polk before and after the Revolutionary War. It was my understanding at the time, and I heard it often, that he assisted in getting up the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, and that he signed that instrument, of this I have no doubt. I heard that when Cornwallis came to Charlotte, on his way from Camden, that Col. Ezekiel Polk, then living in South Carolina, near the Mecklenburg line, was forced, in order to save his property from destruction, to take protection. Many Whigs were compelled to do this. The British threatened to burn his house and destroy his property. Col. Polk escaped with his property, as soon as he could, some of which the troops of Cornwallis captured in crossing the Yadkin River. I heard that Cornwallis said if he could catch him that he would hang him. That he was a true Whig there can be no doubt, and I consider the charge of toryism false. He was considered a man of fine talents.

REUBEN HOOD.

Signed in presence of Margaret Hood.

Statement of Augustus Alexander.

Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, August 1, 1844.

I was acquainted with Col. Ezekiel Polk from my boyhood until he removed from North Carolina. I am now seventy-two years of age. I lived about one mile and a half of him during the whole time. Ezekiel Polk and my father were always intimate. My father was a signer of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence. I never heard this charge of toryism until I saw it in the Charlotte Journal. I was indignant when I saw it, and pronounced it then, and do now, a slander. He lived in

Mecklenburg for many years after the Revolution, and stood high as a man of talents and stern integrity.

AUGUSTUS ALEXANDER.

Statement of Susan Alexander.

Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, August 1, 1844.

I have a good memory, and was an active person in the time of the Revolutionary War. I heard that Ezekiel Polk did take protection in order to protect his family and property from the ravages of the tories. I have never heard the least suspicion of his bearing arms against his country or his intention to do so, and I certainly would have heard it, if it had been so. I have heard that he was one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence in Mecklenburg, and believe him to have been a man of stern integrity and talents.

SUSAN ALEXANDER.

[Mrs. Susan Alexander is the lady with whom Gen. Jackson and his mother stayed for several weeks, when driven by the British from the Waxaws.]

Statement of P. J. Wilson.

Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, August 5, 1844.

It is well known in this country, that my father, Samuel Wilson, was a prominent and active Whig during the American Revolution, and was well acquainted with the scenes of those days, and with the men that participated in them; and with regard to the charge of toryism now made against the late Col. Ezekiel Polk, I believe it to be slanderously false. For I have often heard my father speak of Col. Ezekiel Polk as among the most active of the Whigs of this region of country in the Revolution; and when three years since the charge was made that he was a tory, for having taken protection under Cornwallis, he denounced it as a slander, and said that he knew to the contrary; that when Cornwallis was in this country, Col. Polk was in Pennsylvania. He said the charge was false, for he knew to his personal knowledge that there was no better Whig in all this country during the war than Ezekiel Polk; and to these facts he was anxious to make a certificate, but no opportunity occurred previous to his death. There are many others in this community

who have repeatedly heard my father relate the facts as I have stated them above.

P. J. WILSON.

Subscribed in presence of J. W. Hampton.

Statement of H. L. Wilson, of Lincoln County, North Carolina.

Lincoln County, August 5, 1844.

My father, David Wilson, was an active Whig in the Revolutionary War, was intimate with and in the service during the whole war with the Polks. I often heard him and my uncle, Samuel Wilson, talk over the scenes of the Revolution, and I always heard him say that Col. Ezekiel Polk, and all his brothers, were active Whigs during the whole war. I never heard him or Samuel Wilson say anything about Col. Ezekiel Polk being lukewarm in the cause. I have often heard him and my uncle, Samuel Wilson, say that Ezekiel Polk was active in getting up the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, and that he helped to write that declaration. My father was at the battle of Ransom's Mill; when Col. Talls was killed he took command at that battle. His mind was sound to the day of his death, and he was fond of talking of the scenes of the Revolution. And I am well satisfied that he knew the feelings and conduct of the Polks in the Revolution, as well or better than any man of his day, and of the truth that I have stated above, I have not the remotest doubt.

H. L. WILSON.

Signed in the presence of J. W. Hampton.

Statement of William Queary, of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina.

August 10, 1844.

I was born and raised in the county of Mecklenburg, State of North Carolina, thirteen miles from the town of Charlotte, and am now seventy-five years of age. I was well acquainted with the majority of the signers of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, my father, John Queary, being one of them. And I always understood from my father, independent of my own knowledge, that Ezekiel Polk and his brother, Thomas Polk, were active in getting up the meeting that promulgated the declaration on the 20th of May, 1775, and they were both signers of that instrument. I further state that it was notorious

that Ezekiel Polk was an active Whig officer during the Revolution, and did good service. I further state that he never was even suspected or accused of toryism during the Revolution. I believe the story of toryism lately gotten up to be a slander and falsehood.

WILLIAM QUEARY.

Signed in presence of S. C. Caldwell and Ezekiel Johnson

Statement of John Potts in relation to the life and character of the late Col. Ezekiel Polk, formerly of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina.

Lewis County, Tennessee, July 23, 1844.

I was well acquainted with the late Ezekiel Polk, in Mecklenburg County, from about the year 1790 to 1806; that is, from about the time I became old enough to form an acquaintance until he (Col. Ezekiel Polk) left North Carolina for Tennessee; and I afterward knew him in Tennessee, and saw him frequently up to a few years before his death. My own father, Jonathan Potts, was out actively engaged during the whole of this war; and from the great intimacy which existed between him and Col. Ezekiel Polk, I learned much of the history of the war, and of the part which Ezekiel Polk bore in it. I understood from my father that he served for six months in Capt. Ezekiel Polk's company, who was the captain of a South Carolina regiment, which company performed much service in what was called the "Snow Campaign." I know from their frequent conversations in my presence, and from the history of the times, as learned from many who participated in them, that Col. Ezekiel Polk was a valiant and patriotic Whig during the Revolution, and did much good service as a commissioned officer in the American army. There was a time in North Carolina, as I learned from every one familiar with its history about the year 1780, and also South Carolina, when Cornwallis overrun the country with his army, after Gates' defeat, and came to Charlotte. At this time there was no regular organized American troops in the field against him, and many of the best Whigs in the country, to save their property from destruction and confiscation from the troops of Cornwallis and the tories were compelled to take protection from Cornwallis. This protection I always understood that Col. Ezekiel Polk did take for a few days, among many others of the best patriots of the Revolution to protect his negroes and property from destruction. After

the American troops began to rally again, and the contest was resumed in the Carolinas, Col. Ezekiel Polk, who was then captain, paraded his company again and did battle during the whole of the war of the Revolution, as a Whig and patriot in the American army. After the war was over Col. Ezekiel Polk continued to reside in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, respected and highly esteemed by all, as a soldier who had done good service for his country.

The history which I have given above, as before stated, is from what I have often heard my father and Col. Ezekiel Polk and others who were together in the war say, and such was the common and universal understanding at the time. I only know from the time I was old enough to form any opinion and understand anything Col. Ezekiel Polk was regarded and highly esteemed as an undoubted Whig of the Revolution. That he was a tory, or acted in any way or manner with the British, I consider a vile slander against a good man that is dead and gone, and to be false. He always stood high among the citizens of Mecklenburg County, and I know he could not have done so if he had been in any way connected with the tories.

JOHN POTTS.

State of Tennessee, Lewis County.

Personally appeared before me, John Potts, with whom I am personally acquainted, and made oath in due form of law, that the facts stated in the foregoing statement, as of his own knowledge are true, and those statements upon the information of others, he believes to be true. Sworn and subscribed to before me the day and date within written.

GEORGE NIXON,

Presiding Justice of Lewis County.

Statement of Jacob Lowrance, of Marshall County, Tennessee.

State of Tennessee, Marshall County.

I, Jacob Lowrance, a citizen of said county, and a revolutionary pensioner of the United States, having heard insinuations against Ezekiel Polk, the grandfather of James K. Polk, of Tennessee, take pleasure in stating to all that it may concern, that I was acquainted with said Ezekiel Polk, and also with the Polk family, his relatives, having served in the Revolutionary War with Charles Polk; that during said war and since, I have always believed and understood that said Ezekiel, as also his

relatives, were good and true Whigs in the Revolution, and from my knowledge of the family, I fully believe, if any of them had been anything but Whigs, I should have known it. From my knowledge, I am satisfied that said Ezekiel was always a true friend of the American cause in that struggle.

JACOB LOWRANCE.

Witnesses: John Lowrance, Robert M. Orr, August 1, 1844.

Letter from a Revolutionary patriot. The author of the subjoined letter is an elder of the Presbyterian Church, a man of probity and integrity. He speaks of the vile slander of toryism, which the Whigs are attempting to fasten upon the Polk family, as a patriot should speak. This old soldier feels as though his own revolutionary reputation were at stake; and although a Christian man, he hesitates not to rebuke the author of the charge in severe, but just and proper terms.

To the editor of the Journal and Flag:

Bibb County, Alabama, August 15, 1844.

Whereas, there is going the rounds of the Whig papers a slanderous report that the grandfather of James K. Polk was a tory in the Revolution; now this is to certify that I was personally acquainted with Ezekiel Polk, grandfather of Hon. James K. Polk, and was also acquainted with Col. Thomas Polk, and Charles Polk, brothers of Ezekiel Polk; they were all true Whigs of the right stamp and that neither of them had a drop of tory blood in their veins. I have also seen Ezekiel Polk in the army in the year 1780 in Carolina. I was raised in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina; and I was intimately acquainted with the Polk family, and I now say to the author of that report, that he is a scoundrel and a liar, and I can prove him to be such. If he wishes he can find me at my residence, nine miles north of Centreville, Bibb County. I am in my eighty-fifth year, and served more than two years in the Revolution in North and South Carolina.

Respectfully, etc.,

JOHN WALLACE.

N. B.—If you think these lines worthy of notice, you can make them public.

J. W.

This gratuitous charge of toryism was predicated on something which Thomas Alexander had said or written in 1841,

and which was published by the notorious Brownlow, with whom the slander originated. He now says he considers the charge to be false; that he never made such a charge against Col. Ezekiel Polk, and never heard it made until lately. Thus are the slanderers left without a solitary witness to sustain them.

Statement of Thomas Alexander.

Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, August 5, 1844.

I was acquainted with Col. Ezekiel Polk during the Revolutionary War. I know that he served two campaigns as captain, once against the tories of Rayburn's Creek, where he dispersed them; and one before that against the Indians and others, in the neighborhood of Ninety-six, in which campaign I served as a soldier under him. The seat of war was then removed northward, and I do not know of his being in the army afterward. He never took sides in any shape, manner or form against his country, nor did I ever intend to charge that he did, and I now consider the charge to be false; nor did I ever hear that charge made until of late I heard it. I always considered, that Ezekiel Polk was the most talented of all the family.

THOMAS ALEXANDER.

[Maj. Alexander is a member of the present Whig party.]

Introduction to the "Vindication" which has been made by the Democratic State Central Committee of North Carolina:

#### TO THE PUBLIC.

James K. Polk was born and educated in North Carolina. He was nominated as the Democratic candidate for the next President of the United States by the delegates of five and twenty States, assembled in convention at Baltimore in May last. Between forty and fifty years of age, nearly one-half of his life has been devoted to the public service, as a legislator and Governor of the State of Tennessee, and as a member of Congress; and when a member of Congress, exalted to two among the highest posts of duty in that body—Speaker of the House of Representatives, and Chairman of the Committee of Ways and Means. His politics of the pure Jeffersonian and Jackson stamp, have been marked by a consistency rare and wonderful in this age of political tergiversation, always the fruit of an honest heart, a sound judgment and patient investigation of the truth.



His political enemies finding no blemish or spot in his public or private life, both ever distinguished by good temper, pure morals and strict integrity, have sought to invalidate his claims to the Presidency by slandering the character of his deceased grandfather, Ezekiel Polk, with the charge that he was a tory during the war of the American Revolution.

Believing this charge to be false and calumnious, the offspring of the demon spirit of party, the relation in which we stand as the Democratic State Central Committee of North Carolina to James K. Polk, and the debt of gratitude we all owe to that noble band of patriot soldiers of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, who first declared independence, and first shed their blood in its support ("for ingratitude to such men would be fouler than traitor's arms"), have constrained us to cause a mass of testimony to be compiled in relation to this charge, so voluminous, cogent, and authoritative, as must forever consign it to infamy and oblivion.

Our Senator, Hon. William H. Haywood, has been appealed to to perform this task, because of our high confidence in his distinguished reputation and talents, as a truthful, patient, and accurate investigator of facts and evidence. The result of his labor in this behalf he has now submitted to us, in the document or report accompanying this address, which we have ordered to be published. He who will not read it because he is unwilling to see justice done to the memory of a leading patriot and soldier of the Revolution, would himself have been a traitor, had he lived in 1776; he that reads to know the truth, will honor the memory of Ezekiel Polk, and scorn the authors of the base calumny, who deemed it no sacrilege to violate the grave of a true Whig and soldier of the American Revolution.

Raleigh, August 23, 1844.

LOUIS D. HENRY, of Raleigh, Chairman.

JOSIAH W. WATSON, Johnston County.

WELDEN N. EDWARDS, Warren County.

THOMAS N. CAMERON, Fayetteville.

PERRIN BUSBEE, Raleigh.

CHARLES FISHER, Rowan County.

GABRILL HOMES, New Hanover.

JOSEPH ALLISON, Orange County.

WILL R. POOLE, Wake County.

LOUIS D. WILSON, Edgecomb County.

WILL W. HOLDEN, Raleigh.  
 JAMES B. SHEPARD, Wake County.  
 B. B. SMITH, Raleigh.  
 GEO. W. WHITFIELD, Lenoir County.  
 THOMAS BRAGG, Northampton County.  
 WILL WHITE, Raleigh.  
 ALPHEUS JONES, Wake County.  
 WILSON WHITAKER, Wake County.  
 BURTON CRAIG, Catawba.  
 JOHN HILL, Stokes County.  
 GASTON H. WILDER, Wake County.

Extracts from the report of Hon. William H. Haywood, Jr., Senator in Congress from the State of North Carolina, "To the Democratic State Central Committee of North Carolina:"

But suspicion itself must give way before the accumulated testimony of those who lived in the time of our revolution and knew Ezekiel Polk long and intimately. They resided in Mecklenburg County, where tories were scarce, so scarce during the war as to be universally known and remembered after it. American soldiers, Revolutionary Whigs themselves, they testify with one voice that they knew all the Polks and that this charge is a calumny of modern growth; they say that it is "false," that it is a "slander;" that Ezekiel Polk was not a tory, but a true, early and constant friend to the American cause, and a "Seventy-Six Whig, as all the Polks were." It will be seen when I come to give their evidence in their own words, that I have not overstated it. There are one or two facts, however, resting not upon frail memory of man alone—facts which no prejudices of the present day can falsify, and no partiality can have devised, but which are so inconsistent with this imputation upon the memory of Ezekiel Polk, as to entitle them to high consideration; and before proceeding to submit the testimonials of the old soldiers in vindication of their slandered compatriot, I have to say a few words upon them.

It has been shown already that Ezekiel Polk "took a lead" in the Declaration of Independence on May 20, 1775. To achieve that independence he is next seen with a revolutionary military commission in his pocket, even before the national Declaration of Independence of July, 1776. To prove the fact, here is a copy of the commission taken from the original, and

corresponding with the same document, as published in the American Archives, viz.:

### SOUTH CAROLINA.

In pursuance of the resolutions of the Provincial Congress, we do certify that Ezekiel Polk, Esq., is second captain in the regiment of rangers in the provincial service. Dated the 18th day of June, 1775.

HENRY LAWENS,  
RAWS LOWNDES,  
THOMAS FURGISON,  
BENJ. ELLIOT,  
M. BREWTON,  
ARTHUR MIDDLETON,  
THOMAS HEYWARD, JR.,  
WILLIAM H. DRAYTON,  
JAMES PARSONS,  
WILLIAM WILLIAMSON,  
I. HARRIS,  
THOMAS BEE,  
CHARLES C. PINCKNEY.

The first blood shed in the Southern war of the Revolution flowed from the veins of the Polks in the battle where Capt. Ezekiel Polk and the late Col. William Polk, an officer under him, with their Mecklenburg volunteers met in hostile array the enemies of America. That company formed a part of Col. Thompson's regiment, which received a vote of thanks from the same national Congress that declared the independence of the United States. See Congress Journals, 20th July, 1776.

And yet it is pretended that Ezekiel Polk was a tory! The tories of the Revolution did not carry certificates like this commission, nor win the special thanks of the Congress of 1776. Again it has not been denied, but, on the contrary, admitted to be true, that shortly after the Revolution, or just before its close—most certainly after Lord Cornwallis had left Charlotte, and North Carolina, too, forever, Ezekiel Polk was appointed a colonel of Mecklenburg County. He must have received his appointment from the Legislature, as by the North Carolina constitution of 1776 that alone had power to elect "field officers of the militia." Now, there is no instance in which the North

Carolina Assembly (soon after the Revolution) conferred such an appointment upon one who was suspected of toryism. The feeling and the practice were so much the other way, that without any clear authority for it under the constitution, the Legislators expelled members of the body from their seats, if they had been tories in the Revolution as unworthy to sit with patriots.

The Journals of our Assembly show that this practice prevailed at all times up to the beginning of the present century. And who can believe that the very same men who expelled tories from their own body would have appointed Ezekiel Polk a "field officer of the militia" had he been guilty of toryism, or suspected of it, in that day. It cannot be credited.

Again remember that Mecklenburg County received from the British commander the distinguished epithet of "The Hor-net's Nest," and is it probable that the 1776 Whigs of Mecklenburg would have mustered quietly under the command of a tory colonel? No—never! This libel upon the memory of Polk is a scandalous imputation upon the county and the State.

Again: the magistrates of Mecklenburg County were a body of "76 Whigs" at that period, as sound as the whole country could produce. Appointed by the Legislature, and holding their office for life, they were clothed by law with the power of choosing the sheriff; and it is believed that, not long after the war had terminated, Ezekiel Polk was chosen a sheriff of Mecklenburg County. Those who have assailed him indirectly confess that he was appointed "sheriff."

Now, who believes that the Whig magistrates of Mecklenburg would have appointed a tory their sheriff? If his competitors for the office did not urge their pretensions by reminding the court that Ezekiel Polk "took protection" and was a tory, what becomes of this accusation now? If they did so then the magistrates of Mecklenburg, like the Legislature who had appointed him colonel, must have known that, under all the circumstances, his "taking protection" formed no ground of suspicion against his patriotism, or they would not have elected him to the station. I have seen it somewhere insinuated by the accusers of Ezekiel Polk, that some people objected to his serving. If that be true, does it not give strength to my view of the subject? Does it not prove that the Mecklenburg 1776 Whig magistrates, who must have understood this matter then better than we can possibly understand it now, deliberately and upon their own knowledge

have once put down this imputation? The compatriots of Ezekiel Polk having thus buried the calumny more than half a century ago, it would have lain in deserved oblivion still, had not party hostility to his grandson made the unmanly effort to reproduce it. How ungenerous are the devices of party spirit! How ignoble the means of party warfare! But these views and the proofs already offered, however conclusive of themselves to refute this calumny, are fortified and sustained by the testimony of Ezekiel Polk's compatriots.

The letter of Gen. Andrew Jackson, written in answer to an inquiry of a gentleman of North Carolina:

Hermitage, July 12, 1844.

Sir:—I have just received your letter of the 30th ultimo, informing me that ——— recently declared "that he traveled through Tennessee at the time Gov. Polk was for the first time a candidate for Governor, and that his opponents (the Whigs) then brought the charge of his grandfather's being a tory against him, and that the Democrats of Tennessee met the charge by throwing it upon the North Carolina branch of the Polk family, that is, Col. Thomas Polk;" and you desire me to state for your information, and that of the people, what I know of the facts. In reply, I state with pleasure that I knew all the old stock of Polks—Col. Thomas Polk, father of Col. William Polk, and Ezekiel Polk, grandfather of Col. James K. Polk. They were all good 1776 Whigs. Old Col. Thomas Polk was the first mover of independence in Mecklenburg County. All the Polks then grown were good 1776 Whigs; and Col. Polk, son of Thomas, was twice wounded in the war of the Revolution, and I think he had a brother killed in battle. I never knew one branch of the family to be charged with toryism before. If such a rumor was circulated during the canvass referred to I never heard of it.

I am gratified thus to be able to give my testimony to the revolutionary services and patriotism of the Polk family, with many of whose members I have been intimate the greater part of my life.

It seems that in these times no character is safe against the slanderer, for there never was less excuse for it than in the case of Mr. Polk. I have known him since he was a boy. A citizen more exemplary in his moral deportment, more punctual and

exact in business, more energetic and manly in expression of his opinions, and more patriotic, does not live.

I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,  
ANDREW JACKSON.

That the most accurate and distinguished historians of the southern campaigns of our Revolution did not consider it so, as every educated man who has read them knows well. That the men of that age, who were actors upon the public theater, and yet live to tell the tale of their own times, have with one voice denounced this arrogant and libelous assumption, we have seen, and read, and heard; an assumption, which impudently brands with dishonor one-half of the Whigs of the Revolution in South Carolina and the upper counties of our own State! That the General Assembly did not consider it so, is certain, when they appointed Ezekiel Polk a colonel of the militia; nor the other Whigs of Mecklenburg, when they quietly mustered under him!

That the magistrates of "The Hornet's Nest" county did not consider it so, is more than probable, when they permitted Ezekiel Polk to be chosen sheriff.

That Gen. Jackson did not think so, is shown already, for he says that "all the Polks were Seventy-Six Whigs."

Maj. Thomas Alexander did not think so, as appears beyond doubt, when he declared that this "charge of toryism is false," though he had stated before that Ezekiel Polk had "taken protection."

That Mr. Reuben Hood did not think so also appears, when he declared that "many Whigs were compelled to take protection."

That Mr. George Alexander did not think so also appears, when he said "that Ezekiel Polk, with many others, took protection (after the country was overrun) to save his property," etc.; but "that he was a tory or acted in anywise with the British" he considered a slander against him, and false.

That Mr. Daniel Alexander did not think so appears also; for he declares that "it was considered by a majority of Whigs as necessary, and not improper, to take protection, etc., thereby to save their property from destruction."

That Messrs. John Smith, Thomas Gribble, and George Oliver did not think so, appears by all of them solemnly declaring the contrary.

No: the spirit of the martyred Hayne, who was compelled to "take protection" cries from his honored tomb to denounce this uncharitable proposition—this unwarranted slander.

The chivalrous Pickens, who left behind him a revolutionary fame which no language of mine could brighten, and his men fought "with halters around their necks," had been constrained to "take protection," and all his family and his countrymen have a right to exclaim. The spirit of America herself cries out against this modern doctrine of modern Whigs.

The distinguished Maj. Lile and all his regiment "took protection" under the necessities of an invaded country, overrun and for a time conquered by the British.

History informs us (see Johnson's Life of Green, page 292) how he was obliged to array himself with his regiment in the enemy's line! Whilst the British troops hovered near them, and no American force was in view to protect them, the men patiently submitted to be marshaled under "his majesty's commission;" but when the opportunity offered Maj. Lile and all his men marched again to the American standard. And were they, too, Tories and, enemies of their country?

---

## MAJOR CHARLES ROBERTSON AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

---

[Judge Moreland points out below some errors in the interesting sketch of "Charles Robertson and his descendants," published in the last issue of this magazine. In addition to what he has mentioned, an inadvertant error mentioned Julius Cæsar Nichols Robertson as a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of Tennessee in 1836-37. The date should have been 1834.]

PORTLAND, OREGON, Feb. 11, 1898.

To the Editor:

In the AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE for January is an account of Major Charles Robertson and some of his descendants. As one of his descendants, I was very glad to see the same and read it with much interest, and it contains to me much valuable information, but there are some errors therein as to the descendants of George

Robertson, one of the sons of Charles Robertson, which ought to be corrected. I therefore send you the following:

There were born to George Robertson and Susan Nelson Robertson, twelve children. I am not certain as to the dates of their birth except Charles Robertson was the oldest, and Wiley B. was the youngest. Their names were as follows:

Charles, unmarried, who fought at New Orleans under General Jackson, and was supposed to have died there shortly after that battle.

Alfred, who died in infancy.

Nichols, died when about sixteen years of age.

Alfred, who was mentioned in said article.

Elizabeth, also mentioned.

Thomas, who, I think, died unmarried, and who was also at the battle of New Orleans.

William, who was also mentioned.

Julius Cæsar, who was mentioned in said article as having been the son of Alfred Robertson. He was the son of George Robertson, and a brother of Alfred. After the death of his older brother Nichols, at the request of his mother, he added the name Nichols to his name, and also signed himself J. C. N. Robertson. I have a number of his letters written in clear bold hand, until advancing years and infirmity made him almost blind, when his letters to me are written by another hand. He was a Brigadier General in the Indian Wars in 1832, and I think was not at New Orleans as mentioned in said article. He was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Masons of Tennessee in 1837. Afterwards he removed to Mississippi where he was prominent in the affairs of the State. Was candidate on the Bell and Everett ticket for presidential elector in 1860. Stumped the State of Mississippi in their behalf, making earnest appeals for the preservation of the Union, but when his State seceded, he went with it, and while too old to enter the Confederate Army, rendered valuable service to that cause.



Rosamond, mentioned.

John F., mentioned.

Susan, my mother, is also mentioned.

Wiley Blount was the youngest of the children. He was born, not in 1808, but was younger than my mother, and she was born Jan. 14th, 1809. She married the Rev. Jesse Moreland in 1827. Removed to Illinois in 1848. Crossed the Plains in 1852 to Oregon, where she died Feb. 8th, 1859. She was the mother of nine children, as follows:

Wesley, who died at Corinth, Miss., Jan. 23, 1862, a Captain in an Iowa regiment of the Union Army. He had been wounded two or three times, but died of sickness.

Sarah J. married M. M. Owen, now living at Portland, Ore.

Martha, died in Illinois in 1850.

Martha Cooper married F. W. Robertson, now living in Oregon.

William, now living in Oregon.

Samuel A., died in Portland in 1886.

Ann Eliza, married John Calvert, and died 1857.

Josephine, died in 1860.

Julius Cæsar, married Abbie B. Kline, is now living in Portland, Ore.

Permit me also to add that I am very much interested in the work your magazine is doing in rescuing so much of past history and putting it into shape for preservation. Our descendants years afterwards, will read your magazine with interest.

With thanks for your energy and perseverance in the good work in which you are engaged,

Yours truly,

J. C. MORELAND.

## THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI.

---

Maj. Charles L. Davis, U. S. A., Secretary of the North Carolina Society of the Cincinnati published in the *Farmer and Mechanic*, of Raleigh, N. C., Feb. 22, 1898, an interesting account of the original organization of the Society of Cincinnati. We quote below extracts showing the organization of the North Carolina Division of this illustrious Society in 1783, and its reorganization in 1896:

The North Carolina Society of the Cincinnati had but a short existence and no trace of its records or original funds can be found. It was organized at Hillsborough, N. C., in the latter part of October, 1783, with Gen. Jethro Sumner as President, and Chaplain Adam Boyd as Secretary, with sixty-one members, being about half of those who were eligible under the "Institution." Its delegates selected to attend the meeting of the General Society at Philadelphia, in the following May, were Lieut. Col. Archibald Lytle, Maj. Reading Blount and Maj. Griffith John McRee, the last named two of whom were present on that occasion. It is known to have held annual meetings at Fayetteville, N. C., on July 4, 1784, and July 4, 1785, and at Halifax, N. C., July 4, 1786.

This is the last known assemblage of the North Carolina Society although it is known to have been represented by one or more delegates to the meetings of the General Society in 1787 and 1790. At the meeting of the Society in 1785, Lieut. Col. John Baptiste Ashe, Brevet Major Howell Tatum and Brevet Major Robert Fenner were elected respectively, President, Secretary and

Treasurer. So far as now known, there is no further record of this Society until, on April 4, 1896, at Raleigh, N. C., ten qualified descendants of its original members revived and re-organized it and it is now in a flourishing condition. At a meeting of the General Society, in Philadelphia, May 13, 1896, it was with the Delaware Society, provisionally recognized and anticipates full fellowship at the General Society next triennial meeting in 1899.

The *Raleigh News and Observer* of Feb. 23, 1898 contains the following account of the meeting of this Society:

The North Carolina Society of the Cincinnati met in the State Library at 10:30 o'clock yesterday morning. There were present all the officers excepting Treasurer, Jno. C. Daves, of Baltimore, and all the rural members from the nearby vicinity. After prayer by the Chaplain, Rt. Rev. J. B. Cheshire, Jr., and the reading of the original institution by the Chaplain, the proceedings of the last meeting, and of the Standing Committee, the Secretary's and Treasurer's reports were read, and also the report of the committee on obtaining appropriations from Congress for monuments to Generals Nash and Davidson, to which committee Col. Bennehan Cameron was added.

The Society adopted a seal and form of certificate of membership which follows in design the original made in France in 1784. It also passed resolutions of respect to Col. Wm. Polk, deceased, of Rapides Parish, La., a descendant of one of the original members of the Society, and extended its sympathy to the New York Society of the Cincinnati in the affliction they have suffered by the recent decease of their President, Gen. John Cochran.

Several interesting papers were read connected with Revolutionary affairs. One of which related to an instance of cruelty upon a private of the North Carolina line, captured at Charleston, May 12, 1780, upon his refusal to do menial duty.

The following members were elected: Rowland Al-

ston, Charleston, S. C., great-grand-nephew of Capt. Samuel Ashe, Jr.; Bertram S. Daves, Charlotte, N. C., great-great-grand-nephew of Capt. James Reid; James A. Hadley, Brentwood, Tenn., grandson of Capt. Joshua Hadley, and in succession to his brother, D. P. Hadley, who died February 8, 1897; John B. Loyd, Brooklyn, N. Y., great-great-grandson of Lieutenant Wm. Loyd; Dr. Richard R. Lytle, of New York City, grandson of Capt. Wm. Lytle; Marion D. Lytle, Kansas City, Mo., grand nephew of Lieut. Col. Archibald Lytle; Joseph MacLean, Decatur, Ga., great-grandson of Surgeon Wm. MacLean; Wm. Polk, of Rapides Parish, La., great-grandson of Maj. Wm. Polk; and in succession to his father, Col. Wm. Polk, who died January 24, 1898; Buswell de'Graffenreid Waddell, great-grandson of Brigadier General Francis Nash, who died October 7, 1777, of wounds received at Germantown, October 4, 1777; Maj. B. F. Carter, of Pulaski, Tenn., grand-nephew of Capt. Benjamin Carter; Wm. D. Dearing, of Savannah, Ga., great-grandson of Lieut. Thomas Pasteur.

After benediction by the Chaplain, the Society adjourned to meet July 4, 1898, at a place to be hereafter selected by a standing committee. The meeting will doubtless be held either at Greensboro, to take in Guilford Court House battlefield, or at Farintosh, the country seat of Col. Bennehan Cameron, Stagville.

The members dined at the Yarborough, and were entertained in the evening by Mr. Marshal D. Haywood.

In connection with this Society, Hon. Flournoy Rivers of Pulaski has kindly furnished the Magazine with the following list, prepared by Maj. Charles L. Davis, Secretary; showing the names of some officers of the North Carolina Continental Line, whose descendants have not yet been discovered, one direct or collateral descendant of whom, in each case, might establish the right to membership in the North Carolina Society of the Cincinnati. The absence from this list of many well-known names is due to

the fact that their descendents have already been enrolled.

Col. James Armstrong—wounded at Stono Ferry; served over three years.

Lieut. Col. John Armstrong—served through the entire war.

Maj. Pinketham Eaton—killed at Augusta, June 5, 1781.

Maj. William Fenner.

Maj. Pleasant Henderson—died in Carroll Co. Tenn., age 78.

Maj. John Nelson—Franklin Co. Tenn.

Maj. Jonathan Tipton—died in Overton Co. Tenn., Jan'y 18, 1883, aged 84.

Maj. John White—(Col. of a Ga. Regt. when wounded), died of wounds received at Savannah, Oct. 9, 1779.

Capt. *Thomas Armstrong*. Wounded and prisoner several times. Served through the war.

Capt. William Armstrong. Wounded; served through the war.

Capt. John Baker.

Capt. Joshua Bowman—killed at Ramsour's Mills, June 20, 1780.

Capt. James Campbell—mortally wounded at Stono Ferry, June 20, 1779.

Capt. Francis Child—served over three years; prisoner at Charleston May 12, 1780.

Capt. John Craddock—served through the war.

Capt. *Samuel Denny*.

Capt. ——— Dobson—killed at Ramsour's Mills, June 20, 1780.

Capt. Thomas Evans—served through the war.

Capt. William Fawn—served through the war.

Capt. *Robert Fenner*—served through the war.

Capt. ——— Gee—wounded at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Capt. Christopher Goodin—killed at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Capt. William Goodman—killed at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Capt. *Clement Hall*—Davidson Co. Tenn., died Aug. 4, 1824. aged 71.

Capt. John Ingles—prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780; served through the war.

Capt. Samuel Jones—served through the war.

Capt. James King—died, 1780, in captivity at Charleston, S. C.

Capt. John Kingsbury—prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780.

Capt. Micajah Lewis—died Feby. 28, 1781 of wounds received as Major of militia.

Capt. John McNees—prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780; served through the war.

Capt. *Joseph Montford*—killed by Indians, Apl. 27, 1792, as an officer of the U. S. Army.

Capt. Elijah Moore—served through the war.

Capt. Isaac Moore—died in service July 10, 1778.

Capt. James Peasley—served to close of the war.

Capt. Denny Porterfield—killed at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Capt. *Robert Raiford*—served to close of the war.

Capt. Jesse Reed—served to close of the war; several times a prisoner.

Capt. *Joseph T. Rhodes*—served to close of the war; wounded at Stono Ferry, June 20, 1779.

Capt. Anthony Sharp—served to close of the war.

Capt. *John Slaughter*—served to close of the war; died August, 1830.

Capt. Charles Stewart—served to close of the war.

Capt. John Sumners—served to close of the war.

Capt. *Howell Tatum*. Owned lands in Rutherford Co. Tenn., died at Autaugville, Ala.

Capt. Daniel Williams,—died in Dickson Co. Tenn. July 16, 1831.

Lieut. Thos Allen—died in captivity at Charleston, Aug. 26, 1780.

Lieut. Richard Andrews—wounded at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Lieut. John Bledsoe—Carroll Co. Tenn., died aged 72.

Lieut. *William Bush*—served to close of the war.

Lieut. *John Campbell*—served to close of the war; (10th, N. C. Inftry.)

Lieut. John Campbell—served to close of the war (2nd Continental Artillery).

Lieut. *Thomas Clark*—served to close of the war.

Lieut. James Clark, Sr—Madison Co. Tenn., died aged 93.

Lieut. John Clendennin—served to close of the war; prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780.

Lieut. Arthur Cotgrave—served to close of the war; prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780.

Lieut. Robert Cowden—Bedford Co. Tenn., died aged 80.

Lieut. Anthony Crutcher—served to close of the war.

Lieut. Joshua Curtiss—Davidson Co. Tenn., died aged 84.

Lieut. Charles Dixon—served to close of the war; wounded at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Lieut. Thomas Dudley—served to close of the war; wounded at Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781.

Lieut. *Thomas Finney*—served to close of the war.

Lieut. *John Foard*—served to close of the war.

Lieut. *Charles Gerard*. Left no issue, collateral descendants desired to be heard from.

Lieut. *Francis Graves*—served to close of the war.

Lieut. Nathan Green—died in Henderson Co. Tenn., aged 75.

Lieut. Samuel Handley; died in Franklin Co. Tenn., aged 82.

Lieut. William Hargrave; served to close of the war; died in Alabama, aged 85.

Lieut. William Harrison; died in Rutherford Co. Tenn. June 22, 1833, aged 84.

Lieut. Anthony Hart; served to close of the war, descendants probably in Kentucky.

Lieut. *Robert Hays*; served to close of the war. Was Colonel of Tennessee Militia. See Ramsey's Annals, p. 465.

Lieut. William Hilton; killed at Stony Point, July 15, 1779.

Lieut. *Hardy Holmes*; served to close of the war.

Lieut. Joseph Johnson; served to close of the war.

Lieut. James Karr; died in Logan Co. Ky., Mar. 13, 1823.

Lieut. Joel Lewis; wounded at King's Mountain, Oct. 7, 1780; died near Nashville Tenn. Nov. 22, 1816.

Lieut. Philip Lowe; 2nd N. C. Regt.; retired Jany. 1, 1781, as Lt. Col. of a Ga. Regt.

Lieut. Dixon Marshall; prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780, died in Smith Co. Tenn. Aug. 22, 1824, aged 72.

Lieut. James Moore; wounded at Eutaw Springs; served to close of the war.

Lieut. Robert Nicholson; died in Virginia, May 21, 1819.

Lieut. John Redpath; killed, Oct. 13, 1777.

Lieut. John Rice; died in Virginia, Apl. 23, 1828, aged 82.

Lieut. Patrick Rogers; died in service, Apl. 19, 1771.

Lieut. John Rowan; died, July 27, 1825.

Lieut. James Scurlock; in service at close of the war.

Lieut. Daniel Shaw; in service at close of the war.

Lieut. Stephen Southall; Continental Artillery; retired Jany. 1, 1781.

Lieut. Jesse Steed; went to Tennessee.

Lieut. John C. Vance; served over 4 years; died, 1824, in Virginia (?).

Lieut. William Walker; died in Hamlin Co. Tenn., aged 74.

Lieut. Nathaniel Williams, B retired Jany. 1, 1783.

Lieut. Joseph Worth; died in service April 6, 1777.

Ensign William Charlton; mortally wounded at Stono Ferry.

Ensign Ethelred Dance; died Feby. 4, 1828.

Ensign William Hargis; died in White Co. Tenn., aged 92.

Ensign James McCrory; died in Pickens Co. Ala., June 23, 1829.

Cornet James McDougall.

Ensign Joseph McLemny (or Lemmy) died in service July 1776.

Ensign Maurice Moore, Jr.; killed Jany. 18, 1776.

Ensign Benjamin Parker; lived, after the war, in Hall Co. Ga.

Ensign William Rose; lived, after the war, in Whitley Co. Ky.

Ensign John Rust; lived, after the war, in Monroe Co. Ky.

Ensign Thomas Shute; died, Jany. 5, 1819.

Ensign Charles Triplett; died in service December, 1776.

Surgeon Joseph Blythe; served to close of the war.

Surgeon James W. Green; served to the close of the war.

Surgeon Jonathan Loomis; served to the close of the war.

Surgeon Robert Williams; served 3 years.

Chaplain James Tate, served 3 years.

Information is especially desired with reference to descendants of Brevet Major Howell Tatum of the North Carolina Line. He was Secretary of the Society of Cincinnati, and his descendants might supply some trace of its early records. He removed to Tennessee in 1790, and became a distinguished man. Communications may be

sent to this Magazine, to Hon. Flournoy Rivers, of Pualaski, Tenn.; or to Maj. Charles L. Davis, Asheville, N. C.

---

### NOTES AND QUERIES:

---

**CAPT. JOHN BLACKMORE:**—Mr. Archibald Means, of Peru, Ill., would be glad to receive any information concerning the antecedents, or descendants of Capt. John Blackmore, who formed one of Col. John Donelson's party of pioneers, in the spring of 1780.

He is called Captain in Donelson's Journal and had a boat of his own. Ramsey's "Annals," pages 199 and 203. Possibly searches in the deed and will books and early court records of Davidson and Sumner Counties would aid.

**SUBLETT, SOBLET:**—Mr. S. S. Sublet, of Sublett, P. O., Powhatan County, Va., has published an interesting and valuable brochure of the descendants of the immigrant Soblet, who came to the Huguenot Colony at Mannikin Town (King William's Town) in September, 1700.

For many years in the earlier part of the 18th century one of the family was the parish clerk there.

Mr. Sublet has spent his long life within a few miles of where his ancestor settled 200 years ago. The name is well-known in Tennessee and persons interested should avail themselves of this opportunity to learn authentic history compiled from the will and deed books and court records of Powhatan, Cumberland and Goochland Counties, Va.



## EDITORIAL NOTES.

---

The following valuable contributions, unavoidably omitted in this number of the Magazine, will appear in the next issue:

"The Hon. Joseph Anderson and Some of his Distinguished Relatives and Descendants," by Mrs. Charles Fairfax Henley, Mountainville, Tenn.; "Invincible Tennesseans," by Wm. Goodrich, Philadelphia, Pa.; "Some Huguenot Mementoes," by Hon. Flournoy Rivers, Pulaski, Tenn.; "Holland, Gilbert and Other Genealogical Sketches," by Hon. Flournoy Rivers, Pulaski, Tenn., "The Grade List of the Old Nashville Female Academy for 1824." "The Correspondence of Gen. James Robertson," also, unavoidably omitted, will be resumed.

---

In spite of every effort to prevent, inadvertent mistakes, and typographical errors sometimes occur. These are pointed out and corrected as soon as detected. It is the purpose of the Magazine to be correct, even in minor matters. Our thanks will always be accorded to any of our correspondents who are kind enough to draw attention to any inaccuracy.

In the January number, 1897, on page 57, the following sentence, "737. Maggie Mai Ragsdale, born Jan. 29, 1884," should read, "737. Maggie Mai Ragsdale, born Jan. 29, 1894."

In the October number, 1897, on page 308, the date of the organization of Williamson County should be 1799, instead of "1779."

In the January number, 1898, page 30, the date when Julius Cæsar Nichols Robertson was a delegate to the

Constitutional Convention of Tennessee should be 1834, instead of "1836 to 37."

In the same number the statement that Ezekiel Polk was sheriff of Tryon County, N. C., in 1763, should be that he was clerk of Tryon County in 1769.

---

Published by Elliot Stock, 62, Paternoster Row, London: The Antiquary, a magazine devoted to the study of the past. Price 6d. monthly. The Genealogical Magazine, a journal of family history, heraldry and pedigrees. Price, 1s. monthly.

---

Arrangements have been made with the Goodpasture Book Company to act as General Agents of the Magazine. Hereafter, all subscriptions to the Magazine, and all communications on business should be addressed to Goodpasture Book Company, 222 Union Street, Nashville, Tenn.

Communications in reference to editorial matters should be addressed, as heretofore, to W. R. Garrett, editor, 813 South Summer Street, Nashville, Tenn.

---

### THE NORTH CAROLINA LINE.

---

Genealogists and persons seeking information relative to their Revolutionary ancestors of North Carolina, may be interested to know that there is in the library of the Tennessee Historical Society a copy of the old publication, showing the final settlements of North Carolina with her Revolutionary soldiers.

This copy is in fragile condition, and will not bear rough handling. It is without title page, and has nothing to designate the date of its publication, except that its contents show that it must have been printed subsequent to 1793.



Then follows a list of final settlements made by the Comptroller. This list shows that the total numbering reached above 91,000.

The last list shows the settlements made at Hillsborough, 1792.

Among the names on the illustrious record of patriots preserved in this book are many familiar in Tennessee; such as "Hardy Murfree," "William Lytle," "William Polk," "Howel Tatum," "James Overton," "John Manning," "John Thompson," etc.

---

### COLONIAL MOBILE.

---

Colonial Mobile, An Historical Study, largely from Original Sources, of the Alabama-Tombigbee Basin from the Discovery of Mobile Bay in 1519 until the Demolition of Fort Charlotte in 1821. 8 vo., pp. 446. By Peter J. Hamilton, A.M., Late Fellow of Princeton; author of "Rambles in Historic Lands," etc. Illustrated, Boston and New York: Houghton, Mifflin & Company, 1897.

This excellent contribution to the study of the early history of the South is devoted especially to the section of our country tributary to the Alabama-Tombigbee River basin. As the author correctly states in his preface, it is an "unexhausted, in part an almost untrodden, literary field." Spain, France and England all owned, and all lost this territory. The oldness of the settlement, together with its many changes of owners and nationalities, has given the author much material of an entertaining character of which he has availed himself with industry and intelligence.

While the book is of especial interest to the section about which it is written, it is, nevertheless, still well worthy the careful reading and study of any one interested in the early development and history of our common country.

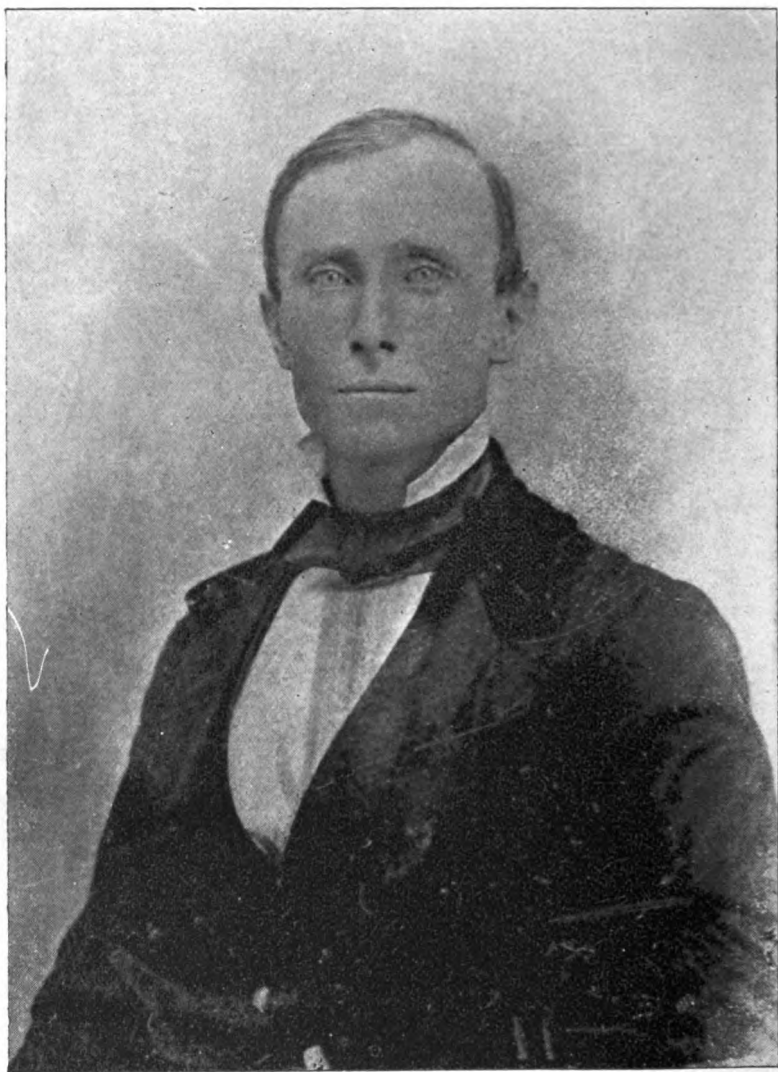
**LIFE AND TIMES OF ARCHBISHOP GRINDAL**, with some account of his kith and kin briefly described. In the Press. Price \$1.00. Pamphlet. (Limited number printed for private circulation only.)

The Rising of the North (1569) and the Reformation. The Winders of Larton. The Winder family of Somerset Co., Maryland, John Winder, William Dacre, and Thomas Wyberg (ancestors of Sir Wilfred Lawson, Bart.,—by change of name)—gents who married the Archbishop's nieces—Rev. Thos. Jefferson—Jonathan Winder one of the two chairmen of United Trade Council of India (1706)—Edward Stephenson, Governor of Calcutta (died 1768).

Compiled by F. A. Winder, E. Southsea, England.

To be obtained from F. A. Winder, or Miss Mary Winder Garrett, Williamsburg, Va.





**WILLIAM WALKER.**

(From an old Daguerreotype, belonging to the Tennessee  
Historical Society.)

THE  
AMERICAN HISTORICAL  
MAGAZINE,

REPRESENTING THE CHAIR OF AMERICAN  
HISTORY IN THE PEABODY  
NORMAL COLLEGE.



DEVOTED ESPECIALLY TO THE HISTORY OF  
TENNESSEE AND ADJOINING STATES.

---

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE PEABODY NORMAL  
COLLEGE, AT NASHVILLE, TENN.

---

W. R. GARRETT, Editor.  
W. R. PAYNE, Business Manager.

---

\$3.00 PER ANNUM.

SINGLE NUMBER, 85 CENTS.

University Press, Nashville, Tenn.





# THE American Historical Magazine.

---

VOL. III.

JULY, 1898.

No. 3.

---

WILLIAM WALKER.

BY JOHN M. BASS.

Of the millions of people who make up the population of the United States an infinitesimally small proportion have ever heard of William Walker. Of these some remember him as a man who made war on a country with which his own was at peace, falling therefore within the general definition of filibuster; others know of him only by his romantic career, or by the fanciful sobriquet which he either assumed or permitted his friends to give him; others know of him as one who contemplated the extension to Central America of the slave system already moribund in the United States, and by this promise sought Southern support for his plans; others who had commercial interests in Nicaragua regarded him as an unscrupulous adventurer and to this class he largely owed his ruin.

The men who followed him and shared his fortunes, even to death, knew him not as the advance agent of the slave holder; nor as the self-proposed founder of a Central American republic; nor as one who sought to free Sonora and Nicaragua from the oppression of unjust rulers or the horrors of annual revolution. They knew, in fact, little of his plans; but Walker had qualities which have always commanded the admiration and sup-

port of men. He was cool and decided; he was just and faithful to his friends; but above all, his men, brave themselves to recklessness, worshiped his magnificent courage.

William Walker was born in Nashville, May 8, 1824. His father, James Walker, was a Scotchman, who was first a merchant, then president of the Commercial Insurance Company at Nashville; and his mother's name, Norvell, would indicate that she also was Scotch. Both parents are described as of strong and somewhat stern character. There is little memorable in the early years of the man who became successively a doctor, lawyer, editor, president of a republic, major general and president of another republic, the subject of deep concern to England, a thorn in the side of two administrations in the United States, and yet died at thirty-six. He is described by his contemporaries, many of whom yet live, as cold, quiet, studious, painfully modest; slight, effeminate, almost insignificant in appearance. One says of him that he was uncompanionable, and another speaks of him as a boy who remained long in apron strings.

He was graduated from the University of Nashville in 1838, and from the Medical College of the University of Philadelphia in 1843. In this class from Tennessee were Drs. W. A. Cheatham, J. P. McFarland and John Berrien Lindsley; and another member of it was Elisha Kane, the explorer, whom fate led to find the seed of mortal disease in the far North as Walker found bloody death in the far South.

Walker completed his medical studies in Edinburgh and then traveled in Europe. He seems on his return to have remained but a short time at Nashville, and went to New Orleans where he studied law and became an editor. He remained there till 1850 when he went to California, but before leaving New Orleans he had been offended by an article in a rival paper, and going direct to the office of the author had severely cowhided him. At San Francisco one of his editorials brought on him for contempt of

court a sentence of fine and imprisonment. He there fought two duels, in one of which he was shot in the foot and by scraping sand over the blood with his other foot attempted to conceal his injury and get another shot. It is said he was all his life unskilled in the use of fire-arms.

Giving up journalism he practiced law at Maryville, thence visited Sonora, and on his return to California began his plans for colonization. He made an unsuccessful effort to obtain a contract or concession from Mexico for the establishment of a colony in Sonora which would protect it from the Apaches. A similar concession had been made to a French company which had proved unsatisfactory to Mexico and disastrous to its projectors. Walker not deterred by the absence of Mexican permission secured a small vessel, some money and men, and sailing from San Francisco toward Sonora, seized on Nov. 3, 1853, the town of La Paz in Lower California, capturing its governor and archives. Whatever promises of support he had either in Sonora or from friends in San Francisco it was unparalleled audacity to take forcible possession of a whole State with forty-three men. Walker was no buccaneer to fill his vessel with booty and flee. He remained to erect a republic which he called Sonora and which included the State of that name and Lower California, held an election by which he was chosen president, issued a Declaration of Independence, a proclamation, formed a cabinet and established offices the filling of which reduced his army to thirty-four men, and wrote his friends that his government was formed upon a firm and sure basis. Recruits soon arrived from San Francisco, but these were of a character so lawless that two were soon court-martialed and shot; two others were publicly whipped from camp, and a number of others disarmed and permitted to leave.

Walker began again his movement toward Sonora and having no vessel with which to cross the Gulf of

California marched the whole length of Lower California and, crossing the Colorado River on rafts, finally reached the long-sought, but inhospitable territory, which without its knowledge he had incorporated into his new republic. Here Walker met repeated reverses and his little force was daily diminished by disease, desertion and battle. He began a reluctant retreat toward the American frontier and harassed at every mile by Mexicans and Indians, he reached San Diego, May 8, 1854, and there surrendered his army, thirty-four in all, to an officer of the United States. The party were paroled to appear for trial for violation of the neutrality laws of the United States, and thus ended the six months' existence of the Independent Republic of Sonora.

Of his next expedition Walker has left a detailed and apparently accurate account in his book published in 1860, three years after his expulsion, and entitled the *War in Nicaragua*. His plans for this were laid with greater care than those for his first experiment in building republics. There had been aimed at him from Washington in January, 1854, a presidential proclamation in which Mr. Pierce had urged all United States officers civil and military to use every effort to arrest and bring to trial all persons engaged in filibustering; and in the following December in his second annual message to Congress he again alludes to filibustering plans and says, "the energy and activity of our civil and military authorities have frustrated the designs of those who meditated expeditions of this character except in two instances. One of these composed of foreigners," (this was the French company), "was at first countenanced by the Mexican government itself; it having been deceived as to their real object. The other small in number succeeded in reaching the Mexican territories; but the effective measures taken by this Government compelled the abandonment of the undertaking," and in his third annual message Dec. 31, 1855, seven months after Walker had sailed for Nic-

aragua, the President appeals to Americans to abstain from unlawful intervention in the affairs of Nicaragua and rather complacently refers to his "preventive measures which on a similar occasion had the best results in securing the peace of Sonora and Lower California."

The preventive measures seem to have been that Walker gladly surrendered to a United States officer after his return from Sonora and was paroled for a trial at which he was promptly acquitted.

Walker was therefore now anxious to fix his legal status, and for this purpose an associate went to Nicaragua. This was an inviting field; its territory touched both oceans and was easily accessible from California and the Southern States whence Walker ultimately drew his recruits. Its people were idle and regardless of public affairs. It controlled the great lake and was then engaged in a civil war which might be made to enure to the benefit of a bold outsider.

The contract obtained by his associate, Walker rejected for the reason that it was in violation of the neutrality laws of the United States.

The associate returned and in December, 1854, secured a contract from the leader of one of the two rival factions of Nicaragua, and who being in possession of most of the country was probably the *de facto* president; under this contract, which Walker accepted, he was to land three hundred colonists, liable to military duty, in Nicaragua, who were to receive fixed monthly wages, and a land grant of fifty thousand acres and become citizens if they chose.

Walker submitted this contract to the United States District Attorney at San Francisco, to General Wool then in command of the Pacific Division and to Col. Jno. C. Fremont, who were satisfied with the legality of the scheme and encouraged it.

Walker admits in his book that he did not think it proper to communicate to these gentlemen his views for the extension of slavery.

This time there was no attempt at concealment and it was subsequently asserted in Congress that when Walker sailed from San Francisco he was saluted by cannon of the American government under the national flag. His force was a fourth larger than his Sonora army, for he now had fifty-six men, six of whom had served in his first expedition.

Walker says of his comrades, "they were most of them men of strong character, tired of the hum-drum of common life and ready for a career which might bring them the sweets of adventure or the rewards of fame."

Landing in Nicaragua, June 15, 1855, the adventurers were on the 20th mustered into the Democratic Army as the American Phalanx, of which Walker was regularly commissioned colonel; on the 23rd had started on a campaign; on the 29th attacked the town of Rivas which was defended by six hundred legitimists, outnumbering Walker's nominal force three to one and his actual force ten to one; and on the 30th were in full but orderly retreat, having lost eighteen men, including the Lieutenant Colonel and Major of the Phalanx. The dates are given to show the decision of the man. They had killed three hundred of the enemy and had learned how little confidence could be placed in the courage or fidelity of their native allies. One hundred and ten of these who had been incorporated into the Phalanx quietly disappeared almost at the first shot, and Colonel Walker had reason to believe that notice of his intended attack on the town had been given to the enemy by his own commander-in-chief, General Munoz.

The history of one battle is with varying results the history of twelve. Always fighting superior numbers and nearly always victorious; usually the attacking party; frequently short of ammunition and forced to melt church bells and old iron into shot; without certain supplies of food or medicine, Walker had to rely only on the superior organization, marksmanship and bravery of his little

band of Americans and his own indomitable courage and fortitude.

In October, 1855, the two parties in Nicaragua made a treaty of peace, and this has been said to be largely the result of the efficient military service of Walker and his men; a provisional government was formed; Rivas, a Nicaraguan was made executive for fourteen months unless an election was ordered sooner, and Walker made commander-in-chief of the army with the rank of General of Division. In taking the oath of office Walker knelt before the crucifix and the symbols of the Catholic church.

Three weeks after the formation of the new government Walker had intercepted treasonable letters from its Minister of War to friends in Honduras. This man was quickly tried by a court martial composed of Americans and promptly shot.

In June, 1856, Commander-in-Chief Walker issued an address to the people of Nicaragua reciting the misdeeds of the administration (of which he had been a member for nine months) denouncing it for its crimes, declaring it dissolved and announcing that he in the name of the people had "organized a provisional government until the nation exercises its natural right of electing its own rulers."

It is almost needless to add that by the exercise of this natural right Walker was elected, and, on July 12th, was with all due civil and religious observances inaugurated President of the Republic of Nicaragua.

He immediately formed a cabinet composed of natives and a week later officially received the United States Minister who began the usual address with the sentence, "I am directed by the President of the United States to notify you that I am instructed to establish relations with this State." Walker in writing of this incident says, "It is true the Government at Washington had so instructed its minister, but at the time it was not expected that Walker would be in possession of the Nicaraguan gov-



ernment." The President of the United States had formally recognized as President of the Republic of Nicaragua the man against whom he was periodically issuing proclamations as a criminal; against whose plans he had warned all law-abiding Americans and to whose arrest he had urged all United States officers.

Walker before his election as president had found the other Central American States suspicious and jealous of the rapidly growing American influence in Nicaragua. In March, 1856, the President of Costa Rica had declared war, not against Nicaragua, but against the filibusters in her service, and in this the three other States ultimately joined.

There had been organized some years prior to these events in New York a corporation named the American Atlantic and Pacific Ship Canal Company, commonly called the Transit Company, with Cornelius Vanderbilt as President, and stockholders in America and England.

It was to furnish transportation for freight, mail and passengers by land and water across Nicaragua between the two oceans; to build a canal, or a railroad if the canal was impracticable and for its franchise was to pay the Government \$10,000 per year and one tenth of its net profits. It was claimed by Walker that the company owed Nicaragua more than \$250,000, had failed to build either canal or railroad, had violated its charters in various ways and when called on to adjust these differences had treated the demand with contempt. Legal proceedings had been started before Walker became president by which the company's charters had been revoked, its property seized and declared forfeited, and a new charter given in 1856, to some American friends of Walker. Walker had heretofore encountered only the difficulties which beset one engaged in similar enterprises; but by his policy toward the Transit Company he had created a new and formidable opponent. He had challenged Wall Street and it responded promptly.

As some of the stockholders of the company were English its local agents were authorized to invoke the aid, in the protection of its property, of the commander of any man-of-war of her Britannic Majesty's navy; vessels of the American and English navy appeared on the Nicaraguan coast; the Nicaraguan Minister at Washington found his position rendered so unpleasant that he resigned; the Costa Rican Consul General at London received from the English government an offer of two thousand rifles at a reduced price; one writer states, though Walker does not, that the President of Costa Rica received a large check from the President of the Transit Company to aid in prosecuting the war against Walker, and several of Mr. Pierce's later and Mr. Buchanan's earlier messages call the attention of Congress to the destruction of private property of American citizens in Nicaragua and the obstruction to transportation of mail and passengers over the Transit route.

The four other republics of Central America with many malcontent Nicaraguans waged an aggressive and merciless war against Walker. His men began to desert in whole companies, and after a long and bloody defense of the town of Rivas, the scene of his first battle, and when his army was eating the flesh of mules and dogs, with many protests and remonstrances against what he denounced as unwarranted and outrageous interference, he yielded to the peremptory order of surrender of Captain Davis of the United States war ship *St. Mary*. He stipulated for the protection of himself and men, and particularly for that of his Nicaraguan allies who were to remain in the country, then broke up his artillery, burned his stores and magazines, and riding defiantly at the head of his army of 462 sick, wounded and hungry men, left Nicaragua. But not for long.

He had held the country for twenty months, and had during that time drawn to his desperate cause 2,843 men, mostly from California. There were in addition some

native volunteers and conscripts; and it has been estimated, that first and last, he had 3,500 men. He lost about one third of his Americans, and the reports of his surgeons show that the proportion of wounds treated was 137 to every 100 men. The allied army had about 20,000 men and some Indian auxiliaries, and lost nearly half, which was largely due to cholera. It is worthy of mention that the course of Captain Davis in forcing Walker to surrender and leave the country did not become a matter of national attention in America or excite the indignation of Walker's friends, as did similar action by Commodore Paulding later.

Walker, on his return to the United States, was received everywhere, from New York to New Orleans with the greatest enthusiasm, except at Washington. The writer saw him at Nashville in a carriage surrounded by hundreds of people. He made speeches at Nashville, Murfreesboro and elsewhere in which he declared his intention of returning to Nicaragua, and in the newspapers he invited men to join him.

At Washington, where he remained ten days, he addressed an open letter to the President, and protested against the action of the officers of the United States government by which he, the lawful President of Nicaragua, had been driven from his office and his country. The matter was referred by the State Department to Congress and was heard of no more.

Walker set about the organization of another expedition, was arrested, tried at New Orleans and acquitted. Within two weeks he landed 200 men at the mouth of the San Juan River in Nicaragua, almost under the guns of the United States ship *Saratoga*, whose Captain, Chataud, made no effort to stop him, though he had been evidently sent there for that purpose. Part of Walker's force immediately captured a town and several river steamers; the rest went into camp to await reinforcement. Within a short time the United States frigate *Wabash*

came into the port, having on board Com. Hiram Paulding, who demanded Walker's surrender, and backed up the order by landing 350 armed men and bringing the guns of his ship to bear on Walker's camp.

Walker surrendered and was paroled. The administration had time to realize that Paulding's armed entry into Nicaragua was clearly in violation of all the neutrality acts and when Walker presented himself at Washington he was informed that the Government did not recognize him as a prisoner. . Mr. Buchanan in a message to Congress pronounced Paulding's action as a grave error, which if unrebuked and allowed to become a precedent, might give serious trouble to the Government, and warned him in future not to exceed his instructions or legal authority; but added that no one had the right to object but Nicaragua; she had not complained and probably would not.

Notwithstanding Mr. Buchanan's assertion there were men in Congress who thought they did have the right to object; Paulding's course became the subject of Congressional investigation and started a discussion which went on at intervals for months.

The House Committee on Foreign Affairs reported against the legality of Walker's arrest; the report was saddled with an amendment endorsing Paulding and extending to every man on the two ships the thanks of Congress for the arrest. Then both report and amendment were tabled. Among those who desired to go on record as opposed to filibusterism were Reagan of Texas, whose State had been taken from Mexico by a process which savored strongly of filibusterism, and Geo. W. Jones of Tennessee.

One of the resolutions, offered by Wright, of Georgia, declared that any citizen of the United States had the right to expatriate himself and transfer his allegiance to another government; to emigrate with arms in his hands for the purpose of settling new countries and found-

ing new States; that it was an inherent and sacred right which should be inviolate and of which he could not be constitutionally deprived; and in his speech in support of the resolution (May 31, 1858), Mr. Wright charged that the Transit Company, sometimes known as Stebbins & Co., sometimes as Vanderbilt, White & Co., and perhaps other names, located in New York, had for years ruled the destinies of Nicaragua; that it had furnished a large part of the means by which Walker was introduced into the country; that it had overthrown two governments there and when it failed to control Walker it proceeded to overthrow him. He charged that the company had brought to bear improper influences on the United States government; that heads of government departments were said to have stock in the company and asserted that Walker was by all law human and divine as much President of Nicaragua as Mr. Buchanan was of the United States.

The speech of Mr. Zollicoffer, then in the House from the Nashville district, was as earnest but more temperate (Jan. 13, 1858). He defended Walker against the charge of being a pirate, robber and marauder which, he said, had been made by the President, by Com. Paulding, by the press and by congressmen, declared that Walker was a modest, quiet, self-reliant man of bold convictions and the courage to execute them, who knew that he was sustained by the law at every step he had taken; and that he knew the Constitution and laws of the United States infinitely better than those who had denounced him so grossly and unjustly. While Groesbeck of Ohio, (Jan. 11, 1858), said that not since the time of Aaron Burr had the Government been so harassed as it had been by William Walker. Speeches were made in the Senate, among them one by John J. Crittenden, of Kentucky, who took strong ground against Walker, and said that as Commodore Paulding was being censured for arresting Walker, and Captain Chatard of the *Saratoga* had been suspended and sent home in disgrace for not arresting him, the

Government was stultifying itself. Walker and those with him in the expedition which Paulding had broken up were Southern men who proposed the re-establishment of slavery in Nicaragua; and an attack on Walker was regarded by some Southern congressmen as an attack on slavery and was therefore resented.

Three other expeditions were projected by Walker. One from Mobile in December, 1858, was shipwrecked on the coast of Honduras; another was held at New Orleans by the collector of the Port and the third was stopped at the wharf there by a United States frigate.

Then in August, 1860, in spite of a notice to the American government from England that she was resolved to forcibly repel any further attempts of Walker against Nicaragua; in spite of the presence of English and American war vessels on both the Atlantic and Pacific coasts of Nicaragua, and in spite of his repeated failures Walker made one more effort. He left Mobile with about a hundred companions and on the 15th landed at Ruatan, an island on the east coast of Honduras, from which he hoped to reach Nicaragua. After a short engagement he took the port of Trujillo, but within a few weeks found himself confronted on one side by a force of 700 natives, on the other by a British man of war. He surrendered to the English but was by them delivered to the Hondurans. He was tried and condemned on September 11th, and the next morning, preceded and followed by soldiers with drawn sabres, accompanied by a priest, and bearing a crucifix in his hand he walked as calmly to his death as to a banquet.

The grey-eyed man had found his destiny.

An effort to obtain his body for burial in Tennessee sometime afterward was met with refusal for the alleged reason that the Hondurans had been angered by an attempt to steal it; which may have been made by some of his former followers.

Mr. Buchanan did not exactly congratulate Congress on Walker's death but he came very near it.

In his fourth annual message written a few weeks later he says, "I congratulate you upon the public sentiment which now exists against the crime of setting on foot military expeditions within the limits of the United States to proceed thence and make war upon the people of unoffending States with whom we are at peace. In this respect a happy change has been effected since the commencement of my administration. It surely ought to be the prayer of every Christian and patriot that such expeditions may never again receive countenance in our country or depart from our shores."

During his term of office in Nicaragua, Walker was so occupied in self-defense that his civil policy was practically undeveloped. Though he intended slavery as one of the foundation stones of his government he got no farther with it than to revoke an old decree which had abolished it. Though he calls his government a republic there seems to have been no popular legislative branch and no serious intention to establish one, and the decree by which he deposed his predecessor and dissolved his government was pure autocracy. He introduced a system of registration of land titles but frankly says its object was to get the land into American hands which was necessary for its development and necessary to give permanent possession of the country to Americans. Estates confiscated from the enemy were to be sold and paid for in the script which had been given for military service.

He decreed that all public documents might be in either English or Spanish and in his book says this meant that the proceedings of all courts and all records of deeds would be kept in English which would give to those acquainted with both languages a great advantage over those who understood only Spanish. He issued a decree declaring null and void all the acts of a certain Federal Assembly and Congress which had been held in 1838, and

by this decree of twenty-one words may have swept away every constitutional provision and legislative enactment under which the public affairs of the country had been administered with more or less success for twenty years. He established two newspapers and issued government bonds. One writer has said that public affairs during his administration were well managed and that Nicaraguan prisons were empty for the first time.

Unquestionably Walker's plan was the foundation of a government in Nicaragua of which he would be head, which would be essentially American, and before whose civilization the Central American native would quickly disappear. He contemplated control of the canal when constructed and the great lake which must form part of it. In addition to the plan of re-establishing slavery he may have regarded Nicaragua as a safe home for the system when the abolitionists had driven it from the United States. Or he may have hoped to unite all five of the Central American States into one strong government with himself as its Washington. He did not intend adding Nicaragua to the United States and naturally felt some hostility to the latter. He was asked once by a Tennessean if he would not like to go back to Nashville, and answered he would rather go in any other direction. And when the English officer to whom he had surrendered offered the day before his execution to intercede for his life if Walker would ask it as an American citizen, he refused.

It is hard to understand that a man so cold, so unapproachable and so lacking in magnetism as Walker is described by those who knew him, could have in such a high degree the power of commanding the unrewarded devotion of men. Some served in nearly all his expeditions, and some joined him when his cause seemed most desperate.

Walker has been much censured for harshness to his men. The rank and file of his earlier expeditions were



from California, wild lawless men, whom the gold fever of 1849 had taken there; the later expeditions sailing from Mobile and New Orleans were largely composed of adventurous young men from the South. Many chafed under the strict control which Walker found necessary to establish in a new country where every indiscretion would be misconstrued, and every excess magnified. Therefore he punished infractions of discipline with justice and without mercy.

Was there anything in the atmosphere of the South to predispose her sons to the methods of filibusterism? W. S. Crittenden, shot in Havana in 1851, Geo. B. Crittenden and Theodore O'Hara were from Kentucky; Bowie from Georgia; Fannin and Thos. Green from North Carolina; Reuben Kemper from Virginia; Travis from Alabama; Houston, Davy Crockett; Walker and many of his men from Tennessee.

It is difficult to imagine what could not have been accomplished in a better or less desperate cause by a man who had in him so much of the stuff of which heroes are made; for Walker was as calm as Lee, as earnest as Stonewall Jackson, as tenacious as Grant; and no braver man ever wore sword.

NOTE:—In the preparation of this sketch I have drawn freely from "The Story of the Filibusters," by J. J. Roche; other sources of information were the Congressional Records; Richardson's Messages of the Presidents and Walker's War in Nicaragua. Walker was called the grey-eyed man of destiny, and there was a superstition among the Nicaraguans long before his arrival among them—that their country would be freed from oppression by a grey-eyed man. If Roche gives the date of Walker's birth correctly, he was graduated at fourteen.

## INVINCIBLE TENNESSEANS.

---

BY WILLIAM GOODRICH, Philadelphia, Pa.

---

It was a sad day for North Carolina, when contrary to his own wishes, and against the unerring judgment of Washington, Congress on the 13th of June, 1780 appointed Gen. Horatio Gates as commander in chief of the Southern Army.

Washington's choice was Gen. Nathaniel Greene, but the clamor of the people for the advancement of Gates (whose capture of Burgoyne and success at Saratoga can only be attributed to accident), caused him to sacrifice his better judgment and yield to them. The action of Congress in displacing General Schuyler from command of the Army of the North was injustice itself, and had it not been for the disobedience of the fiery Arnold, assisted by Morgan and his riflemen, the story of Saratoga and the surrender of Burgoyne would have been untold.

The nobility of Washington in this instance is shown by the fact, that he not only yielded to Congress, but strengthened the hand of Gates, to the extent of giving him from his own (Washington's) none too strong army, at least one fourth of his best troops. With these as a nucleus, under an able general such as Greene, how different would have been the situation of North Carolina in the summer and fall of 1780.

The repulse of Gates at Camden, compelled him to retire to Charlotte and Hillsboro, opened the way for Cornwallis to terrorize the country, and was ably assisted in this by both Tarleton and Ferguson. "It was at this dark and gloomy period of the Revolutionary War, that many of the best friends of the American Govern-

ment submitted to the British authority, took protection under and joined the British standard, and gave up their freedom and independence for lost. Lord Cornwallis with the British Grand Army had advanced into North Carolina, and lay at that time at Charlotte. Ferguson was at Gilbert Town in the County of Rutherford in North Carolina, with an army of 2,000 men, which he could readily augment to double that number.'''\* While these were no doubt as Haywood truly says, dark and gloomy times, yet there is to be seen an occasional rift in the cloud, indicating the coming of daybreak. For instance the battle of Ramseur's Mill, June 20, 1780, 400 men under Colonel Locke, attack 1,300 Tories under Colonel Moore, and defeated them badly, teaching them a lesson not soon forgotten, as they never afterwards organized. Again at Hanging Rock these same patriots administered a drubbing to a combined force of Tories and Tarleton's troops, amounting to 500, under command of Major Carden, defeating them and capturing all the British commissary stores.

This was soon afterward followed up by Colonel Shelby, who taking an all night ride with his men arrived at Thicketty Fort on Pacolet River, and without firing a shot compelled Capt. Patrick Moore to surrender the Fort, taking ninety-five prisoners and 250 stands of arms.

These successes, however, were soon overshadowed by the defeat at Camden, and had it not been for the patriots of Watauga and Holston, North Carolina would have been given over to Cornwallis' bloodthirsty troopers under Tarleton and Ferguson. The latter had been conspicuously brutal in his treatment of the patriots yet there is nothing in his actions to be compared to the butchery of Colonel Buford's command by Tarleton.

The capture of Thicketty Fort by Colonel Shelby, and his retreat over the mountains with the prisoners, in-

---

\*Haywood's History of Tennessee. Page 81.

censed Ferguson to the extent of his threatening the "over the mountain men" with direst vengeance. He little knew the character of the people he was threatening, who, gathering all available men, hastened to accept his invitation half way.

The battle of King's Mountain was the result of Ferguson's undervaluation of true patriotism, and lack of knowledge of the sterling character of these frontier men, who from childhood had been accustomed to act, each man for himself in circumstances requiring quickness of thought, independence in action and self-confidence, brought about by constant watchfulness, against surprise in their hunting expeditions and forays against the Indians.

'Tis not my purpose to repeat the story of King's Mountain; such has been done by Draper, Ramsey, Haywood, Schenck and others. Especially well has Draper written the story, going into the fullest details. His book should be in the hands of every descendant of the noble men, who made it possible for him to describe this great victory.

In numbers engaged upon both sides amounting to about 2,000, nearly equally divided, it does not compare with many other battles of the Revolution, but in the complete annihilation of a disciplined army, under a successful leader, by a band of patriots never before as a whole under organization, it is without parallel.

Equipped with their hunting rifles, which in those days were absolutely essential to their existence, both in providing food for their homes, and affording protection against the Indians, these men fought for their liberty, and freedom, as no other body of men did during the Revolution. Every rifle crack meant a foe down, they had no bayonets to assist them in charging, but each relied upon himself to bring down his game dead at the instant of sight. The number of dead found shot in the head speaks for the accuracy of aim. Now these were

the men, (or to be more explicit those who participated from Watauga and Holston) who were the founders of Tennessee, and who caused the flickering pulse of the whole nation to beat with renewed vigor. Washington's General Order under date of October 27, 1780, in which he congratulates the army upon the important advantage obtained at King's Mountain, shows his appreciation of the victory.

Satisfied with the results of their undertaking, they returned over the mountains to their homes, and went heartily to work at their various callings, progressing step by step toward Statehood, and it is the purpose of this article to call attention to the fact, that in all the future development of their country, until and after its formation as the State of Tennessee, the men who fought previous to, and at the battle of King's Mountain, were the ones always looked up to and entrusted with important civil and judicial positions.

With such examples what wonder is it that the progress of the State was rapid, despite their troubles with the parent State of North Carolina, which gave them little if any assistance, but on the contrary seemed always desirous of retarding their enterprises. North Carolina expressed its appreciation of the help of these sons in time of direst need, by resolution to present a sword and pistols to Sevier and Shelby, but it took the opening of another war with England to arouse that same State to the knowledge that its heroes of 1780 had been forgotten, when on July 17, 1813, Governor Hawkins of North Carolina, made the presentation. Think of allowing thirty-three years to elapse before acknowledging the obligation.

The parallel to King's Mountain may be found in the battle of New Orleans. Again are the "over the mountain men" of Tennessee, this time alongside of their brothers of Kentucky, to meet the red-coated British soldiers. Of the 2,500 men engaged on the memorable 8th of January

1815, about 2,000 were from Tennessee and Kentucky, all riflemen. The spirit animating these men can be best described by quoting from Judge Ballard's "Kentucky at New Orleans." Richard Oglesby in his "Kentucky Volunteers," says, that "Ballard had the honor of firing the first shot on that day, being selected by Captain Hardin who pointed to the Major of the Forty-fourth (Essex) Regiment, and told Ballard to "snuff that fellow's candle," which he did by firing a ball through his head at a distance of thirty-five rods. This shot was the signal for the ball to open.

Ballard says, "Apart from the ordinary impulses of patriotism actuating men who defend their country's soil against an invader, there was in the hearts of these men a deeper feeling almost akin to fanaticism. Most of them had been born while yet the shadow of the Indian tomahawk hung over Kentucky. Their baby eyes had seen the glare of burning cabins, their young ears had heard the savage war-whoop, and not a few of them had gazed upon the mutilated remains of fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters slain and scalped at their own threshold.

"They knew that all through the dark and bloody infancy of their beloved State, British instigation had been at the back of the red demons who wrought all those horrors, and for this they held the British government responsible. The red coats they now saw in front of them represented that government. They had had many chances at the savages whom the British instigated, but this was the first chance they had ever had at the British instigators! So here they transferred to the serried ranks before them all the deadly hate, all the pitiless revenge, all the mortal animosity which had been burned into their souls towards the Indians.

"Now consider that men so actuated were marksmen, among whom it was considered *infra dignitatem* to shoot at a deer standing still, who lost caste among their fellows if they hit a wild turkey anywhere in the body or broke the

skin of a squirrel in barking him off a limb. Consider further, that men so actuated and so endowed with skill in the use of deadly weapons were not merely brave, but that courage was their instinct, congenital, imbibed with mother's milk; that in their code no allowance was made for cowardice, even as a remote possibility, and bravery was considered as a matter of course, involving no particular merit whatever, that the imminent presence of danger or death itself never shook their fortitude, disturbed their equanimity, impaired their judgment nor affected their calm deliberation in the slightest degree. One must take account of all these facts, before a fair idea can be formed of the character of these obstacles which stood between the British army and its objective point, the 8th of January, 1815.

"These men were not merely soldiers. They were not soldiers at all in the regular or technical sense of the term. They were not enlisted, not paid, not clothed, not even armed, and not altogether fed or munitioned by any government. They were not organized, as that term is understood in the military sense. The only approach to such organization was a grouping in companies independent of each other, composed of neighbors and commanded by officers holding no commissions other than the admiration and respect of their men. There were no regulations and no discipline except that of common consent among themselves, based upon the principles of honor and the tenets of manhood. Yet the world never saw so orderly and obedient a body of men assembled for warlike purpose, and the world never saw, nor probably ever will see again, such a helpless and pitiable wreck as they in a few minutes made of a force more than double their number, the pick and flower of a veteran army, hitherto victorious in all lands, irresistible and invincible everywhere."

Think of the result accomplished by men of such training as these Tennesseans and Kentuckians, animated with such indomitable hatred towards a foe whom

they were now to meet for the first time. They were nerv-  
ed to the highest pitch, and in shooting shot to kill. Of  
4,852 of the British infantry engaged, the total loss was  
2,907 of which 1,383 were killed outright, most of whom  
were shot through the head.

Judge Ballard's description of his fellow Kentuckians  
answers in the main for the Tennessee contingent. Per-  
haps in the matter of organization the Tennessee troops  
had the advantage, owing to their recent experience in  
the Florida and Creek Wars.

In conclusion, let me draw attention to the lesson  
given by these men who at King's Mountain under Se-  
vier and Shelby, and at New Orleans under Coffee, Car-  
roll and Jackson, accomplished such unexampled results  
which is this, that when men of such character rise up in  
their might to strike a foe, they are like Cromwell's sol-  
diers, simply invincible, and they impart to future gener-  
ations that greatness which comes as a natural course of  
inheritance and set an example that cannot fail to be  
followed.

When men have to draw lots to stay back and guard  
their homes, as was the case in the King's Mountain ex-  
pedition, surely those who go forward may be depended  
upon to give a good account of themselves.

Tennessee has had many brilliant men of whom it  
has just reason to be proud, but the names of these  
heroes should be enrolled in honor where all can read and  
take a lesson in patriotism. What a pity it is that no  
such roll exists, at least of the "over the mountain men,"  
nor can it at this late day be made.



PEDIGREE OF THE POLLOK OR POLK FAMILY,  
FROM FULBERT, THE SAXON, (A.D.,  
1075) TO THE PRESENT TIME.

---

BY MISS MARY WINDER GARRETT, Williamsburg, Va.

---

[*Continued from April issue, 1898.*]

WILLIAM POLK BRANCH.

William Polk, the second son of Robert Bruce Polk, or Pollok, and Magdalen, his wife, inherited "White Hall," the home place, in Somerset County, Md., and remained in Maryland. His descendants are mostly in that State, but a few are in Delaware.

In the will of Robert Bruce Polk, made in 1699, added to in 1703, probated June 5, —, on record in Somerset County, Md., he mentions wife, Magdalen; sons—John, William, James, Ephraim, Robert, David, Joseph; daughter, Martha. I infer from mention made of the four sons—John, William, James, and Ephraim—that they had been provided for in the lifetime of their father. In the will this clause occurs: "Fourthly, I leave to my beloved wife, Magdalen Polk, my new dwelling house and plantation during her natural life." The will of Magdalen makes no mention of this property, nor does the will of Robert Bruce Polk further dispose of it; but we find "White Hall," the ancient home of the Polks, descending in the William Polk branch of the family until 1868.

"Polk's Folly," the property of Robert Bruce Polk in 1687, is still owned by one of his lineal descendants of the William Polk branch: Ephraim Polk, son of the late Col. William T. G. Polk. It is situated near the head of Broad Creek, lying in the vicinity of Manokin River, Somerset County, Md. "Polk's Folly" is mentioned in the will of Robert Bruce Polk as a tract of one hundred acres of land, and is bequeathed in said will to his son, David Polk.

William Polk, second son of Robert Bruce Polk and Magdalen, his wife, married Nancy Knox (who, when she married him, was the widow Owens). She was the sister of Joanna Knox, the first wife of his brother John, thus making the descendants of these two brothers doubly related through Polks and sisters Knox. According to the will of William Polk, probated Feb. 24, 1739-40, of Somerset County, Md. (this will is still on record in that county), he mentions two sons, David Polk and James Polk; two daughters, Elizabeth Williams and Jane Strawbridge. He leaves daughter Elizabeth Williams a tract of land known by the name of "Ramoeth," in Somerset County (one hundred acres). The will of William Polk mentions grandson, William Polk, son of James Polk. Witness of will: Abraham Heath, Mathew Heath, Charles King.

David Polk, the eldest son of William Polk and Nancy, his wife, inherited "White Hall" from his father. He was Colonial Judge for the county of Somerset, Md. The commission of Judge David Polk, one of His Lordship's justices of the peace, was dated June 8, 1763. The last term of court at which he acted as judge was June term, 1766. Commission on page 223, Judgments of Court, Somerset County, commencing March court, 1760, and ending June 1, 1763. Judge David Polk married Betsey Gillis, and had five children—viz.:

1. A daughter, who married Judge Done.
2. William Polk.
3. Gillis Polk.
4. A daughter, who married Hamden Haney.
5. Esma Polk, who married Thomas Bayly, and had Josiah Bayly and Thomas Bayly.

William Polk, the eldest son and second child of Judge David Polk and Betsey (Gillis) Polk, was judge of the Court of Appeals of Maryland. He was born in 1752, and died in 1814. He was married three times, and left numerous descendants. First, he married Esther, the daughter of Judge William Winder, who was, when she married him, the widow of Isaac Handy; his second wife was the widow Dennis (*nee* Purnell); his third wife was Mary Hubble. By his first marriage, with Esther (who

died Dec. 14, 1790), he had five children—viz.: 1, Elizabeth; 2, Esther; 3, Gertrude; 4, William; 5, Josiah Polk.

1. Elizabeth Polk married Eligius Fromentin, United States Senator from Louisiana (no descendants).

2. Esther Polk married three times: First, Major King (one son, Henry King); second, Charles H. Winder (no children); third, Alexander Stuart, surgeon in the Revolution (no children).

3. Gertrude Polk, third child of Judge William Polk and Esther, his wife, married, May 9, 1779, her first cousin, Gen. William Henry Winder, a very distinguished man, and a member of the Maryland Legislature. (See Stephney Parish Register, Somerset County, Md.) In the war of 1812 he was colonel, brigadier general, and adjutant general. Schaf, in the *Chronicle*, of Baltimore, speaks of Gen. William Henry Winder as "one of Baltimore's brilliant lights" and one of the most eminent lawyers in that city. Schaf states that at the time of his death Gen. Winder had the largest practice of any man at the bar in Baltimore and one of the largest in the United States Supreme Court. Gen. William Henry Winder and Gertrude (Polk) Winder had ten children. Of these, five died in infancy. Those who gained maturity were:

John Henry Winder, born Feb. 21, 1800.

William Henry Winder, born in 1807.

Charles Henry Winder, born in 1809.

Gertrude Winder.

Aurelia Winder.

William Henry Winder and Gertrude Winder never married.

John Henry Winder (born Feb. 21, 1800), son of Gen. William Henry Winder and Gertrude (Polk) Winder, graduated at West Point, entered the artillery, resigned in 1861, entered the Confederate States Army as brigadier general. He died at Florence, S. C., Feb. 6, 1865. Gen. John Henry Winder was twice married. First wife, Elizabeth Shepherd; second wife, Caroline Cox. By the first marriage of Gen. John Henry Winder and Elizabeth (Shepherd) Winder there was one son, William A. Winder, doctor of marine, in charge of Marine Hospital, San Diego, Cal.; captain in United States Army; appointed in 1894

United States Special Agent for Settlement of Indians at Covelo, Round Valley Agency, in North California. He married Abby R. Goodwin, and has one son, William Winder, lieutenant in United States Navy. By the second marriage of Gen. John Henry Winder and Caroline Cox he had two children—viz.:

1. John C. Winder.
2. William Sidney Winder (unmarried, residing in Baltimore).

John C. Winder, eldest son of Gen. John Henry Winder, by his second marriage, married Octavia Bryan. He was major in the Confederate service; was vice president of Seaboard Air Line Railway (927 miles). He had five children—viz.: 1, Mary; 2, Caroline; 3, John H.; 4, Gertrude; 5, Octavia Winder.

1. Mary Winder married Washington Bryan. Issue: 1, Octavia Winder Bryan; 2, Annie Washington Bryan; 3, Mary Winder Bryan; 4, James West Bryan; 5, John Winder Bryan.

2. Caroline Winder married Dr. F. W. Hughes. Issue: 1, Octavia Winder Hughes; 2, Annie Smallwood Hughes; 3, Isaac Hayne Hughes; 4, Mary Winder Hughes; 5, John Winder Hughes; 6, James Betner Hughes.

3. John H. Winder, only son and third child of Major John C. Winder and Octavia (Bryan) Winder, was general manager of the Seaboard Air Line Railway. He married Florence Tucker. Issue: 1, John C. Winder; 2, William S. Winder.

4. Gertrude A. Winder, fourth child of Major John C. Winder and Octavia, his wife, married W. R. Tucker. Issue: 1, Rufus; 2, Marie; 3, Octavia; 4, Gertrude A. Tucker.

5. Octavia, fifth child of Major John C. Winder and Octavia, his wife, married Ludlow Skinner.

Charles H. Winder, son of Gen. William Henry Winder and Gertrude (Polk) Winder, married Mary Sterrett, and had two children, Josephine and Mary Winder Sterrett. Mary died in 1864; aged seventeen years. Josephine Sterrett married Stewart Darrell, of Bermuda, and resides in Baltimore. Issue: 1, Cavendish Darrell; 2, Marie Josephine Darrell.

Aurelia Winder, daughter of Gen. William Henry Winder, married Mr. James Townsend. She was born in 1820, and died

at Oyster Bay, Long Island, N. Y. She was a woman of great culture and the author of a volume of poems. She left no children.

William Winder Polk, eldest son and fourth child of Judge William Polk and Esther, his wife, was born Aug. 9, 1787, and died Feb. 13, 1856; married Almy Townsend, daughter of William Townsend, of Long Island, N. Y. From this marriage there were seven children—viz.:

1. William Winder Polk (died unmarried).
2. Mary Townsend Polk.
3. Margaret Hoffman Polk.
4. Gertrude Winder Polk (died an infant).
5. Francis James Polk (died an infant).
6. James Black Polk (died unmarried).
7. Louisa Dorsey Polk.

Miss Margaret Hoffman Polk, third child of Capt. William Polk and Almy Townsend Polk, resides in Baltimore, Md.

Mary Townsend Polk, second child and eldest daughter of Capt. William Winder Polk and Almy, his wife, married twice: First, Victor Monroe, of Kentucky; and, secondly, Judge Alfred Iverson, of Georgia. Victor Monroe was a cousin of President James Monroe and son of Thomas Bell Monroe, who was born in Albemarle County, Va. At an early age he married Eliza Palmer Adair, daughter of Gen. John Adair, then Governor of Kentucky, which office he held until the election of President Lincoln, when he resigned and came South, representing the State of Kentucky in the Confederate Congress. He died, after the war, at Pass Christian, Miss. Victor Monroe, his son, who married Mary Townsend Polk, was appointed judge of the United States Court for the Territory of Washington upon the organization of that Territory during the presidency of Pierce. He went across the plains with the first Territorial Governor, Stephens, and died out there a few years later, about 1858. He left three children—viz.: William Winder Monroe, Frank Adair Monroe, and Mary Eliza Monroe.

William Winder Monroe, the eldest son of Victor Monroe and Mary (Townsend Polk) Monroe, commanded Morgan's Advance

Guard in the raid through Ohio; was captured and kept in Camp Douglas eighteen months; was exchanged; was recaptured with President Davis and party and sent to Fort McHenry, where he was kept in solitary confinement for several months after the war. He married Lavinia Berry, and is now a railroad man, at present residing in Danville, Ky. William Winder Monroe and Lavinia, his wife, have two children: Catherine Berry Monroe and Anna Prudell Monroe.

Frank Adair Monroe, brother of William Winder Monroe and second son of Victor Monroe and Mary (Townsend Polk) Monroe, was in the Freshman Class at Kentucky Military Institute when the war commenced; he went into the army, joining Company E, Fourth Kentucky Regiment, "Breckinridge Brigade." In 1861 he was discharged as under age, but in March, 1862, joined the First Louisiana Cavalry; was wounded and captured in March, 1863, near Somerset, Ky.; and was exchanged in December, 1863. When the war closed, he settled in Louisiana and studied law. He was recommended by members of the bar for the judgeship, and was elected by the Democratic party Judge of the Third District Court, Parish of New Orleans. In 1879 Louisiana had a new Constitution, and several civic and probate courts in the city and parish were constituted one court, having five judges. He went in with the first Nicholls administration. Judge Monroe has been reappointed many times, and since 1888 has been Presiding Judge. Since 1889 he has been a member of the law faculty of Tulane University, of Louisiana, professor of Commercial Law and the Law of Corporations, and is president of the association of the Army of Tennessee, Louisiana Division, Camp No. 2, United Confederate Veterans. Judge Monroe married Alice Blanc, and they have nine children—viz.: 1, Adele Monroe; 2, Marion Monroe; 3, Winder Polk Monroe; 4, Alice Monroe; 5, Frank Adair Monroe; 6, Jules Blanc Monroe; 7, Kate Adair Monroe; 8, Gertrude Monroe; 9, William Blanc Monroe.

Mary Eliza Monroe, only daughter and third child of Victor Monroe and Mary Townsend Polk, his wife, married George A.

Vincent, and died in 1896, leaving two children: Winder Monroe Vincent and William Germaine Vincent.

Louisa Dorsey Polk, seventh child of William Winder Polk and Almy (Townsend) Polk, married J. Bannister Hall, of Baltimore, Md., and had five children—viz.: 1, William Winder Polk Hall (died an infant); 2, Anne Galbraith Hall; 3, J. Bannister Hall; 4, Louisa Polk Hall; 5, Marguerite Almy Hall.

Anne Galbraith Hall, second child of J. Bannister Hall and Louisa (Dorsey Polk) Hall, married Francis King Carey, of Baltimore, Md., and has four children—viz.: 1, Louisa Carey; 2, Francis James Carey; 3, Margaret Townsend Carey; 4, Eleanor Irvin Carey.

Josiah Polk, lawyer and Clerk of the Court of Somerset County, Md., fifth child of Judge William Polk by his first marriage with Mrs. Isaac Handy (*nee* Esther Winder), married Rebecca Troupe, of Baltimore County, Md., and had four children—viz.: 1, John Polk; 2, Henry Polk; 3, William Polk; 4, Mary Polk.

Henry Polk and William Polk, sons of Josiah Polk and Rebecca (Troupe) Polk, died unmarried.

John Polk, eldest child of Josiah Polk and Rebecca (Troupe) Polk, was a physician; settled in Harford County, Md.; married Miss Buchugale; had two children—viz.:

1. Emma Polk married Capt. Simons, of the United States Navy, who was lost on the Huron (no children).

2. Elizabeth married Eugene Pomeroy, of New York (no children).

Mary Polk, fourth child of Josiah Polk and Rebecca (Troupe) Polk, married twice: First, Dr. John Samuel Carr, of South Carolina, who was appointed United States Minister to Morocco; and, secondly, she married the distinguished New York lawyer, David Dudley Field. There were no children by the second marriage; by the first marriage, with Dr. John Samuel Carr, there were two children—viz.: Elizabeth Carr, who married Mr. Brown,\* of New York; and Charles Carr, who married several times. First, he married the daughter of a Polish count (no living descendants of this marriage); secondly, he married Mary

---

\*His father was a member of the banking firm of Brown Brothers.

Semmes, daughter of Dr. Marion Semmes, of Alabama, who was at one time physician to Empress Eugénie. There were two children by the marriage of Charles Carr and Mary (Semmes) Carr—viz.: 1, Addison Carr (died unmarried); 2, Constance Carr (died unmarried).

Charles Carr, son of Dr. John Samuel Carr and Mary (Polk) Carr, married a third time, and died, leaving two sons.

Judge William Polk, son of Judge David Polk, son of William, son of Robert Bruce Polk and Magdalen, his wife, married, the second time, the widow of Henry Dennis (*nee* Ann Purnell, granddaughter of Gen. William Arbuckle). To them was born an only child, a son; and this son was Col. James Polk, who died in 1868. He was Register of Wills for Somerset County, Md.; inherited the family estate "White Hall;" was a naval officer under the administration of James Knox Polk for the port of Baltimore in the year 1845. He married Anna Maria Stuart, daughter of Alexander Stuart, surgeon of the continental troops in the War of the Revolution.

To James Polk and his wife were born fourteen children, seven of whom died in infancy; the remaining seven were: William L. Polk, James Polk, Lucius C. Polk, Josiah Polk, Esther Winder Polk, Mary Ann Polk, Ariana F. L. Polk.

William L. Polk, the eldest son of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married Miss Estes, of Kentucky, and had three children—viz.: William Polk, Estes Polk, James Polk.

James Polk, second child of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married Nannie Maddox, and their children are: 1, Anna Polk; 2, Katie Polk; 3, James Polk; 4, Mary Polk; 5, Willie Polk.

Lucius Polk, third son of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married Mary Clark, and has one child, Clark Polk.

Josiah B. Polk, fourth son of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married Julia Parker.

Esther Winder Polk, eldest daughter of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married Governor E. Louis Lowe, of Maryland, and has seven children—viz.: Adelaide Lowe (who



married Austin Jenkins), Anna Maria Lowe, Paul E. Lowe, Vivian V. Lowe, Mary Gorter Lowe, Esther W. Lowe, Victoire Y. Lowe.

Mary Gorter Lowe, fifth child of Governor Louis E. Lowe and Esther (Winder Polk) Lowe, married Frank Jenkins.

Mary Ann Polk, second daughter of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married Gope Onno Gorter, of Amsterdam, Holland. They have six children—viz.:

1. Onno Gope Gorter, married Alice Edmonson.
2. Albert Lucious Gorter, married Mary E. Thompson.
3. James Polk Gorter.
4. Nathan Ryno Gorter was married, May 4, 1898, to Mrs. Mary Gordon Norris (*nee* Norris), daughter of Mr. Somerville Norris and Miss Wyatt, and granddaughter of Rev. Mr. Wyatt, rector for many years of old St. Paul's Church, Baltimore, Md.

5. Meta E. Gorter.

6. Marie R. Gorter.

Ariana F. L. Polk, youngest child of Col. James Polk and Ann Maria (Stuart) Polk, married L. Briscoe, and has one child, Matha Briscoe.

Judge William Polk, son of Judge David Polk, married, the third time, Mary Hubble, and had one child by this marriage, Ann Fromentine Polk. This only child, Ann Fromentine Polk, was twice married. First, to Robert Walker, of Georgia. They had two children—viz.: William Walker and Ephraim Walker. William Walker married and died, leaving no children. Ephraim Walker died quite a young child. Ann Fromentine Polk (Mrs. Walker) married, second, Governor Herschel V. Johnson, of Georgia. Issue: Nine children. The two eldest children died in infancy. Those who gained maturity were: 1, Emmet Johnson; 2, Winder Polk Johnson; 3, Tallulah Johnson; 4, Anne Johnson; 5, Gertrude Johnson; 6, Herschel V. Johnson; 7, Tomlinson Johnson.

Emmet Johnson married Geraldine Griffin, and died, leaving no children.

Winder Polk Johnson married Leonora Johnson; lived at the old Johnson homestead, in Jefferson County; died a few years

ago, leaving five children—viz.: 1, Emmet Johnson; 2, Annie Johnson; 3, Leonora Johnson; 4, Herschel Johnson; 5, Rosa Johnson.

Tallulah Johnson, daughter of Governor Herschel V. Johnson and Ann Fromentine, his wife, married Capt. Pearce Horne, in February, 1862. The children of this marriage were twelve, three dying in infancy; the nine who gained maturity were: 1, Michael Horne; 2, Gertrude Horne; 3, Arabella Horne; 4, Annie Horne; 5, Tallulah Horne; 6, Pearce Horne; 7, Caroline Horne; 8, William Horne; 9, John Beckwith Horne.

Michael Horne married Mary Marsh. They have five children—viz.: 1, Addie Horne, 2, Annie Ruth Horne; 3, Michael Horne; 4, Marsh Johnson Horne; 5, an infant.

Gertrude Horne, second child of Capt. Pearce Horne and Tallulah (Johnson) Horne, married Frank Baker, and has one child, Frank Baker.

Arabella Horne, third child of Capt. Pearce Horne and Tallulah (Johnson) Horne, married William White Johnson, and has two children—viz.: 1, Herschel V. Johnson; 2, Jane Carver Johnson.

Tallulah Horne, daughter of Capt. Pearce Horne and Tallulah (Johnson) Horne, married Henry Augustus Russell (no children).

Annie Johnson, daughter of Governor Herschel V. Johnson and Ann Fromentine, his wife, married Charles Hardwick, of Savannah, Ga. (no children).

Gertrude Johnson, daughter of Governor Herschel V. Johnson and Ann Fromentine, his wife, married Col. John Stubbs, of Dublin, Ga. (no children).

Herschel V. Johnson, son of Governor Herschel V. Johnson and Ann Fromentine, his wife, married Caroline Roberts; both dead (no descendants).

Tomlinson Johnson, son of Governor Herschel V. Johnson and Ann Fromentine, his wife, married Emma Arkwright, and had four children—viz.: 1, Emma Johnson; 2, Cora Johnson; 3, Tomlinson Johnson; 4, Annie Johnson.

Gillis Polk, third child of Judge David Polk and Betsey

(Gillis) Polk, married —, and had five children—viz.: Nancy Polk, Josiah Polk, Sally Polk, Gillis Polk, Catherine Polk.

Gillis Polk was the only child of the above Gillis who married.

Gillis Polk, son of Gillis Polk and —, his wife, married Hettie Leithler, and had two children—viz.: Gillis Polk, who never married; and Virginia Polk, a celebrated beauty. She married twice: First, Isaac Williams, of Somerset County, Md.; second, Col. Snethen, of Washington. There was one child by the second marriage—viz., Worthington Snethen.

---

## THE HON. JOSEPH ANDERSON AND SOME OF HIS DISTINGUISHED RELATIVES AND DESCENDANTS.

---

BY MRS. CHARLES FAIRFAX HENLEY, Mountainville, Tenn.

---

With the indispensable assistance of his granddaughter, Miss Cornelia Geraldine Anderson of Knoxville, and from data kindly furnished by her, I attempt some record of one of Tennessee's noblest statesmen.

Some historical writers of Pennsylvania and Delaware have recorded his patriotic career, as captain in the Continental Army; his services as Territorial Judge and as United States Senator from Tennessee, his adopted State; because they were proud to claim him as a native of Pennsylvania, and as a member of the Delaware State "Society of the Cincinnati," and proud of his national services in the United States Senate, and as first United States Comptroller of the Treasury.

It is our duty as Tennesseans to add our praise and gratitude for Joseph Anderson's many years of eminently faithful service and patriotic effort as one of the wise architects of the territorial and state government of Tennessee.

I will commence with an extract from Appleton's Encyclopedia, page 69, Vol. I.

“Joseph Anderson, statesman, born near Philadelphia, Penn., 5th of November, 1757, died in Washington City, D. C., 17th of April, 1837. He studied law and at the beginning of the Revolution was appointed ensign in the ‘New Jersey Line.’ At the battle of Monmouth he served as captain. He was with Sullivan in his expedition against the Iroquois; was present at Valley Forge and at the siege of Yorktown, retiring after the war with the brevet rank of ‘Major.’ He began the practice of law in Delaware. Washington appointed him in 1791, Territorial Judge of the ‘Region South of the River Ohio,’ and he took part in drawing up the Constitution of Tennessee. He was a senator (United States), from that State from 1797 to 1815, serving on important committees and twice acting as President, *pro tempore*. He was the first Comptroller of the Treasury, from 1815 to 1836.”

I will secondly copy an extract from a book presented to Miss Anderson last year by the author, Lieut. Henry Hobart Ballas, LL.D., now a captain in the United States Army. This book is entitled “A History of the Delaware State Society of the Cincinnati,” among the members of which were the Hon. Joseph Anderson; his elder brother, Capt. Enoch Anderson; his brothers, Lieut. Thomas Anderson and Lieut. William Anderson; and his grandson, Gen. David Deaderick Anderson, of Knoxville, and Captain Enoch’s son, James Galbraith Anderson, of Pittsburg, Penn., now representing their grandfathers, respectively, in the Delaware “Society of the Cincinnati.”

The following extract shows the rapidity of Ensign Jos. Anderson’s promotion in the Continental Army which he entered at the age of nineteen. Ballas’ Cincinnati History, page 54, says:

“Anderson, Joseph, born near Philadelphia, Penn., Nov. 5, 1757. studied law, and at the commencement of the Revolution was commissioned Ensign of Third New Jersey Regiment, Continental Establishment, May, 1776;

Second Lieutenant, July, 19, 1776; First Lieutenant, Nov. 29, 1776, and Captain the next Oct. 26, 1777; transferred to First New Jersey Regiment, Continentally Established, Jan. 1, 1781, retained in New Jersey Battalion, Continental Establishment, April, 1783. He had also been Regimental Paymaster from Oct. 26, 1777 to close of the war, and was brevetted Major, Sept. 30, 1783; was also with General Sullivan in an expedition against Iroquois Indians, and present at the siege of Yorktown."

The father of Joseph Anderson was William, who was a distinguished citizen of Philadelphia County, Penn. His character for honor, probity and amicability was so striking that it is related of him that on meeting a friend on the streets of Philadelphia, his friend gayly remarked: "You are the man upon whom a woe is pronounced, according to the proverb 'Woe to him of whom every one speaks well.' " He died in the first years of the Revolutionary War, leaving a widow, *nee* Elizabeth Juslee, six sons and four daughters surviving, with three children deceased. Five of these sons took an active part in the War of Independence and were commissioned officers under General Washington. The sons were:

1. Captain Enoch, born 1755, at New Port, in Newcastle County, Del., married Eleanor McCalmont, and died, 21st of April, 1824, is buried in a churchyard near McCulloch's Mills, Juniata County, Penn.; his son's grandson is James Galbraith Anderson of Pittsburg, Penn.

2. Joseph, born 1757, married in East Tennessee in 1797, at the age of forty, Miss Only Patience, age fifteen, the daughter of the distinguished Colonel Outlaw.

3. Thomas, born in Newcastle County, Del., was commissioned Second Lieutenant of Colonel Hall's Delaware Regiment, Continental Establishment, on Sept. 10, 1778, and continued to the close of the war, served also as quartermaster of the regiment.

4. William Anderson was born in New Jersey, but according to Appleton's Encyclopedia, he was born 1763

in Chester County, Penn., and died there 14th of December, 1829. "He was commissioned Ensign of First New Jersey Regiment, Continental Establishment, June 21, 1781, and served to Nov. 3, 1783." Page 71 of Appleton's Encyclopedia says: "William Anderson fought through the Revolutionary War, served on the staff of General Lafayette as colonel in the battle of Brandywine; suffered out the cold winter at Valley Forge, was in the battle of Germantown and siege of Yorktown.

"He was a Jeffersonian Democrat and held many public offices from 1809 to 1815, he was again congressman from 1817 to 1819; afterwards county court judge in Delaware County, and subsequently custom house officer. His daughter Evalina Anderson who married Commodore Porter, composed the well-known and beautiful song 'Thou hast wounded the spirit that loved thee.' Her father, William Anderson, died Dec. 14, 1829."

5. The fifth son was Juslee Anderson, named for his mother's father. "He was adjutant in Colonel Gibson's Regiment at the time of his death, in the battle with the Indians, Nov. 4, 1791, in the defeat of General St. Clair, and so reported in the official letter from General St. Clair to General Knox, Secretary of War, dated at Fort Washington, Nov. 9, 1791, with the death of Captain Kirkwood who was killed in the same engagement, and transmitted by President Washington to Congress, Dec. 12, 1791."

I will add other quotations from Lieutenant Ballas' two books. One of them had in it "Personal Recollections of Capt. Enoch Anderson" derived from letters now in the possession of James Galbraith Anderson of Pittsburg, Penn. The other work was a History of the Delaware State "Society of the Cincinnati."

"Capt. Enoch Anderson was in thirteen battles great and small.

"Capt. Enoch Anderson, the eldest son of William and Elizabeth (Juslee) Anderson, was a faithful sol-

dier and patriot. He was born in Pennsylvania, served in the Delaware regiments and after the war married, and for several years resided near Newport, Newcastle County in this State (Delaware). He removed his family about 1787 to Cumberland County, and afterwards to East Waterford, Juniata County, Penn., where he died.

"The record in his Bible states that he had a paralytic stroke on April 13, 1824, in his seventieth year. He died on 21st of April, 1824, and is buried in the churchyard near McCulloch's Mills, Juniata County, Penn. His wife Eleanor, *nee* McCalmont, is buried by his side."

After remarking that Capt. Enoch Anderson was only twenty-one years of age when he entered the Continental Army, I will again quote from Lieutenant Ballas' book, page 54:

"Enoch Anderson born at Newport, Newcastle County, Del.; commissioned Second Lieutenant of Captain Stedman's company of the brave Colonel Haslet's Regiment of State troops in Continental service, Jan. 13, 1776; was wounded at the battle of Long Island, N. Y., Aug. 27, 1776, just seven months after enlistment; made Captain, December 3, 1776; transferred to Colonel Hall's Delaware Regiment, Continental Establishment, April 5, 1777; retired from service, September, 1778."

In the year 1776, just before the battle of Long Island, General Washington concluded that the British intended to attack Brooklyn Heights "so he accordingly sent over additional reinforcements, and among them Col. John Haslet's well equipped and well disciplined Delaware Regiment, which was joined to Lord Stirling's Brigade, chiefly composed of Southern troops and stationed outside of the lines. These were troops which Washington regarded with peculiar satisfaction on account of their soldierlike appearance and discipline." Irving's *Life of Washington*, Vol. II, page 274.

Sir Henry Clinton made a night march surrounding and capturing General Sullivan and Lord Stirling, but a part of the Delaware Regiment in which was Capt. Enoch Anderson escaped. Page 283 of the *Life of Washington* says:

“That part of the Delaware troops which had first crossed the creek and swamp made good their retreat to the lines, with a trifling loss, and entered the camp, covered with mud and drenched with water, but bringing with them twenty-three prisoners, and their standard tattered with grape shot.”

In the same year, Lord Stirling, (who had been exchanged), resolved to entrap General Rogers, the Tory and renegade, who had command of a Royalist corps called the “Queen’s Rangers.”

“Colonel Haslet of his (Stirling’s) Brigade, always prompt on such occasions undertook the exploit at the head of 750 Delaware troops who had fought so bravely on Long Island. With these he crossed the line of the British march, came undiscovered upon the post, (Colonel Rogers’) drove in the guard, killed a lieutenant, several men and brought away thirty-six prisoners with a pair of colors, sixty stand of arms and other spoils. He missed the main prize, however, for Rogers skulked off in the dark at the first fire. He was too old a partisan to be easily entrapped. For this exploit Colonel Haslet and his men were publicly thanked by Lord Stirling; since this and other like successful skirmishes animated the American troops. Soon thereafter Colonel Haslet’s command assisted at Chatterton’s Hill to repulse two attacks of the British until outnumbered tenfold; were in the battles of Trenton and Princeton, where Colonel Haslet was killed. Captain Anderson was transferred to Colonel Hall’s Delaware Regiment, April 5, 1777, retired from the service September, 1778. His brother Thomas Anderson was appointed Second Lieutenant by Continental Establishment, on Sept. 10, 1778 in this same



Colonel Hall's Delaware Regiment, also a quartermaster."

According to another record, Major Joseph Anderson was born in 1757, at the village of White Marsh—or twelve miles south of White Marsh—north of Philadelphia, and was an original member of the Delaware State "Society of the Cincinnati" with Captain Enoch and Lieutenant Thomas and Ensign William Anderson, his brothers. It seems that when Joseph was promoted from ensign to second lieutenant, that his brother William was made ensign in the same New Jersey Regiment. He was scarcely more than a lad and was adjutant to General Lafayette in the battle of Brandywine, while Joseph had by this time been promoted to second lieutenant, September, 1777, and to captain, October 26th of this same year, besides being regimental paymaster. He was in the battle of Monmouth in which was killed Lieutenant Colonel Bonner, of Pennsylvania, and Major Dickinson, of Virginia, and six other officers and sixty-one privates—the American wounded amounted to 160, while on the British side were slain the brave Colonel Monckton and 245 noncommissioned officers and four officers, not counting those already buried by the British, and the prisoners numbered 100 captured by the Americans.

Capt. Joseph Anderson was with General Sullivan when he was sent to revenge the massacre of Wyoming. "General Sullivan with three thousand men moved up the west branch of the Susquehanna, and was joined by Gen. James Clinton with two thousand men. The Indian's force in arms to oppose them numbered fifteen hundred Indians and two hundred Tories under the two Butlers, Johnson and Brant. A battle was fought at Newtown, Aug. 29, 1779, in which the Americans defeated them with all celerity and ease. General Sullivan with his command of three thousand then marched into the 'Genesee Indian country,' burned their villages, destroy-

ed their corn and cattle, driving the Indians to seek British protection at Fort Niagara.

“Upon General Sullivan’s return to Easton, Penn., the thanks of the American Congress were voted to him and his army, he shortly after resigned and retired from the service.”

Capt. Joseph Anderson was brevetted major, Sept. 30, 1783. The next month he assisted in the siege of the British Army at Yorktown under General Cornwallis, who was compelled to surrender through General O’Hara as proxy, 7,073 prisoners. The siege was begun on Oct. 6, 1781—the surrender or capitulation was on Oct. 19, 1781. The Americans and French had captured six commissioned and twenty-eight noncommissioned officers and privates in the two redoubts and in their sortie. During this siege the British garrison’s loss was 552 in killed, wounded and missing, while the American and French combined army lost about 300. The latter army was 16,000 men of whom 7,000 were French and 9,000 Americans; of the latter 3,500 were Militia and 5,500 Continentals, to which last Major Joseph Anderson belonged. See Holmes’ Annals, Vol. II, page 333.

At this surrender the French as usual were gayly dressed in complete uniform, while the Americans’ ragged and worn clothes proved their patriotism and endurance for their *rights*.

Three of the Anderson brothers were quartermasters and paymasters in the army because they were trustworthy, talented and just, even at this early period of their lives. President Washington perceived these qualities together with his knowledge of law in Maj. J. Anderson, therefore appointed him first a territorial judge and secondly the first Comptroller of United States Treasury which office he held from 1815 to the close of his life.

Maj. Joseph Anderson had studied law before the war and was practicing law in Delaware when President

Washington in 1791 selected him to assist David Campbell and John McNairy as Judges of the Superior Court for the Territory South of the River Ohio. He earned deserved honor and fame as Judge, as United States Senator and as a member of the Cabinet. During the long period of his official life he never wronged any one, not even the most "humble and lowly." He was an unostentatious man, had no false pride but dressed elegantly, and was of noble presence and courtly grace of "bearing," with a genial companionship for all who knew him; was a most conservative and pure politician. His domestic relations and home life were no less spotless and exemplary.

He was appointed one of the Trustees of Blount College, September, 1794. The other Trustees were, "Governor Blount, the Hon. Daniel Smith, Secretary of the Territory, the Hon. David Campbell, Gen. Jno. Sevier, Col. James White, Col. Alex. Kelley, Col. Wm. Cocke; Willie Blount, Archibald Roane, Joseph Hamilton, Francis A. Ramsey, Chas. McClung, George Roulstone, Geo. McNutt, John Adair, and Robert Houston, Esquires." *Vide History of Tennessee.*

He married in East Tennessee a beautiful young woman, aged fifteen, the daughter of Colonel Outlaw of Revolutionary fame. This union was blessed with seven sons.

The seven sons of the Hon. Joseph Anderson were: 1, William; 2, Alexander; 3, Pierce; 4, Thomas; 5, Addison; 6, George Washington; 7, James Madison.

William Anderson, the eldest son, was a citizen and resident of Washington City, D. C. He held a lifetime clerkship in the United States Treasury Department under his father. He married Eleanor, an aunt of Judge O. P. Temple of Knoxville. Both died at their residence in Washington City.

Alexander Anderson, the second son, commenced the practice of law at Dandridge, Tenn., was married first

to Miss Hamilton of Washington. After her death without issue, he married his cousin Eliza Rosa, a daughter of Margaretta Anderson, and of David Deaderick, a merchant of Jonesboro, East Tenn. They had eleven children, of whom only five lived to maturity; four were daughters, one of whom is Miss Cornelia Geraldine Anderson, well-known in Knoxville, and one son, David Deaderick Anderson, LL.D., of Knoxville.

Alexander Anderson was chosen military leader of a Tennessee company of gold seekers bound for California in wagons in 1849. There were 100 emigrants in the company. They had to make roads and ferry boats, and suffered thirst and hunger through the dry regions of their journey, but no one died on the way. These gold seekers were from many counties of East Tennessee. A few of those among these adventurers were: David Deaderick, a brother-in-law and cousin of Gen. Alex. Anderson; Joseph and James Anderson, nephews of Gen. Alex. Anderson; Jacob S. Stuart, who afterwards married a daughter of Gen. Alex. Anderson; Alexander and Wilberforce Ramsey, sons of the historian, J. G. Ramsey; and Fitzgerald de Selding of Washington, D. C., called the "Young Knight of Virginia" by his companions.

Alexander Anderson gained the title of "General" in the war of 1812, under Gen. Andrew Jackson and was wounded in one of the last Indian battles.

In Appleton's Encyclopedia we find, that "the Hon. Alexander Anderson was the only son who followed exactly in the footsteps of his father, the Hon. Joseph Anderson, for he was a lawyer, a United States Senator from Tennessee, and a Supreme Judge of California." Also on page 68, Vol. I, of the same is:

"Alex. Anderson, Senator, born in Jefferson County, Tenn., 10th of November, 1794, died in Knoxville 23rd of May, 1869. He was elected, by the Democrats, United States Senator from Tennessee in 1840, and was after-

wards a Legislator and Supreme Judge of California and helped frame the State Constitution of that State."

The following is from *The Personal Recollections of Captain Enoch Anderson* by Lieutenant Ballas, published by the Delaware State Historical Society:

"Alexander Anderson's only surviving son, Gen. David Deaderick Anderson, a prominent lawyer of Knoxville, Tenn., and for eight years Attorney General (District Attorney) of Tennessee, now represents Joseph Anderson, his grandfather, in the Delaware 'Cincinnati,' while James Galbraith Anderson, of Pittsburg, Penn., the grandson of Capt. Enoch Anderson, and the possessor of these letters (alluding to the letters of Capt. Enoch Anderson in his book), is the eldest lineal representative of the latter in the same Society," now revived in Delaware.

The third son of Hon. Joseph Anderson, was Col. Pierce Butler Anderson, who married Miss Ann Leeke of Kentucky, and resided for many years in the "Bend of Chucky" in East Tennessee. He was a lawyer and a legislator from Athens, McMinn County, East Tenn.; afterwards Professor of Mathematics in Franklin College, Tennessee; was a veteran of the Mexican War; was Captain of Artillery in Confederate States Army; and killed in the battle of Alleghany Mountains, having survived fifty-six battles, Mexican and Confederate. He always expressed a desire to die on the battlefield fighting for his country and his principles. His son William was also killed during the Civil War.

Col. Pierce B. Anderson was a graduate of West Point and took first honor in his class. He was in the same class with Jefferson Davis, who while President of the Confederate States, promoted him to Brigadier General, but which appointment did not reach him before his death. He was an enthusiastic patriot, a great and grand man and exceedingly beloved by all who knew him.

The fourth son of Hon. Joseph Anderson was Dr.

Thos. Von Albade Anderson, for years an eminent physician of East Tennessee, he moved to Tullahoma and died there a few years ago, aged ninety years.

He married a daughter of Dr. Moore of Dandridge, Tenn. His eldest son, Dr. Von Albade Anderson was also an able physician and a greatly beloved, useful and noble citizen. He resided near Knoxville.

The fifth son was Addison A. Anderson, a lawyer who married Adaline McDowell, whose mother was a daughter of Isaac Shelby, the first Governor of Kentucky, and daughter of Dr. Ephraim McDowell of Kentucky, so famous as a learned physician that his brother physicians erected a monument to his memory in Danville, Ky. He became very wealthy, and died in Missouri, leaving a large family, (all wealthy).

George Washington Anderson, sixth son of Hon. Joseph Anderson, was very talented and gifted in art, but died at the early age of twenty-three.

The seventh son and youngest child was James Madison Anderson, who served for years as clerk in the Legislature of California and died in 1860 just before the Civil War. For eleven years before his death he was well-known, very popular and universally beloved by the Californians.

To give a synopsis of the descent of our subject, Hon. Joseph Anderson and his relatives: Joachim Von Albade Anderson was father of Enoch Anderson, Senior. The latter was father of William Anderson, Senior, who married Elizabeth Juslee. The two latter were the parents of Enoch; Joseph; Thomas; William—all commissioned officers in the Revolutionary War, and members of the "Cincinnati" of Delaware—Juslee, killed in General St. Clair's defeat; and James, too young to be in the army at that time; and four daughters, one of whom, Margaretta, with her widowed mother settled in Jonesboro, Tenn., after marrying, January 1795, David Dead-

erick, a soldier of the Revolution, who became a merchant in Jonesboro.

Elizabeth (Juslee) Anderson, the mother of so many heroic sons was a woman of culture, determination and Whig principles, she studied the politics of the Colonies "down-trodden" by the "mother country" (England) and encouraged her sons to join the patriot army, to fight for independence and political freedom. She was left a widow at the beginning of the Revolutionary War. This did not prevent her sending her beloved sons of tender age to the "front" to fight for their country's rights. She passed the closing days of her life with her daughter, Margaretta Deaderick at her home in Jonesboro, and lived to see the war of 1812, of which she approved. She took great interest in reading the best of the "national newspapers" on American politics.

Margaretta Anderson was born, November, 1772, at White Clay Creek, Del., and died at Jonesboro, Tenn., Oct. 21, 1857. She had married in 1795, David Deaderick, who had come to Jonesboro in 1775.

The first of the name in America was David Diederich from Wurtemberg, Germany, a Lutheran in religion, who perhaps came to America to enjoy this religious belief. He first resided in Pennsylvania, and married a Miss Boher, a German lady, then removed to Winchester, Va. His will was written in 1768 and probated 1797. It was written in English and signed David *Diederich* which name is Americanized into Deaderick. His grandson obtained this will through the kindness of Mr. F. A. Tidball.

David Diederich died in 1768, in Winchester, leaving his son David Deaderick, aged fifteen years, with a good German education and some English teaching. The first campaign entered into by this young man was against the British near Pittsburg, Penn., as a private soldier, subsequently in 1777, in New Jersey as an adjutant in the militia of Virginia, and quartermaster or paymaster.

He was the first merchant in Jonesboro, and won the reputation of an honest merchant, and a man of probity and public spirit, hence he was very popular and successful in his business.

The children of David Deaderick who married Margaretta Anderson were: 1, David Deaderick, Junior, for many years clerk of the Supreme Court in Knoxville, Tenn., a man of probity and loveliness of Christian character.

2. Frances Deaderick, married Dr. David Nelson, who wrote "The Cause and Cure of Infidelity," a standard book of Presbyterianism which has been translated into five different languages. He had charge of the Danville Church in Kentucky.

The Reverends Gallagher, Ross and Nelson were called the great evangelists of Tennessee.

3. Eliza Rosa Deaderick, born April 30, 1802, at "Poplar Hill," the family mansion at Jonesboro, Tenn., died Oct. 15, 1886, at the residence of her youngest daughter, Mrs. Adelia Anderson Scott. She married 7th of June, 1825, her first cousin, Gen. Alex. Anderson, son of Hon. Joseph Anderson.

4. John Franklin Deaderick, born Oct. 21, 1806, died Sept. 12, 1884. He too was clerk and master of chancery court in Jonesboro, and for fourteen years clerk of Supreme Court in Knoxville.

5. Joseph Deaderick, a merchant in Jonesboro, who died in the zenith of his manhood.

6. James W. Deaderick born about 1812, and died a few years ago. He was a lawyer of prominence and ability.

All of this family were faithful Presbyterians.

The children of Eliza Rosa Deaderick and Gen. S. Alexander Anderson were eleven; only six of which reached maturity, these are: 1. Cornelia Geraldine Anderson.



3. Frances, married Jacob S. Stuart, a brother-in-law of Judge Thos. A. R. Nelson, Senior, deceased.

4. Fanny Von Albade Anderson, who married T. B. McMillan of Knoxville, Tenn. Their two surviving children, out of six, are: David McMillan, LL.D., of Knoxville, Tenn., and Von Albade McMillan, a merchant in Camden, Ala.

5. Gen. David Deaderick Anderson, a lawyer of Knoxville, Tenn., who married Fanny V. Deaderick, and has but one son, Frank D. Anderson, an artist of talent and promise.

6. Adelia Anderson, who married J. F. Scott, a nephew of J. G. M. Ramsey, M. D., of Knoxville, Tenn. Mr. Scott is a contractor and architect, and since the fire in Knoxville has erected the new Briscoe Building. Their children are: 1, Alex. Anderson Scott, a large manufacturer of brick; 2, J. Foster Scott, a physician; 3, Kenneth Scott, a lawyer; 4, Edwin, a young lad; 5, Hugh; 6, Rosa Naomi; 7, Ethel Lee Scott.

7. Margaret T. Anderson, married Jacob S. Stuart, their children are, 1, Anne, married J. B. Kelley of Knoxville, Tenn.; 2, Rosa Stuart, married Chas. W. Irby of Alabama; 3, Fannie M., unmarried; 4, Adelia Stuart, married a Baptist minister of Macon, Ga.; 5, Gerald Stuart, married Fannie, daughter of Dr. Wray, a clerk of the Supreme Court, at Knoxville, Tenn.; 6, James D. Stuart, married Miss De Launey of Savannah, Ga. He is manager of Dunn's Agency in Jacksonville, Fla.

The four sons of Pierce Butler Anderson, State Senator from Athens, Tenn., are: 1, Joseph Anderson, LL.D., served in Confederate States Army, and died unmarried.

2. Andrew Anderson, a childless widower, residing at Rhea's Springs, Tenn.

3. George Washington Anderson, LL.D., who resides in Missouri, and has been United States Congress-

man from that State. He is married, but I was unable to learn his wife's maiden name.

4. William Anderson, killed in a battle during the Civil War. He was in the Confederate Army.

I have learned from another source that Gen. S. Alexander Anderson was elected State Senator while a resident of California, and that his law partner previous to the Civil War was the distinguished Reverdy Johnson. They lost their law papers, which were worth over \$200,000, in the raidings of the Federal Army.

After the war Gen. A. Anderson practiced law in Camden, Ala., and unraveled law cases of great difficulty and intricacy which had been in dishonest litigation for many years. His health failing, he removed to Knoxville, Tenn., where he died.

The Hon. E. L. Scott, a United States Congressman from California in the Thirty-fifth and Thirty-six Congresses was an intimate friend of Gen. S. A. Anderson. A beautiful sketch of General Anderson by him gives so many historical details that I subjoin it.

---

#### SKETCH OF GEN. S. ALEXANDER ANDERSON.

---

By HON. E. L. SCOTT, of California.

---

"We have only recently received the intelligence of the death of this distinguished gentleman. He died at Knoxville, at the residence of his daughter, Mrs. J. F. Scott, on the 23rd of May, 1869. The lamented deceased was well-known to the writer, who nearly twenty years ago, when a mere youth formed his acquaintance amidst the ravines and mountains of the mineral regions of California. But in bringing this melancholy event to the notice of our community, we are reminded not only of our private friendship and of the loss we feel in his death, but we ask the sympathy of one and all for the death of one who was trusty and emphatically

a 'Southern patriot,' and who won high honors by his talent and fidelity to principle in many a 'well contested field' of mental action. General Anderson was no ordinary man; for his prominent and marked career amidst the 'Intellectual Giants' of the past proved that he was endowed with high mental qualifications, united with energy and courage.

"The late Gen. S. A. Anderson was the second son of the Hon Joseph Anderson, born 1793, at the residence of his father, 'Soldiers' Rest,' in Jefferson County, East Tennessee. When a youth he enlisted with other Tennessee volunteers under General Jackson in the 'War of 1812' and was wounded in Jackson's last battle with the Indians.

"His education was completed at Washington College under the tuition of the ablest of scholars, the Rev. Charles Coffin, then president of this college.

"He commenced the practice of law in East Tennessee when he had attained his twenty-first year and practiced with distinguished success in the Counties of Blount, Jefferson, Anderson and Knox, and although young at the bar his vigorous mind, his courtly address and his dignified bearing placed him among the first in eminence and ability.

"In his youth he united himself with the Presbyterian church and was an elder in the First Presbyterian Church at Knoxville when he left that city.

"General Anderson was once superintendent of the land office in Alabama, also Government agent for removing the Indians from both Alabama and Florida. In 1840 he was elected to the United States Senate, filling the seat of that great and renowned statesman the Hon. H. L. White, of Tennessee, and associated as colleague with the famous Felix Grundy, also of Tennessee.

"The Senate of the United States was at that time greatly noted for its purity, intellect, and patriotism; Clay, Benton, Calhoun and Webster being then the daz-

zling stars that glowed in the political firmament. Among these intellectual and moral giants General Anderson assumed a high position, and elicited praise from the eloquent lips of the great Benton, though our deceased friend was scarcely eligible in age to a seat in the Senate. His 'Eulogy' on the death of his colleague Felix Grundy, his remarks on the 'Bill of Duties,' on the bill for the 'Repeal of the Independent Treasury,' and on the prospective 'Pre-emption Bill,' show that although young in years, the Commonwealth of Tennessee had not misplaced her confidence in entrusting to him her representation in the councils of the nation of her majestic sovereignty.

"With his characteristic love for adventure and enterprise, General Anderson left the scenes of his former activity and, in 1849, cast his destiny amid the struggles, dangers and hardships of that wonderful and attractive State, California. It was here that the writer first became acquainted with the deceased. Now that his brave heart and his manly, but aged form sleeps in the quiet of the silent grave, the recollection of our first interview is recalled with vivid distinctness.

"In 1815, the 'Democracy' of the Senatorial District composed of Tuolumne and Stanislaus Counties nominated General Anderson for the Senate of the State of California, while the chivalrous 'Old Whig Party' selected Judge T. Green, formerly of Mississippi. The two champions of their respective parties took the field; General Anderson was the devoted disciple of Jefferson and Madison, and Judge Green the follower of Hamilton and Jay—but no less the devoted lover of the gallant 'Harry of the West,' (Henry Clay).

"It was in the mining region in the County of Tuolumne, in 1851, that we first heard the voice of our departed friend—he was called to preside over the mass meeting. We listened attentively and though unacquainted with the past history of the speaker, in a very few moments all felt and believed they were in the presence of a

master mind. At this period of his life General Anderson was tall, erect, muscular, full of fire and enthusiasm—an ardent and devoted Democrat, he was the very embodiment of an ideal Tennessee stump speaker. Judge Green strove manfully in opposition but the General was elected State Senator by a decided and handsome majority. Soon thereafter he was promoted to the Supreme Bench of California, and presided with learned ability over a court that had practicing before its bar some of the finest legal minds from every portion of the Union.

“In 1853, General Anderson left California and returned to his first love ‘Old Tennessee.’ Years intervened before we met again, but whilst serving in the Thirty-fifth and Thirty-sixth Congresses at Washington City, here I was again thrown into intimate relation with the distinguished deceased, and also when he was practicing before the Supreme Court of the United States, and the Court of Claims, but soon the tocsin of war sounded in 1861. His early teachings, his fidelity to his Southern land, the innate magnanimity and grandeur of the man, were to be fearfully tested, although the Union party was all powerful in Tennessee, although power, command and reward would have been awarded him for joining the ‘Union forces.’ Although ‘old age’ would have been clothed in ease, affluence, and position, he scornfully and indignantly rejected all, and died as he had lived, a devotee to the Constitution of his fathers, and a bright and noble disciple of the teachings of the revered Jefferson and the loved Jackson. Sprung from a noble stock, with the blood of the Revolution coursing through his veins, with a long line of illustrious ancestors illuminating the past, and with a loved line of descendants to follow his noble example, in the city of Knoxville on a Sabbath evening, the 23rd of March 1869, Gen. S. A. Anderson breathed his last.

“Thus has passed away forever a brave man, a true friend, a distinguished patriot, a pure Christian, a loving

husband, a devoted father and a good citizen. He sleeps the sleep of death alongside of his brave and patriotic brother, Gen. Pierce Butler Anderson.

“‘Their memories live!  
On fame’s eternal camping ground  
Their silent tents are spread,  
And Honor guards with solemn round  
The Bivouac of the Dead.’

“We join our sad lament with every Southerner in the death of one who served our land so well and so truly for over half a century.”

---

## TWO CAROLINA PIONEERS.

BY FLOURNOY RIVERS.

---

Lincoln, Rutherford, Gaston, Cleveland, Catawba and McDowell Counties, North Carolina, as they now exist on the maps, formed the County of Tryon from 1768 to 1779.

By chapter 150, acts of 1779, passed in the spring of 1779, Tryon County was dismembered into the two parent counties of Lincoln and Rutherford.

The other counties are still later subdivisions. The dismemberment of Tryon County was due to the evil memory of the royalist Governor, William Tryon, against whom the “regulator” uprising took place in 1768-1771.

It has long been a popular superstition, now losing ground among better informed people, that this uprising had some sort of historical relation to the revolution; but the better opinion now is that it savored more of “Jack Cade” than of pure patriotism.

However, the final determination of the historical question is not within the purview of this article. The old Tryon County records are preserved at Lincolnton, and in the adjoining county of Rutherford, about three

miles north of the present Rutherfordton, was "Gilbert-Town," familiar to every schoolboy as the highest point, north, reached by Maj. Ferguson's advance in September, 1780, from which he began his disastrous retreat, September 27, 1780, and as the rendezvous of Shelby, Sevier and the over-mountain men on October 4, when they prepared for King's Mountain, on October 7.

---

WILLIAM GILBERT, OF "GILBERT-TOWN."

This article is intended, at present, to be only an outline as to these two pioneers, William Gilbert and James Holland, because I am under promise to compile, at some early date, a more extended refutation of the statement contained on page 159 of Draper's "King's Mountain and Its Heroes" that William Gilbert, of Gilbert-Town, "was a loyal friend of King George."

Judge David Schenck, of Greensboro, N. C., follows Draper's statement in his "North Carolina in 1780," but he has conceded his error. Dr. Draper is dead. He never visited this locality, never examined the court records of either Tryon, Lincoln or Rutherford, a strange oversight for so indefatigable an investigator, and he seems to have presumed that Gilbert was a loyalist simply because Maj. Ferguson camped at Gilbert-Town, as though an invading army would ever quarter on a friend while in an enemy's country.

As a fact, the Assembly was then sitting at Hillsborough, and Gilbert being the county's Representative in the House of Commons was most likely absent there, and Ferguson in his absence most probably quartered on him as an object-lesson by way of "making treason odious," as it were. It was often so done during the recent Civil War.

At the July term, 1775, William Gilbert took his seat as a Justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions with William Graham and several others known to North

Carolina history, and this court he adjourned for lack of a quorum at its April term, 1776.

---

On October 25, 1775, he and many others, including the "Committee of Public Safety," signed the "Association Oath," which reads more like a miniature "Grand Remonstrance" than an oath of fealty—profound regret that his Britannic Majesty had been so ill-advised as to encroach on the undoubted rights of the colonists as Englishmen, with the firmly expressed intention of sustaining both the Continental and the Provincial Congress. See N. C. State Records, volume 10, pages 296, 297.

In 1777 and 1778, Gilbert was assessor of taxes in Captain McFadden's militia district, and in 1778 collector. At the July court, 1778, he took his seat as a Justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions under the new government.

In January, 1779, he represented Tryon County in the House of Commons, and on Monday, February 8, 1779, he was expelled from the House and forced to resign his commission as J. P. on the charge of duplicating his vouchers as commissary of the militia of Tryon County. See N. C. State records, volume 13, pages 603, 703, 708, 714, 715.

---

What was the right of this question, in all likelihood will never be known, for Gilbert, denying his guilt, was again chosen Representative from the new Rutherford County in 1780, 1782, 1783. In 1781 he was again appointed a Justice, and at the October term was made Chairman of the Court. The court vindicated him of the legislative charge of duplicating his vouchers by the following order:

"On motion of William Gilbert, Esq., and testimony produced to the satisfaction of the court, it is ordered that the opinion of the court be entered on the records, to-wit: It is the opinion of the court that the said William



Gilbert is not guilty of the charge laid against him to the General Assembly, and we do certify that the said William Gilbert never plundered, nor was guilty of plundering, to our knowledge."

In October, 1783, he designed to visit his wife's relatives at Philadelphia, and the court sitting at his son-in-law's house, prepared, under the seal of the court, a statement of his standing and civic virtues, by way of a letter of introduction:

---

THE COURT CERTIFICATE.

"That the said William Gilbert hath long been an inhabitant of this county, hath frequently represented the same in General Assembly; that he is first in commissions of the peace, and that it appears from the lists of assessment returned into the clerk's office that he is possessed of and hath given in for assessing more taxable property than any other person in the County of Rutherford, and that he hath uniformly distinguished himself as a warm Whig and true friend to his country in times of the greatest distress and defection during the warr."

After the "warr" he lost his property, was engaged in numberless suits at Rutherfordton in consequence of this. sojourned for a time in 1786, 1787, and part of 1788, at Charleston, S. C., and died at "Gilbert-Town" (which he had sold to Major Holland, his son-in-law), in 1790; but the locality of his grave there is unknown. His wife survived him till December 22, 1822, having been born in 1737. She is buried where her son-in-law settled, at "Holland's Ford," "Holland's Ferry," on Duck River above Columbia, in the Fourth District of Maury County. Gilbert's 5,000-acre grant there was No. 110, July 10, 1788; entry 542, October 27, 1783. See Land Office records, capitol; deed book 2, page 593, Franklin, Tenn.

He was a Presbyterian in religion. His wife was Sarah McCandless, of the Scotch-Irish family of that

name in southeast Pennsylvania, and he himself was said to be a Scotch-Irish immigrant.

---

MAJ. JAMES HOLLAND.

James Holland was sheriff of old Tryon County before it was divided in 1779, from July, 1777, to July, 1778. He qualified as sheriff July 23, 1777.

On November 26, 1776, by the Provincial Congress then sitting at Halifax, he was named Second Lieutenant of Capt. Joseph Hardin's Company, Col. Francis Locke's Regiment, North Carolina Militia. See N. C. State Records, volume 10, pages 931, 937.

(Capt. Joseph Hardin was the member from Tryon County in that Congress, afterwards removed to Tennessee; Hardin County named for him, and I think he was the progenitor of the Hardins of that section).

Lock's Regiment defeated the Tories at the battle of Ramseur's Mill, near the present Lincolnton, N. C., on June 20, 1780, but I am not able to give any details of Holland's military services or rank. Book A, entry 6,908, voucher 2,168, in the Auditor's Office at Raleigh, N. C., shows an allowance of £11 3s made him under the head of "services."

After the war he was in the State Senate, 1783, 1797, and in the House, 1786, 1789.

He was a member of the first Board of Trustees of the University of North Carolina, 1789-1795. He was also a member of the second North Carolina Constitutional Convention, that adopted the Federal Constitution, 1789, and was in Congress in 1795 to 1797, and 1801 to 1811.

On October 15, 1793, he was licensed to practice law in Rutherfordton.

In January, 1780, he married Sarah Gilbert, daughter of William Gilbert, the marriage bond being dated January 12, 1780.

During his last term in Congress, his oldest son, William Blount Holland had been sent with his effects

and negroes to open a settlement on his land grant on Duck River in the present Maury County. This removal to Tennessee must have been in the winter of 1808-9, because taxes were assessed between the November term and the February term of every County Court, and I found at Columbia, Tenn., a petition from Maj. Holland—Tuesday, March 17, 1812, page 342—praying to be released from the double-tax penalty laid on delinquents for the years 1809 and 1810. His property was evidently there then, and his son, William Blount, died at the new settlement June 16, 1810, the first burial in the new graveyard there. Major Holland served his last term as a North Carolina Congressman, 1809-1811, after the partial removal of his family and effects to his Tennessee settlement. He contemplated an earlier removal, but being taunted by some unfriends that his removal was timely, he accepted the challenge, announced his candidacy, and was elected once more.

In 1812, he was named a Justice of the Peace for Maury County, Tenn., (*Legislative Journal*), and served until 1818, I think. I have him noted as signing the court minutes as late as January 26, 1818.

In 182-, he was an unsuccessful candidate for Congress in this district.

For a full history of his land grants, see the case of *Childress vs. Holland*, *Third Haywood's Tenn. Rep.*, page 274. His will is construed in *Second Yerger's Tenn. Rep.*, page 341, in the case of *Tyree Rodes and wife vs. James Holland, Jr.*, and others.

The Haywood case was decided in 1817, and the will case in 1830.

The former case discusses both his and Gilbert's grants, which were contiguous, at the mouth of Fountain Creek, on Duck River, Maury County. Both are "treasury," not "service," grants, as they show on their face, and chapter 51, page 55, acts of 1820, allowing him time

to prove that the consideration of the entire grant had been paid shows the same thing.

Holland's grant lay on both sides of Duck River, at the mouth of Fountain Creek, and the Gilbert grant embraced both sides of Fountain Creek.

By tradition in Tennessee and in Western North Carolina, by such writers as Draper, (Draper's "King's Mountain"), and in the epitaph on his tombstone, he is called "Major Holland," as he is in the Childress-Holland lawsuit (1817) in Third Haywood's Report.

I do not know if he really was a Major in service during the Revolutionary War, or in the militia afterwards. The epitaph on his tombstone is a long one:

"In memory of Maj. James Holland, who was born A.D., 1754, and departed this life on the 19th of May, 1823, in his seventieth year. He served his country in a military and civil capacity throughout the war of American independence, and was afterwards, for many years, a member of the Legislature of North Carolina, and a Representative in Congress from that State.

"In 1811 he retired to private life with great popularity and weight of character after an arduous and faithful public service of thirty-seven years."

The graveyard is now owned by Jeff Gilliam, and is in the present District Four of Maury County.

I omit the moralizing part of the epitaph. He had made his will February 25, 1816, probated January 8, 1824, and of record in will book "C," volume 1, pages 145, 146, County Court Clerk's office at Columbia.

His widow died at Tuscaloosa, Ala., September 10, 1841, and is buried there.

Maj. Holland is even yet called by tradition in western North Carolina "Big Jim" Holland from his size. His people were Episcopalians. He had doubts about the equality of Christ in the God-head and was most likely a Deist. I am told he was. And heredity

has more than once developed the same tendencies in grandson and great grandson.

Maj. Holland's 5,000-acre grant was No. 74, issued July 10, 1788, on entry No. 421, October 25, 1783.

See records in the Tennessee Land Office at the capitol, and deed book 2, page 557, at Franklin, Tenn., May 13, 1807. He acquired the Gilbert grant by sale and purchase in *Charles B. Nelson vs. James Holland*, administrator of William Gilbert, Williamson County Court Records, Sheriff's deed in deed book "E," volume 1, page 28, Columbia, Tenn.

Both grants were "John Armstrong," or "treasury" grants, not "service."

The journals of Congress, Niles' "Register," Benton's "Debates," contain much that is amusing and instructive of his congressional career. Suffice it for this paper to say that he was a thorough-going Jeffersonian of the most approved anti-Federalist type as things went then.

There are also several interesting records concerning him and his in the old enrollment books of the Supreme Court Clerk's office at Nashville, that repay reading, but lack of space now forbids a more extended reference.

Both these pioneers have many descendants in Nashville, in Williamson, Maury and Giles Counties, Tenn., and at Birmingham and Tuscaloosa, Ala., but the descent has been in the female lines.\*

---

\* For the verification of the dates and records here given I am indebted to Prof. John S. Bassett, Trinity College, Durham, N. C.; Prof. K. P. Battle, University of North Carolina; Mr. A. Nixon, Lincolnton N. C.; M. H. Justice, Esq.; S. Gallert, Esq.; Capt. W. L. Twitty, Ruthersfordton, N. C. and James A. Smiser, Esq., Columbia, Tenn. Mr. Gallert is administrator of the Forney estate that now owns "Gilbert-Town."

Some other data I hope hereafter to add. For instance, in the Supreme Court Records at Nashville, in a suit between Maj. Holland and the old patriot, Waightstill Avery, over the Gilbert land grant, wherein Avery accuses Holland of conspiring to defraud Gilbert's creditors, of whom he was one, he also accuses him of riding to Washington while a Congressman in a "coach or coachee" and of thinking that he "resembled Jerome Bonaparte!"

## CORRESPONDENCE OF GEN. JAMES ROBERTSON.

(88)

KNOXVILLE, December 6th, 1793.

Sir,

All the militia that are or may be on duty for the protection of the frontier of Mero District under my former orders to be mustered and discharged on the 29th, 30th or 31st Instant, and the muster rolls sworn to be forwarded by the return of the bearer Richard Findleston to the office of Colonel David Henley agent for the war department at this place. The punctual execution of this order is essential to the ascertaining the annual expense of the defence of this territory. Congress make all appropriations annually and require all accounts of expenditures to be closed in the same way. It is the duty of the muster master of the district, Colonel Hays to forward the muster rolls and yours to order him to do so as well as to appoint the time and places where the musters shall be made. For the new year you will order on duty for the protection of the frontiers of the District such part of the militia as the imminence of the danger of hostile Indians shall require provided it does not exceed one company of Infantry and one company of mounted Infantry or Cavalry but no one company of the former is to be kept on duty more than one month nor of the latter more than twenty days until discharged and must be regularly and strictly mustered on entering and leaving the service at such places as you shall order and while on duty you will order weekly reports to be made to you by the respective Captains of the places where the men are posted ranging or patrolling and their respective numbers and

you will be particular in giving orders to them to do whatever may in your opinion best effect the object of protection to the inhabitants in general.

With me there is no doubt but the Cavalry or mounted Infantry whenever called into service ought to range in advance of the Settlement between Cumberland and Duck Rivers as far up as the Caney Fork or be sent in immediate pursuit of invading parties. And when you shall have sufficient reasons to believe that any large camp of Indians is formed in the wilderness from which the settlements and inhabitants are annoyed too large to be attacked by one company of Cavalry or mounted Infantry as above permitted then and in that case you may order an additional number not exceeding another company nor for a term exceeding twenty days for the purpose of destroying or breaking up such large camp. And in case of a general invasion of the District by hostile Indians in force of which I hope there is not much danger you will call out such part of your brigade as shall be sufficient to protect the inhabitants and repel the Indians and this being effected discharge the part so called out. On all occasion regular and strict musters are to be made by your order on entering and leaving the service and on no occasion can a disproportionate number of officers to non-commissioned and privates be allowed. Permit me to repeat that military orders ought ever to be in writing and not merely verbal except where the emergency of the moment will not permit it. You will also forward by Richard Findleston all the accounts in the Indian Department complete for the present year. In all expenditures for the new year in the Indian Department the articles must be purchased by your written order given in your capacity as temporary agent by Benet Searcy whom I have appointed purchasing agent for that purpose who will be allowed a commission on the articles purchased whose duty it will be to settle his account or purchases delivered to the Indians at the office of the agent of the depart-

ment at this place. Deliveries to the Indians of the articles purchased must also be by your written order and that in the presence of some two persons named in your written order who shall certify the delivery in writing and on oath if required. It will also be his duty to supply them with provisions, vituals and drink or procure it to be done by your order. Attend to the notes on Cockrell's and Colonel Robert's accounts herewith returned to you. You may detain the Bearer Findleston until the fourth day of January to bring to me your dispatches and the muster rolls from Colonel Hayes and if it is necessary for him to wait a few days longer he may for company through the wilderness. If there are any troops on duty at the Big Salt Lick they are not to be discharged under this general order because it would be almost impossible to replace them but a muster roll must be sent forward if practicable to make the muster if not a roll must be sent forward on the oath of the officer commanding at the post.

I am with great respect,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General Robertson,

Mero District.

A second part of Cavalry nor mounted Infantry not to commence service until the first are mustered out unless the danger of Indians is so eminent as to make two companies or parties necessary at the same time. The same order is to be observed with respect to the Infantry.

WM. BLOUNT.

---

(89)

KNOXVILLE, December 7th, 1793.

Sir,

Your salary has been received by Colonel King to the first day of October in bank Post Notes, 300 dollars, and



paid into my hands. Your grant is out for General Moore's large survey on Harper. Sometime past you or Colonel Robertson gave me the names of sundry people who owned large quantities of land adjoining this survey of Moore's which I have forgot. Will you again give me the name of the large holders adjoining or laying near it? I wish you would take Fiddleston so much under your care as to keep him as much as possible out of bad company. I think him very trustworthy. Will you give me your opinion as to the time that will suit the members that may be elected for Mero District to meet at this place. I am with sincere esteem,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

In my public letter I have added a state of Cockrill's account which will show the balance due me for which you are answerable and it will serve to explain what part of this account is to be made out against you as Indian Agent. I have not yet been able to state the exact balance due you and myself. I wish you would state it and if I find it wrong I will amend it. None of your orders drawn on accounts forwarded for Indian Supplies can by me be paid, until the accounts for these articles are passed at the proper office and the money received from the Treasury Department.

I still think to purchase the lands on Harper provided if I can purchase it on the terms I have purchased Gen'l Moore's tract. I mean those tracts laying adjacent to Gen'l Moore's tract.

---

(90)

Mero District.

NASHVILLE, 9th Dec., 1793.

Sir,

I had yesterday the honor of receiving yours of the 21st of May. I am happy to find your Excellency's sen-

timents so congenial with my own relative to the treatment proper to be given to our Indian neighbors. When we reason from general principles a small degree of reflection will show us the impropriety of enlightened nations furnishing savage, even in time of war, with weapons that a few months may turn against themselves: much more so in time of peace; this Sir, is however an idea that did not occur to me at the time I sent the Piece to the Chickasaws but that step was merely the effect of an effusion of friendship for them in consequence of their faithful adherence to our interest, and perhaps will appear less reprehensible when it is considered, they were then at open war with the Creeks, who have been our constant, inveterate enemies. I must however, observe that this was altogether a transaction of my own, and must not be charged on our general government; to whom application was made for several more which was refused.

I can assure your Excellency that every opportunity has been made use of to impress on the Indians the idea of friendship subsisting between Spain and the United States particularly by his Excellency, the Governor of this Territory, at a treaty held by authority of the United States, with the Chactaw and Chickasaw nations at this place in 1792, and it has been my particular care at every conference to hold out the same idea to them.

Various reports have circulated with us of the Spanish Government having incited the Indians to war against us, of which I hold it my duty to inform Government; though at the same time I knew not how to reconcile them with information I receive through the chanel of correspondence with several Spanish officers, and other corroborating circumstances wholly incompatible with such measures which I also remarked in representations to Government.

The establishment of peace is indeed a very important object, especially for our infant countries it gives me the greatest pleasure to find the measures of your govern-

ment directed to that end and the more so is sincerely pursued, which I doubt not they are, they cannot fail of success.

The honor of an interview with your excellency though it would afford me a real satisfaction is what I rather wish than expect for yet it may still be in our power to correspond by letter which I flatter myself will be done.

I have the honor to be with much esteem

Your Excellency's most obedient

Humble servant

JAMES ROBERTSON.

His Ex'cy The Baron of Carondelet.

---

(91)

KNOXVILLE, January 6th, 1794.

Sir,

I really have not time to write you a formal official letter therefore I write you a hasty private one.

I was at Tellico Blockhouse in conference with the Cherokees from the 13th of December to the 3rd inst., and the result has been that the whole cherokee nation have given me the strongest assurances of peace to which I pay full faith and credit and the Bloody Fellow in a private conference I held with him promise me in positive terms to go without delay in person to the Creeks and use his efforts to stop them from committing murders and robberies upon the cumberland settlers. Only one negro was delivered up but the first day of June is appointed for a second meeting at Tellico then all in the nation are to be delivered and the exchange of prisoners is to be completed. The want of power in the hands of the chiefs renders the delivery of the negros and even of the white prisoners too a very difficult task for before they can deliver either they are forced to pay or promise to pay to the indians who have the possession of either a considerable price which

they can do only out of the sum annually allowed them by the United States. The sum allowed by the United States is to be paid at that time.

I am without letters from Philadelphia public or private for weeks past. Its uncertain whether I go to Philadelphia this winter or not. I have not yet obtain leave so to do and if I am not yet determined to go.

The public papers inform that Dr. White has obtained a seat. There must be some miscarriage in his and the letter of my other congressional friends or I could not have been so long without the leasure of hearing from them.

I am with respect and esteem etc.,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson.

---

(92)

KNOXVILLE, January the 9th, 1794.

Sir,

I am happy to learn from you, that it is agreed by you on the part of the United States and the Chiefs of the Creek Nation "that all acts of hostility or depredation shall cease on both sides and that peace and good understanding is again re-established between the United States and the Creek Nation."

The conducts of Creeks towards the citizens of the United States resident in the territory south of the Ohio, and theirs towards the Creeks, since the treaty of New York, briefly has been that the Indians, Creeks and Cherokees have killed and made prisoners and slaves of upwards of two hundred citizens at or in their houses, fields or on the common paths leading from the house of one neighbor to that of another one half of whom may at least be safely charged to the Creeks. I speak with certainty, my information has been very correct and could if necessary give the names, time and place of the greater part of them and the

Creeks and Cherokees have stolen horses from the citizens of the United States in this territory I might almost say without number, but to be within bounds, I will confine myself to charging the Creeks with stealing at least one thousand horses. On the part of the citizens of the United States resident in this territory they have done the Creeks no injuries except in defence of their persons or property, or in pursuit of such parties as have injured them and in this last case it might have happened that the innocent who peaceably hunting on the frontiers have suffered for the guilty, but it is not admitted that even the innocent have suffered on their own hunting grounds. The Creeks and Cherokees and Chickasaws say the Creek hunting ground is bounded on the north, by the ridge which divided the waters of Mobile and the Tennessee, and that when General Oglethorp first landed in Georgia, they generally hunted down to the sea shore and did not turn their attention towards Cumberland until they were driven from their sea shore hunting grounds. And by the treaty of New York it appears if the Creeks had a claim to the Cumberland lands that they extinguished it, or in other words ceded it to the United States. In the first paragraph of the fourth article of that treaty a part of the land deviding the lands of the United States from those claimed by the Creeks is particularly described, and in the latter part of the last paragraph of that article the Creeks "release, quit claim, relinquish and cede all the land to the northward and eastward to the line described, to the United States." The most northern part of this described line, namely, that part which begins on the Keeowee River is in latitude  $34^{\circ} 47''$  so that Creeks by agreeing to release &c to the United States all lands laying northwardly of it did in other words agree that a line extended from Keeowee (which is in latitude  $34^{\circ} 47'$ ) due west to the Mississippi should form their northern boundery, and that it should be a part of the boundery between them and the United States.

To place this construction of the treaty in a clear point of view to you (if it is not so already) suppose the Creeks had claimed the lands on the Mississippi in latitude  $34^{\circ} 48''$  which upon every long line, is only  $1''$  northwardly, of described line, yet since it is northwardly in any degree however small it is by that treaty ceded to the United States, for all lands to which the Creeks had a right or even a claim laying northwardly  $34^{\circ} 47''$  is by that treaty ceded to the United States.

I am thus particularly in explaining to you this boundery, because I am told the Creeks affect to say as a justification for the many murders and robberies they have unprovokedly committed on the exposed Cumberland people, that they are not under the protection of the United States, otherwise a line would have been drawn between their Nation and this territory by the treaty of New York. Had the Secretary of war been only a Commissioner from the State Georgia when the partial described line would have been sufficient for the completion of the objects of his Mission, but he was the Commissioner of the United States at large, and to understand clearly the construction of the treaty it was to be taken into view that he and the Creek Chiefs of whom McGilivray was their head as well informed as most men, had a thorough knowledge of the Claims of their respective Nations, and meant as the Preamble states, "to remove all causes of war by establishing limits between the United States and the Creek Nation," and not merely between the Creeks and the State of Georgia, and the line from the Keeowee to the St. Mary's does no more.

The most southern of the Cumberland settlers are in latitude  $35^{\circ} 55''$  leaving  $1^{\circ} 8''$  space between them and the Creek line, as established by treaty, and if the Creeks lands are bounded, as the Cherokees and Chickasaws say, and I believe by the deviding Ridge between the Mobile and the Tennessee, when the space between, is more than double that distance, so that upon every principle, the

Creeks for the murders and thefts they have committed on the citizens of this territory are without the justification, generally made use of by themselves and their friends, intrusion on their hunting grounds.

Here permit me to request you, to take a comparative view, of the Murders and thifts committed by the Creeks on the unoffending people of this territory. I mean unoffended to the Creeks with the inquires they have done the Citizens of Georgia—since the Treaty of New York, they have killed and captivated upwards of one hundred people of this territory and thirteen Georgians. What the Georgians have said and done you are already informed. But now you inform me “that it is the wish, of the Nation, that as they have agreed, to be at peace and frindship, with the United States, that you have measures to prevent an insult or injury offered the people of this Nation by the inhabitants of your government, and they on their part, promise to act reciprocally.” I am truly glad to hear it, and heartily wish, I could believe they were sincere, or in other words, I heartily wish that the Chiefs, who thus expose themselves, had power enough to compel the warriors, to pay obedience to their commands. However taking it for granted, that they are sincere, and have power, I herewith enclose you an order, on Brigadier General Robertson, of New District, to deliver your messengers, the two Creek Prisoners in his possession, who have been well treated.—I beg you to assure the Creek Chiefs, that if the Creeks, will desist one and all, from killing the Citizens of the United States, resident in this territory, and from stealing their horses, I will engage, on the part of the Citizens of this territory that they will forget and forgive, what is past, so far as they will not go on their hunting grounds to injure them—but in case the Creeks continue to kill and steal, as heretofore they have done, shall order strong parties, to pursue the offenders to the Tennessee, if not over it, and when men, who have had their dearest and nearest rela-

tions killed, and their property stolen, are out with arms in their hands, if they come upon innocent hunting Creeks, and kill them by mistake, I cannot help it, and if innocent hunters are killed, under such circumstances, the Nation must blame the rogues, who do the mistake to the White people, and punish them for the blood of the innocent who suffered for their bad conduct. I beg you to present me in the most friendly manner, to the White Lieutenant, tell him I remember seeing him and embracing him at Colphinton in 1784, and that I lament the death of his son, who I am sure if he was innocent, was killed by the Cumberland People by mistake, and should you find time and convenience, to visit me at this place, I will be happy to see you and with you, I should be glad to see him, and I should suppose, the bringing with you, a few other Chiefs would have a salutary effect, to their Nation and the United States, as all intercourse must tend to strengthen the Bands of friendship.

Enclosed is a list of prisoners, taken from this country, in addition to Miss. Thompson and Mrs. Caffry, the possession of whom in the hands of the Creeks, affords an ample proff, of the injuries the people of this country, have sustained at their hands.

I cannot omit informing you, that notwithstanding the peaceful assurances, of the Creeks, that on the 1st instant, a party of Indians as appears, by their tracks, to consist of twenty-eight, fired upon the Bull Run Block-house, within sixteen miles of this place and wounded one of the regular soldiers, they left a war club, with the marks and figures of the Wind Family, of the Creeks, which gives great reason, to suspect they were Creeks, and several other parties, of Indians, have lately been committing murders, near this, and I suspect from the circumstances, they were Creeks, one of whom took a Mulatto Boy a prison, which will serve to prove who they were that took him.

General Mayne's Head Quarters is a few miles in ad-



vance of Fort Jefferson about 80 miles from Fort Washington, and has a line of fortification from one to the other, where he will probably wait the opening of the Spring, and then teach the Maurauding faithless northern tribes the value of peace.

Be pleased Sir to accept my thanks for your services rendered and tendered this country and myself, and believe me with the sincerest esteem.

Your most obedient

Humble servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

James Seagrove Esquire,  
Agent of the United States  
To the Creeks.

---

(93)

KNOXVILLE, January 18th 1794.

Sir,

Your letter inclosing those of the Baron D'Carondelet and Portel, were delivered me by Mr. Phillips, to whom I paid the Price, as by you stipulated. Your answer to those gentlemen meet my approbation. Inclosed you have a Copy of a letter from me, in answer to one which I received a few days past from Mr. Seagrove, dated at the Tuckabatchees December the 5th 1793.

The assurances contained in the letters of Mr. Seagrove and the Baron, warrant a Belief, that the Creeks will, in future, observe a most peaceful Conduct towards the United States, and in addition to what they have said on that head the Express informed me that the Spanish Agent, in the Creeks was doing and saying all he could to induce the Creeks, to be at peace, with the United States.

The Cherokees I have considered since June 1792, as influenced and directed, by the Creeks or Spaniards, or both I mean so far as to direct their National Conduct

towards the United States, and since both the Creeks and Spaniards are determined to observe a peaceful Conduct towards the United States, it will not be a violent Presumption to suppose the Cherokees will follow their example, and I now expect shortly to receive from them formal overtures of peace. These appearances do not teach the expectation, of very imminent danger, and it is in Proportion as that expectation is warranted that defensive Protection can be extended.

This leads to an alteration of my Order to you on that head of the 6th of December. You will sir in no one month, call into service, of the mounted Infantry or Cavalry, more than twenty noncommissioned and privates, to be commanded by a Cornet or Ensign, nor keep them on duty more than fifteen days. And should the present month pass without murders or Thefts by Indians, on the Inhabitants of Mero District, you will in the month of February order only a Sergeant and ten of this Description of Militia on duty. You are to understand the order of the 6th December in no other respects altered.

I am surprised and mortified at the information that a part of the Citizens of Mero District, who have so repeatedly complained, that a sufficient degree of defensive Protection is not extended to them, should be about to engage in an offensive War against their peaceful neighbors. Should these inconsiderate Persons actually carry their scheme so far into execution as to make an attempt to conquer West Florida, which is certainly all they can do, they will unquestionably involve the United States, in a general War, and lay themselves liable to heavy Pains and penalties, both pecuniary and corporal, in case they ever return to their injured country.

It is Sir, the Duty of yourself, and every Officer of the Government, to discountenance, and prevent by all legal ways, and means, the execution of a Plan, so replete with bad consequences to every part of our common Country and Interest, particularly to your Infant Dis-

trict. This duty also extends to good Citizens so far as may be in their power in their respective situations. With what Propriety can I justify the extending defensive Protection, in any degree to a People, who are about to commence actually War, and thereby involve the United States in it against one of the most powerful Monarchies on Earth, without any pretence for so doing but that which would equally justify highway robbery, the ———— [erased], by a strong hand the Property of their People.

Those Shemes must proceed from the Machenations no doubt of that Jacobin Incendiary Genet, which is reason sufficient to make every honest mind revolt at the very Idea.

But should these unthinking men presevere in despite of such exertions as may be made to the contrary, and regardless of the Injuries into which they will certainly involve their Country, you will please take the earliest opportunity to inform me thereof. In the meantime I wish you to take such steps as may be in your power to obtain copies *literally* of some one or more of the commissions and forward such Commissions or Copy to my Office, to the end that I may forward the same to President of the United States.

Judge McNairy and the attorney for the District, will I presume upon a knowledge or Information of the Intentions of these people, to violate the Peace of Government, take steps to prevent them from so doing.

Since writing Mr. Seagrove, and forwarding him the order for the two Prisoners in your Possession, I am informed that one of them is a Cherokee, however you will deliver both to the Messenger he sends for them, and inform him of my mistake, to the end that he may explain it to the Creek Chiefs. And before their departure from you, you will please cause them to be furnished each with a good suit of Indian Clothes meaning a Waist Coat, Flap, Leggings, Shirt, Binding and a Blanket.

This I consider as necessary to teach their Nations

in case any Citizen of the United States should in future be captured by them, a return of good Treatment. I wish to hear the Chickasaw report of the meeting of the Southern Tribes with the Spaniards.

I am with sincere esteem,

Your obedient Servant

WM. BLOUNT

Brigadier General Robertson

Mero District.

---

(94)

Sir

Your favor of Dec 28th, was received last night, & must be acknowledged with thanks for the interesting information it conveys. I have never doubted but that the thinking people of Kentucky & Cumberland would discountenance any measure that tended to a breach of that happy harmony & good understanding that subsist between the two nations. I have seen with pleasure that the Supreme Executive of the United States of the State of Kentucky by their proclamation, had expressed their sense of the projects pursued by those who have adopted a system of hostile operations, as opposite to the peaceful disposition of their own government, as calculated to estrange ours from those moderate principles which it has been its constant study to maintain with neighboring nations. It is to be hoped that the majority of the American people will not tamely suffer a foreign Minister to exercise within their territory the powers of sovereignty, by issuing commissions & levying armies to be sent against a nation at peace with them. But should a few deluded people fall into the snares laid to entrap them, they must expect to find us not unprepared to receive them.

I have the pleasure to return Mrs. Robertson thanks for the compliments she has sent Mrs. Portel. She is

lately gone down to New Orleans, but will inform her of it; & you may assure your lady that my wife will entertain a high sense of her attention.

I am very sincerely with esteem

Your most obedt humble servant

THOMAS PORTELL

New Madrid Jany, 17th 1794.

P. S. I inclose you an order upon Dr. J. R. Waters whom I desire to satisfy you for the cost of suit against Tureot, & for all expenses to expresses whom you may send. The one who brings me your favour above is paid fifty hard Dollars and a blanket.

---

(95)

KNOXVILLE, January 19th, 1794.

Dear Sir:—

A few days past I wrote you a long private letter by way of Kentucky not knowing of the present opportunity.

Mr Deaderick was satisfactorily paid all his demands though that in the Indian Department was mostly in advance as to me as last years accounts since June generally and some before that period are unexhibited to the Auditor and I hold not a farthing of public cash for any public purpose whatever. I make no more advances. G. M. Deaderick always behaves handsomely. You have my leave to come to this when you judge proper. For besides the pressing private business you mention with greer and cocke. I wish myself much to see you here to settle our account in the Indian Department as well as to make the division of lands. But if you come in less than two months I shall not be in readiness to complete this last business as the papers are all with J. G. H. Blount. I shall send major Farragut for them in about ten days from this and he will not be back before the last of March as he will be delayed in bringing some of my

negroes as well as papers. Your part of the land I would not purchase generally at any price but it may be that I may purchase your part of particular tracts if we can agree in the price and ten cents is the very highest I will give for any tract be the quality what it may. Don't suppose I have opened a market for Cumberland Lands and want to purchase to sell again to immediate profit for I pledge you my word and honor I have not and I believe I never shall unless I would possess myself of a large body laying together near the settlements say from sixty thousand to hundred thousand acres in a body and such a tract I believe I would sell to an advantage in Europe to people of large capitals. Small detached tracts as to anything that I would obtain for them I should not consider worth an acceptance. Capt. Gordon is gone on with Deaderick I believe well please as the contractor paid him off is demand in bills on his agent in Philadelphia. Send in the sergeant's receipt to Col. King who will pay you for the Rations; it is in his department. If Wayne's Army or any part of it were to come within the limits of this territory it would be his business to supply the Rations. I call the persons elected to represent the several counties together at so early a period that the nomination of counsellors may be before Congress in the present session otherwise there could not be a general assembly in the territory until after the next session of Congress. Who shall be counsellors I don't care provided they have ability to do their duty. I shall make a point not to meddle in their nomination. Joe. Greer is at Jonesboro and McCabe at Philadelphia. Mr Allison is also gone to Philadelphia by way of Fayetteville. With great esteem and respect

I am,

Your obt. servt.,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson

Mero District

Thomas Mann, Nashville.

(96)

TUCKATATCHE, 10th February, 1794.

Sir,

On the 4th instant your favor of the 9th of last month was delivered me by Mr Grey, at which time also arrived seven Cherokees with talks from the Badger and other Cherokee Chiefs addressed to the Chief of this Nation and myself, requesting our good offices in obtaining peace for their Nation.

From the stile of their letters and the talks delivered here by them, the Cherokees appear anxious for a reconciliation with your country. The Chiefs of the Creeks have promised to be mediators and have in the most pointed manner forbid the Cherokees making war on your government or any other of the United States, and have desired a number of their principal Chiefs to attend a meeting which I am to hold at this place about a month hence. I have urged on the Cherokees people who came, and have sent a talk in answer to the Chiefs enforcing the necessity of their desisting from acts of hostility, as ruin awaits their land should they persist any longer in their depredations. I have given it as my opinion that if they will restrain their people from acts of violence on the frontier settlements of your government that they will not be disturbed; and I cannot doubt that this will be the case so far as in your power either by good advice of your citizens for authority should it be required.

I cannot intertain a doubt but that a peace with the Cherokees must be pleasing to your country. I shall therefore use by best endeavors at the intended meeting to bring it about. And if from the advice I have already given the farther effusion of blood of my fellow creatures can be spared, I shall think myself happy.

With respect to the Creeks, I have communicated to the Chief that I had opportunity, such part of your letter as expresses your desire for peace, and it appeared very pleasing to them, and at our next meeting I shall use

my utmost endeavors to have matters put on a form peaceable establishment between this and your country. It gives me great pleasure to be able to assure you from the best authority that scarcely a Creek Hunter hath crossed the Tennessee since my talks were given them. Several parties of hunters are returned in from that quarter who confirm it; and I have reason to believe that the frontiers of Cumberland will enjoy a greater share tranquility this winter than any since its settlement. Heretofore there was not any person in this Nation to restrain the Indians from going there to do mischief; but on the contrary the Spanish Governors and their Commissaries in the land in public and private encouraged and rewarded them for making war on that unfortunate frontier, this, Sir, I have the most ample proofs of; but thank God the time is changed, and I hope a little time and perseverance will bring all matters right.

I expect to be able to send all the prisoners belonging to your country by same conveyance that will bring the two Creeks you sent an order for. As to the horses it is in vain to ask after them, most of them that were valuable, are either dead by the Distemper which raged in the country, or sold in the Spanish Settlements. Some of the Negroes I believe are here, but it will be difficult to recover them, having changed masters so often among Indians. Not one of the deserters have come this way that I can hear of. This I send under cover to the Badger, by the Indians who have been with me and I hope it will reach you safe. I have not any news from Georgia later than the 7th ult; at that time nothing of importance stirring in that quarter

I am with respect,

Your Excellency's

Obedient Humble Servant,

[Signed]

J. SEAGROVE,

Agent Indian Affairs.

His Excellency Wm. Blount

Governor of the territory South of the Ohio.



(97)

Brothers, we have received your flag, you say in consequence of our letter we left on the road, we are very sorry you did not answer it sooner as about the time we expected an answer Buckhannon's Station was attacked that we took for answer we are told by your flag it was the Creeks. We do not think we can be safe while we are at war with some Red People and at peace with others all living and coming the same course. Your delay of sending in and being continually harrassed by Indians from the quarter have caused us to join force with Caintaukey and have resolved on reducing our enemy by them who they may. We make doubt after consulting Caintuckey that we shall confirm a good peace if your conduct in the mean time should prove to us that you are sincere but are not to expect that we will treated from that part of the world as we have been while the United States are able to reduce our enemy, as we have been very particular in giving no cause of offence except that matter last fall in killing the Black Fox's Brother and we had great reason to believe you were the aggressore, though it might not be so. Though as we said before a lasting peace could not subsist while the enemy came the same course. If you had taken proper steps at that time the guilty would have suffered and peace might have continued, but we hope more regular steps for the future may be observed. We derected our letter to all the Chiefs and have received an answer from but two. We always understood the Dragon cannon and bloody fellow was the prinsaple Chief. Why have they not answered us while we are now in consill to answer you. Your men are using their best endeavors to kill us as your flag can witness.

(98)

KNOXVILLE, March 7th. 1794.

Dear Sir,

Enclosed is a list of names in whose favor I have on

you for the sums extended against each amounting to Four Hundred and Seventy-eight Dollars eighty-one cents and to enable you to pay them I write to Sampson Williams to pay this sum into your hands.

The enclosed latter to him is on that subject which I wish you to deliver with your own hands or send for him to come to you, for I do not wish it to be known from whom you get the money to take up my orders. By saying I do not wish it to be known I mean to no person except yourself and Williams. Should any accident happen that you are disappointed in getting the money from Williams get from Deaderick or any body and draw on me and I will pay your drafts for the orders I have drawn on you must be paid at all events I have so promised. As you take up my orders destroy them that is if Williams gives you the money to take them up with but if he does not you will hold them as an evidence of debt against me. I shall expect to see you at the time you have appointed and am with very sincere esteem,

Your Obt. Servt.,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson.

A list of orders drawn by Governor Blount on General Robertson of this date, March 7th, 1794.

In favor of		Drs. \$
	David Willson	52.00
Do. do.	G. D. Blackmore	30.00
do do	Daniel Smith	126.11
do do	John Adminston	133.50
do do	Thomas Johnston	100.00
do do	Doctor White	37.20

---

(99)

KNOXVILLE, March 8th, 1794.

Sir,

I want the two Creek Girls brought to this place that is if you can make a bargain with Evans or any of his company to take charge of them and let them ride be-

hind on one of their horses. I would give Fifteen Dollars for bringing each of them. I want them to carry a letter to the Creeks but cannot go to the expense of having horses purchased for them to ride to this place. You will make the best bargain you can under Fifteen Dollars and if that price will not induce some person to bring them, you must keep until my further order.

I am,

Your Obedient Servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General,  
James Robertson.

---

(100)

KNOXVILLE, March 8th, 1794.

Sir,

Your letter of the 6th February sent express by James Russell was handed to me much stained with his blood by Mr. Shannon who accompanied him. Russell was wounded by a party of Indians who ambuscaded him about 18 miles from South West Point which he with difficulty reached and was obliged to continue there for several days before he could be removed. He is now under the hands of a skilled surgeon, and it is hoped will recover. His fifty dollars have been dearly earned but instead of complaining he may rejoice that he has so often escaped.

Your letter of the 24th February I have also received by Clerk and Shutes. I sincerely lament the death of the citizens mentioned in both and sympathize with the citizens of Mero District generally in their sufferings and should be infinitely happy if it was in my power to give them immediate relief. It does really seem as if assurance from Mr. Seagrove of the peaceful disposition of the Creeks was the prelude to their murdering and plundering the inhabitants of your District. Doctor White has been prevailed on and he is ever ready to serve his country to proceed on to Philadelphia with the proceeding of

the House of Representatives and with the bloody account contained in your letters and from his abilities, address and acquaintance personally with many members of Congress of the first consequence I am led to hope notwithstanding Mr. Seagrove's assurance to the contrary that the sufferings of the people will be well and fully impressed on Congress that efficient measures will be taken to stay the savage hand from the repetition of such horrid acts as you have too long been compelled to submit to.

My order of the 18th January was founded upon the assurances of peace contained in Mr. Seagrove's letter the long cessation of hostilities experienced for several months particularly in the District of Mero and a hope that the Cherokees would follow the example of the Creeks in wishing peace with the United States but as it now appears by the most unequivocal of all proofs that the Indians are for war and not peace you will consider that order as revoked in every part and that of the 6th of December in force by which you are to be governed and directed in your conduct as Brigadier General of Mero District. But I cannot repeat too often to every officer who I have the honor to command that while it is a duty to protect the citizens that it is equally a duty that the utmost economy should be observed in giving such protection. It would appear to me that 25 and at the extent 50 mounted Infantry would be a sufficient number to pursue a small marauding party of Indians and of that description are those which have generally infested your frontiers and my information from the Cherokees and Creeks as late as the last of January teaches me to hope no other description of parties are to be expected on your frontiers. Captain Murray's conduct in the pursuit of the murderers of Heland to the Tennessee proves him to be a persevering, valuable officer and I heartily rejoice that he was so lucky as to overtake them encamped on the bank of the river from whence not one of the party could escape. His conduct in sparing the two Squaws is

agreeable to the custom and usage of civilized nations and such examples must teach even savages to follow them but when contrasted with the conduct of some of his fellow-citizens it has a pleasing lustre. If the danger on your frontiers continues you may order Cornet Evans to perform a tour of fifteen days duty and with an augmentation of a Sergeant's command he thinks he could be able to scour the woods to Duck River or to pursue a party even to the Tennessee but if his services are not required you will give him orders to return immediately to this place. He will show you my written orders as to the course he shall return.

The House of Representatives in their recommendation of places proper for posts have mentioned the following: "In the County of Sumner one at Bledsoe's Lick, one at Morgan's Station and one at Gibson's on Cumberland River. In the County of Davidson one at Hayes' Station on Stone River and the others as General Robertson shall think proper." "In the County of Tennessee one on the Spring Creek of Sycamore and the others as Colonel Ford shall judge proper."

It is hardly necessary to tell you these recommendations were not considered as binding on me nor by me so received nor do I mention them to you as binding on you but merely as speaking the sense of the people expressed by their Representatives and as such worthy of attention unless such circumstances should turn up as to render other places more proper or to render attention to them impracticable however proper.

Read close with a wafer and forward the enclosed letter to Opoiamingo by Mr. Foster as he goes down to the Natches.

I am,

Your obedient

Humble servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General

James Robertson.

All accounts are to be settled quarterly and the first quarter ends the last day of this month. Send forward all public accounts of every description.

WM. BLOUNT.

---

(101)

TUCKABATCHE (Upper Creeks) 18th March, 1794

Sir, I have just closed a long conference with the whole of the Chiefs of this Nation, which had for its object the re-establishment between them and the United States. I am happy to have it in my power to inform that I have succeeded in this better than I had reason to expect. The Creeks appear very desirous and earnest in supporting the peace now concluded. And as upwards of their principal Chiefs are going on with me to the President, I doubt not all will be happily settled for our country. They have bound themselves to use every means in their power to prevent any depredations on your country. All the prisoners belonging to your District I shall send off in about ten days, direct from hence for Nashville under care of Mr. Gray and an escort of Indians, who will receive the prisoners you gave an order for, as well as those taken since, which I request you will order done as I have promised that you will send them in; it will have a good effect to send them home well clothed.

There is now with me thirty-seven Cherokee Chiefs who came here to attend the Creek meeting, and to see me. I have received their talks, which are very strong for peace with the United States, and they promise me to prevent as much as in their power any further being done your country by the Cherokees.

They request that I will inform you of this, and intreat that you will not allow any parties coming into their Nation to do mischief. I have assured them that unless their people gave cause for yours to enter their country they had nothing to fear, as your wish was for peace with

them. I believe that a number of the Cherokee Chiefs will visit the President on the business of peace ere long. I therefore fondly hope you will keep your people quiet until the result of their acting with the President shall be known.

I have not time to be more particular at present as the bearer (the Little Turkey) waits. I shall write you by Gray and am until then

Your most obedient  
Very humble servant,  
Signed, JAS. SEAGROVE, Agt.  
Indian Affs. S. D. U. S.

His Excellency  
Governor Blount.

---

(102)

NEW SENECA, March 28th, 1794.

Sir,

Yours I received open, that all the country knew what was in it, however there was nothing in it but what was the truth—and I must beg of you if ever you write me again, as to the Little Turkey, to send it by a safe hand that will deliver it to me.

The Turkey has told your excellency of his travels, the little fellow has been with the Spaniards, and after he returned home he and myself and some more went to see Major Seagrove in the Creeks. He has done everything in his power to convince the young men of his Nation that it was not war, and now he has returned home and he means to try to make the young men make peace with the people. As for his own part he has been at peace ever since the English left the country, as well as his neighbors in general over whom his influence extends. I expect the River people will listen to the talks and be at peace by what I can understand from that quarter. They get no encouragement from the Spaniards now, which

gives hope that we may expect peace once more. I am obliged to attend at every public meeting, and from what I see and hear all things appear disposed for peace.

I expect some of the Chiefs of the Nation will visit the President by invitation from General Knox.

A talk is to be held at Wills Town in about eight days from this where they will nominate the Chiefs who shall go to Philadelphia and appoint a time for their departure, but how many will go or when I can give no opinion.

I am

Your Excellency's  
Most obedient Servant,  
(Signed) JOHN THOMPSON.

His Excellency  
William Blount.

---

(103)

NEW SENECA, March 28th, 1794.

Friend and Brother,

I am now going to inform you of my journey and travels since last September. I received a letter and a talk from the Spanish Agent with an invitation to meet him in October in the Walnut Hills. I and a great many more went there. The meeting and talks were over before we arrived and the Agent gone to the Natches. I followed him to hear what he had to say and to know whether the Spanish talks were good or bad. He received us all very kindly and gave us good talks. He advised us to make peace and live in friendship with all white people. On my return home I was met by a runner sent by the Creeks to invite me to a meeting at the Tuckabatche between the Superintendent Mr. Seagrove and all the head men of the Creek Nation, which meeting I attended and after shaking hands and smoking we agreed to make and conclude a firm and lasting peace with the white people.

In eight or ten days we are to hold a great meeting at Wills Town, and there we shall settle all matters I



hope both to our own satisfaction and that of the white people. War I don't want on either side—peace suits best. The work that has been here and in the settlements since my departure I am sorry for, but I hope we shall burry it all. There are some of our people out since last fall; if any mischief should be done before they return I hope you will look over it, but after they are all at home should any damage be done we will endeavor to prevent the like after.

The Creeks are as bad enemies as we have, they have been down lately in Carolina and Georgia and have done mischief, and Mr. Seagrove knows it, and it is all laid on us. But I expect as soon as they all get home the head men of the nation will stop their young warriors from doing anymore mischief to the settlements and then we may all live in peace. I want peace and mean to have it if my white brothers will allow it which I make no doubt but that every good man would do. I am,

Your friend and Brother,

THE TURKEY.

His Excellency William Blount.

---

(104)

KNOXVILLE, March 28th, 1794.

Dear Sir,

The enclosed papers contain the news of this place. No news from Congress or the Indians since the return of the members of your District. I count much on the mission of Doctor White and that he will not delay at Philadelphia above fifteen days. Mr. Spencer and Terry Poe have each received at this place a public musket which they have promised to deliver to you. You will please inform me if they do deliver them; if they do not you must call for them. I am

Your obt servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson.

(105)

KNOXVILLE, April 3rd, 1794.

Dear Sir,

I had yesterday the pleasure of your letter by Mr. Hickman. I am very glad that the two squaws prove to be unquestionably Creeks. It affords a very well timed proof of the perfidy of that Nation; I mean a proof to such as had doubts on that head.

My latest letters from Philadelphia are of the 12th February, and then not official. In one there is a paragraph saying the Committee of Indian Affairs will report in favor of offensive operations; thus we have hope the matter will be fairly in debate before Congress and for myself I am strongly impressed with the hope that Congress will concur with the report.

Dr White with the address of the House of Representatives will arrive in excellent time and much is expected from his mission.

Genet is removed from office and a successor has arrived at Philadelphia. With his removal the remaining spirit of the mad enterprise against Florida must expire. On the 20th of this month I leave this place for the Moravian Town there to meet Mrs. Blount and conduct her to this place. I shall certainly be back by the 20th of May which I suppose will be nearly the time that you and the Judge may be expected. For the occurrences of this country I refer to the bearer Mr. Hickman, I am

With sincere esteem,

Your obt servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson.

(106)

WAR DEPARTMENT,

April 14th, 1794.

Sir:

In pursuance of the representations made upon the subject of the danger to which Mero District is exposed

the President of the United States authorizes you to make the arrangement herein directed for the protection of the said District, provided you judge the measure necessary until the first day of December next, or longer if the danger shall render the said defence indispensable.

A post and garrison to be established at the ford at the crossing of Cumberland River of one subaltern, two sergeants, two corporals and twenty-six privates.

For the protection of Tennessee County and the inhabitants of said River running into Cumberland, one subaltern, two sergeants, two corporals and twenty-one privates.

Davidson County, one subaltern, two sergeants, two corporals and twenty-six privates—the chief post to be in the front of Nashville.

Sumner County, one subaltern, one sergeant, two corporals and seventeen privates.

That besides these two subalterns and thirty mounted militia be allowed the district.

Had there been any regular who could have been spared for this service they would have been ordered to have performed it but this not being the case recourse must be had to the militia. You will however judge which part of the militia shall be of Mero and which of Washington district.

Independent of the aid of the militia the following stores are ordered from this City via Pittsburg to Nashville addressed to General Robertson—viz:

6 3½ Inch Iron Howitzers with amunition for one hundred rounds complete for each piece including twenty-five grape or case shot.

I am

Sir, with great esteem

Your humble servant,

(Signed)

KNOX,

Secty of War.

Governor Blount.

---

(107)

KNOXVILLE, April 15th, 1794.

Sir,

I received your letter of the 31st March by Sampson Williams and I hope it is not necessary that I sincerely

sympathize with my fellow citizens of Mero District, in order to induce a belief of it. The Creek girls arrived safe and in a day or two will be forwarded to their Nation with a letter of which you have enclosed a copy. I also enclose you copies of letters from Mr. Seagrove, the Turkey and John Thompson. Yesterday arrived at this place from Seneca John McKee and Joseph Sevier, the latter of whom came through the upper Cherokees; and the substance of the information received from them is that a great majority of the Cherokees except the lower towns are sincerely disposed for peace; that the lower towns as yet gave no reasons to believe that they are more disposed for peace or less for war than heretofore and that the recent injuries received at the hands of the Indians are chargeable to Double Head and his party of about one hundred, who have been out since early February, and small parties of Creeks. There is however one circumstance lately taken place with the lower towns which will no doubt induce them to cry out for peace with the United States very sincerely. It is that the Chickasaws (as the Cherokees say) have killed will webber and two other warriors of the lower Cherokees and made prisoners of two families of women and children. The Indian law of blood for blood is never dispensed with. Hence taking it for granted as I do that a war between the Chickasaws and Cherokees is certain it is equally certain the Cherokees will with sincerity sue for peace with the United States. Thus you have as full a view of the prospects for peace or war with the Indians as in my power to give you, from which one deduction may be safely counted on that an attack of Cumberland by a large party of Indians either Creeks or Cherokees or both is not to be apprehended this summer. Small parties however I fear will yet infest your frontiers, but to defend against such, small active defensive parties will give as much security as large ones and I entreat and command you to let neither importunity nor distant appearances of danger induce you to order out for defensive protection any party unnecessarily large and of such as you do order let only a small proportion be mounted Infantry: for troops of that description are extremely expensive. Economy is a republican virtue, from the injunctions laid on me, I feel myself bound to injoin on you the observance

of. It appears the expense of the defence afforded Mero District since the first January last in comparison with that incurred for the defence of Hamilton and Washington Districts is more than four to one, in the estimate of the expense of the two latter is included that of Cornet Evans, which might with more propriety have been charged to Mero District. A sergeant's command of mounted Infantry to act for tours not exceeding a month by any one party, and for each county as spies (as termed by the frontier people) are as many as you ought to allow, unless the danger should become more imminent than the present information warrants the apprehension of. On the 18th inst. McKee and Sevier will enter the Nation with letters to the Chiefs and instructions to assure the Cherokees that the United States are disposed to meet their overtures of peace and to be vigilant and active in bringing about the completion of so desirable an end. Also to encourage the Chiefs in their contemplated visit to the President, agreeably to his invitation communicated through the Secretary of war. They will enquire respecting your son, and Mr. Grimes of whose fate nothing has yet here been heard. The people of your District may safely keep up their spirits and stand their ground until the return of Doctor White by whom I think it may safely be hoped some order will be received to authorize offensive operations in case war is persisted in: notwithstanding the present assurances of peace given by Mr. Seagrove and the Indians.

I can assure you my official communications to Government forwarded by Mr. Irwin are strictly consistent with fact, to the appearances both of peace, murder, theft, etc., that Government cannot want information to judge with propriety as to war or peace. This letter is left unsealed that Mr. Williams may show it to Major Winchester, Major Wilson and General Smith. I am with great respect and esteem,

Your obt servant,  
WM. BLOUNT.

Brig. Gen. Robertson,  
Mero District.

## EDITORIAL NOTES.

---

The period embracing the war of 1812-15, was one of the most important in Tennessee history. It closed in a blaze of glory, a war that had shed little lustre on American arms, in the field, and gave us the brilliant victory of New Orleans to drown the memory of our burning capitol. But it had a still more far-reaching importance in the effect it produced upon the history and destiny of the nation. It made Andrew Jackson president of the United States, and gave Tennessee a dominating influence in the conduct of the government for a quarter of a century.

Still, it is a period about which little has been written, and few facts relating to it are now accessible to the historian. When the Tennessee Centennial was approaching, one of the most distinguished orators of the State was asked to prepare an address upon the life and character of Willie Blount, who was governor of Tennessee, during all the period about which we are writing. Remembering the cluster of heroic events that have distinguished his administration, he gave a ready consent, and went earnestly to work to collect the historic facts necessary to such an undertaking. After pursuing every open avenue in a fruitless search for information, he was forced to withdraw his consent, and to confess that the public archives do not contain material for even so limited a work.

The Tennessee Historical Society, and the students of Tennessee history, ought to rescue the history of Willie Blount, and with him the record of his brave volunteers, whose muster rolls, even, are not accessible, if they be in existence, which is barely possible. They are not be-

lieved to be in the archives of the State, nor of the Tennessee Historical Society.

---

SKETCHES OF THE BENCH AND BAR OF TENNESSEE.  
By Joshua W. Caldwell, author of the "Constitutional History of Tennessee." Knoxville, Tenn.: Ogden Brothers & Co., Printers, 1898.

By this work, the author puts the people of Tennessee under obligations to him for another valuable contribution to its history. It is not a book of reminiscence, like Foote's "Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest," or Hallum's "Diary of an Old Lawyer." It is what its name indicates, a book of sketches, many of which, as the author states in his preface, contain "bare recitals of dates and facts." But if this renders it less interesting to the general reader, it also makes it more valuable to the student of history.

The sketches are confined to the eminent lawyers of the State who have closed their careers. The difficulty of obtaining even the cardinal facts in so many active lives has forced the author to content himself with barely a scanty reference to some, while others, equally meritorious, he has wholly omitted, for want of necessary material. The bar, particularly of the Middle and Western portions of the State will hardly fail to note and to regret the absence of such distinguished names as Francis B. Fogg, (1795-1880); Andrew Ewing, (1813-1864); Gideon J. Pillow, (1806-1878); Henry T. Ellett, (1812-1887) and Henry G. Smith, (1807-1878) for instance.

But however one may regret the absence of what the book does not contain, it will be appreciated for the much valuable matter the author has collected and given to the public and will no doubt receive, as it deserves, a hearty welcome from the bar of the State.

# THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE,

REPRESENTING THE CHAIR OF AMERICAN  
HISTORY IN THE PEABODY  
NORMAL COLLEGE.



DEVOTED ESPECIALLY TO THE HISTORY OF  
TENNESSEE AND ADJOINING STATES.

---

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE PEABODY NORMAL  
COLLEGE, AT NASHVILLE, TENN.

---

W. R. GARRETT, Editor.  
W. R. PAYNE, Business Manager.  
GOODPASTURE BOOK CO., GENERAL AGENTS.

---

\$3 00 PER ANNUM.

SINGLE NUMBER, 85 CENTS.

---

PAVIE PRINTING CO., NASHVILLE, TENN.





# THE American Historical Magazine.

---

VOL. III.

OCTOBER, 1898.

No. 4.

---

## SOME SOUTHERN YANKEES.

BY PETER J. HAMILTON, MOBILE, ALA.

In these days, when a common danger and a common patriotism have obliterated what was left of sectional lines, it is pleasant to look back of the long years of estrangement to the times when New England helped change the north coast of the Mexican Gulf from Spanish to American. It is well known that after the war of 1812, the Yankees remoulded the character of the West, but what they did in some sections of the extreme South has been forgotten.

Mobile Bay and waters were less important to Spain after the Pinckney treaty of 1795 established the line of 31 degrees as the boundary with the young republic, because this cut off Mobile from the powerful Choctaw and Creek Indians of the upper rivers. But the district was held with Spanish tenacity, and retained even after the subsequent cession of the rest of old Louisiana. The United States claimed that it was included in that purchase, but Spain replied that it was part of Florida, as when she conquered it from the British. The Americans would not use force, and the Bourbon flag remained floating from Fuerte Carlota.

But Americanization seemed a predestined thing, and far-seeing people came from the States to the quaint old Spanish town, and made their homes among the dons and pleasant French creoles of Mobile. Some took the oath of allegiance, but all looked with an eye to the future at the harbor and at the narrow, shaded streets named for saints and kings. Some came from Georgia, and some from other Southern States, but even Georgia was practically farther off than New England. The overland journey was long from Augusta or Savannah, for rivers must be swum or forded, and obscure trails plodded through the unfriendly Muscogeese. Only canoes could navigate the rivers up by the old home of McGillivray, the wily Indian who had borne commissions from the King of Spain and

President Washington at once, and, even lower, oarsmen must pass under the threatening bluffs of Coosada and other savage villages. While the voyage from Boston required more time, it was less arduous. Thus Lewis Judson came out from Stratford, Conn., and, as the great trading house of John Forbes & Co., on Royal street, lost ground when Spanish influence decreased among the Indians north of the line, he became one of the leading merchants of the little town. So came Peter Hobart, of Vermont, who lived at his mill on Bayou Sara. Later, he wrote back home to assure his friends that his creole wife had no negro blood. He did not approve of slavery, although a slave owner. "Brother James," he says, "I state to you in the presence of Almighty God, that my slaves always get sugar and coffee for breakfast, except in summer, when we have plenty of milk." He was never cruel to them, for if he acquired one who needed severity he thriftily sold the boy off—perhaps to some less scrupulous master. Cyrus Sibley, too, was from Massachusetts, but he came by way of the Natchez settlement. He was first with Seabury, in the milling business, and afterwards across Mobile River, with Charles Hall, an old settler, in the same business.

But the most memorable of these Yankees, perhaps, was Josiah Blakeley, who, before the beginning of this century, left New Haven for a roving life. He lived six years at Santiago de Cuba—now again interesting to Americans—but, despite this, and four years more in Mobile, had to declare in court, in 1810, that he could not write Spanish. He could trade for lands, however, and all the easier, as that year he took the oath of allegiance. He did not usually stay in town, but in a one-story house on one of the shell mounds opposite, which recalled the vanished Indians. There on the marshy shore of Polecat Bay, "never less alone than when alone," he raised cattle and wild hogs, and grew cotton and rice. The last attained six feet in height, and from the quick fertility of the soil, he called his plantation "Festino." The island still bears the name of "Blakeley," although he, somewhat like the elder Mr. Weller, spelled it with an "e." Here he lived, half way an amphibious Thoreau. All around were bayous and marshes, although to the south he could see the green waters of Mobile Bay. The sun rose above the blue hills on the eastern shore of the great delta, lighting up his two other islands near by, Pennfield and Cedar Bluff, and set in southern glory behind the brick fort which had been built by Bienville, in honor of Louis XIV., and renamed after the peace of Paris, for the Queen of young George III. No wife lived with him, "doubling his pleasures, and his cares dividing," and Blakeley realized, what Lowell was to write, that "to man of wholesome constitution the wilderness is well

enough for a mood or a vacation, but not for the habit of life." He sometimes tired of his marshy surroundings and yearned for the *terra firma* of his nativity. "Often," wrote he to a niece, "in imagination do I visit dear Pine Creek, inhale nectareous draughts from the overflowing spring, sit upon some projecting ridge of that winding bank, viewing that little crystal stream as it curls its innocent current over that rocky bed, survey with delight that rural evergreen grove which protects from the scorching rays of the sun, and also from too rough a wind, this retired, innocent retreat."

And yet, in his way, he enjoyed his Southern home, and lived willingly "under the yaller pines," half farmer, half fisherman. He occasionally rowed up the river to the American garrison at Fort Stoddert, where Aaron Burr had recently been imprisoned, or sailed by his land grant at Pascagoula, to New Orleans, where he admired the gay dressing and lively dancing of the pleasant, if uneducated, demoiselles. But oftener far he pirogued through the bayou named for the coffee smuggled there by Cyrus Sibley, and at Mobile, lived on oysters, fish, and venison. Judson, and the other Yankees, all knew the bachelor, and welcomed him to their fireside happiness. Blakeley made a point of attending mass at the church on Conti and Royal streets, opposite his room. He was no Catholic, but had no choice. There was no Protestant minister within five hundred miles of Mobile. Lorenzo Dow, of Blakeley's native State, had paid flying visits to the Tensaw and Tombigbee settlements in 1803 and 1804, and preached vigorously to large audiences against the Jesuits. But this was above the line, and even the eccentric Dow had no successors.

The easternmost of the rivers formed by the union of the Alabama and Tombigbee was that named for the Tensaw Indians, whom Bienville had saved from annihilation on the Mississippi. For he had removed them first to Mobile, and then to this river bank, where they long worshiped their sacred fire. But they had followed the lilies westwardly when the English came, and only the Tensaw River preserved their memory. Gone, too, were their neighbors, the Catholic Apalaches, whom Bienville had also befriended when driven from Florida by the Carolinians. Some of the most interesting pages of the French annalist, Penicaut, describe how, with masks and dances, they celebrated, when living near Mobile, the feast of St. Louis. The first baptism recorded for Louisiana was that by good Pere Davion, of a little Apalache girl, and when they were afterwards located where the Bayou Salome fell into the Tensaw, they had their own *cure* from France. The bayou was named for their chieftain's wife, and the name was long common in Tensaw families. Dr. John Chastang obtained their site in Spanish times.

and of him Blakeley bought it. For on this Whitehouse Plantation, he planned to build a city which should wipe out Indian memories and carry a Yankee name down to posterity.

The time was near. In April, 1813, "without the effusion of a drop of blood," as he reported it, Gen. Wilkinson, by order of President Madison, captured Mobile and took possession of the country east to the Perdido River. Cyrus Sibley was then in Morro Castle for trying to do the same thing in one of the Kemper raids. The district, Tensaw and all, was annexed to Mississippi Territory, which from the time of its first Governor—Winthrop Sargent, a Yankee appointment of John Adams—had been clamoring for extension to the Gulf. Only Florida remained to Spain of that vast seacoast which once had swept from the Carolinas around to Mexico.

Blakeley became a justice of the quorum of this new county of Mobile, and in May, brought James Magoffin from the older settlement at St. Stephens to lay out his new town. Two months later, he began selling lots on the sunrise hills, and, in course of time, disposed of over four hundred. Magoffin's plat has disappeared, but we know the lots were 99 and by 199 feet, and that two tracts were left as public squares. Among the names of streets, we find Franklin, Warren and Hancock, taken from Massachusetts; Greene, Baldwin, and Orleans, from the South; and the close connection with the West produced Wayne, Clark, Blount, and Shelby. Washington was rather national than sectional, and Dickinson and Robinson may have no special significance, unless the latter be a misspelling for Robertson, of Tennessee. Clinton street, from the celebrated New Yorker, seems to mark Blakeley as at least not Federalist. Trees like Plum, Fig, and Live Oak named the smaller ways, although one was appropriately called Ridge Alley.

The Territorial Legislature chartered the town as "Blakeley," on January 6, 1814, and for valuable services in that matter the founder deeded a number of lots to his lawyer, Samuel Haines. Six days later, came the incorporation of Mobile as an American town. Judson owned property in both places, but, like Blakeley himself, preferred to live at Mobile, in whose organization both were active.

The new town had to grow without its founder, for hardly a year later Josiah Blakeley died, and his nuncupative will says that his affairs were in some confusion. Even greater troubles came, for the massacre at Fort Mims was but a few miles away, and the Creek war which followed, threatened its existence from the land side as much as the English attacks at the mouth of the bay did from the water. But within a year Andrew Jackson and his Tennesseans had removed both dangers, and his Indian treaty on the site of Bienville's old Fort Toulouse, on the Coosa

River, opened up to white settlement much of what is now Alabama. Besides rendering the Creeks harmless by separating them from the other tribes, it thus invited a white immigration west of them, which soon gave the bay towns a large and growing river trade. Blakeley had its share. The saw-mills of Hall, Byrnes, and others supplied lumber. Cotton soon came by boat, to the amount of several thousand bales, country produce was brought by wagon, and the stage line by Nunez' Ferry to Pensacola, opened up the country behind. Fort Mims was gone, but Col. Benton's fort became Montgomery Hill, and like Montpelier, was settled largely by disbanded soldiers.

President Jefferson had been so delighted at carrying Massachusetts on his second election, that he saw to it that Yankees found political as well as other advantages at the South. Some had come to Blakeley, and among them Nathan Whiting, of Massachusetts. His connections afterwards boasted that he introduced civilized business, and put up the first modern stores—an honor perhaps due as much to Cyrus Sibley, after he dissolved with Hall. Certain it is that the early population was rude. No homes could be seen under the oaks and magnolias, and "woman, lovely woman," did not grace the streets. Nowhere was Emerson's small despot, "strong in his weakness, his little arms more irresistible than the soldier's, his lips touched with persuasion;" for, if there were children, they were slave or Indian. Blakeley at first was a frontier place, where men came to make money, not homes. But a change was at hand.

Before Josiah Blakeley had left Pine Creek, one Jonathan Fletcher, of North Brookfield, was a minute man at Lexington. He was afterwards a fifer, then lieutenant, and at last captain, and so active was he, that, at the end of the Revolutionary war, his men presented him with a sword. He had several children, and his daughter Susan married James Rouse, once of Medford, but then a prosperous cabinet maker at Boston. During the next ten years five children were born to them, and to better their fortunes they determined to follow the older emigrants to the South. Therefore, in 1817, they left Boston on a sailing vessel, for Mobile Bay, and as household goods, may have carried Jonathan Fletcher's historic sword, his elegant knee buckles, and his family Bible. The voyage was rough, but their good boat had the luck to make the trip in the short space of sixty days—save the mark!

Glad enough they were to come in sight of land, if it was only of sand banks, for soon loomed up, on a long, low point, projecting from the east, battered Fort Bowyer. There Lawrence, in the late war, had gallantly defeated a joint British and Indian attack, and succumbed, months later, only to the entire fleet, after the battle of New Orleans. Opposite, three miles away, was

Dauphine Island, the port of the Mobile department in the time of Bienville and John Law, and more lately the camp of eight thousand British troops, after they had captured Fort Bowyer. Entering the pear-shaped bay, the voyagers saw to the right that expansion bearing the grateful name of Bon Secours, with extensive shell banks full of Indian pottery and remains, and, as they tacked northwardly, they passed the red cliffs of Croftown, where the Mobile troops encamped in summer under the British rule of West Florida. Such sites could not fail to interest the daughter of a soldier, but the vessel kept too far to the east for Fort Charlotte to be visible. Near an earthwork, marking a Spanish battle with the British, they entered the Apalache River, with Blakeley's Cedar Bluff Island far to the west, not far from the other mouth of the Tensaw. The lower delta was almost treeless, but the marsh grass on their left contrasted with the hilly eastern bank as they ascended, and finally they made fast to the wharf at their destination. The firm face of Susan Rouse, shown under the white cap and strings of the existing daguerreotype, looks as if nothing could disturb it, but she would not have been feminine to have been unembarrassed by the curiosity and welcome given the first woman and children to arrive at Blakeley.

Interest in new surroundings, however, soon gave way to other emotions. The cabinet maker did not recover from the exhaustion of the voyage, and hardly nine days after they landed, Susan was a widow. The people were sympathetic, but their comfort was only of the clumsy kind that men give. They urged her to open a boarding house, and they well patronized it. She would have no slave wenches, and attended to her own kitchen, whose mysteries she so well understood that her boarders, among them Nathan Whiting, declared that until she came "they had not had a decent meal of victuals since they left Boston." So enthusiastic were they that the merchants united in building her a house, after her own plans, and there she placed the bureau, work and card table, and large looking glass, all of genuine Boston make, and probably the handiwork of James Rouse, treasured by her since 1805. And next to decent meals, these Yankees admired this furniture. It ex-territorialized New England for them.

Blakeley grew apace with increasing commerce and population. Among the newer citizens was Cyrus Sibley, who had returned from Morro Castle, to own land and stores on the Tensaw. He later married a daughter of an army officer at Montpelier, near the Alabama River, and at the mill he was so long to operate near by, at Bay Minette, was to raise up a numerous family. Many other settlers came, but the division of Mississippi Territory, in 1817, was drawing some eyes in another

direction. The eastern half became a new territory, called Alabama, and St. Stephens, on the Tombigbee, a few miles above its junction with the Alabama to form the Mobile River, was the new capital.

To St. Stephens, therefore, some of the boarders repaired, and with them went the Widow Rouse. As their boat threaded the delta, traveling streams whose French names were unpronounceable on Yankee tongues, they saw many clam shell heaps of prehistoric Indians, and may have seen the great mound whence Bienville carried off the clay images of the Mobilian savages, but the first settlement of that Frenchman, the hills and well marking the Fort Louis of 1702, twenty-seven miles above modern Mobile, was hid by marsh islands thickly fringed with trees. The great delta, which they had traversed almost from the bay, ceased when they emerged from the Tensaw into its parent river, just below Fort Stoddert. Out of sight to the east was the scene of the Fort Mims massacre, which had roused Tennessee to rescue the Southwest without waiting for Federal troops, and they turned prow up the Tombigbee. Soon they were climbing the ravine up to the bluff on which stood their new home. And a real home it was to Susan, for in September, 1818, she ceased to take boarders, and became the wife of Nathan Whiting.

St. Stephens was new only to them. It was early important as the head of sloop navigation, for Walker's, now McGrew's, Shoals prevented boats from going higher at ordinary water, and the Spaniards, in 1789, built there a commanding fort. A town grew up around it, and easy land grants, sometimes of abandoned British farms, and on the single condition of cultivation, made the neighboring country more prosperous than ever before. But the demarcation line, run amid so many difficulties by the Quaker, Andrew Ellicott, for the United States, and still marked by the stone of 1799, placed St. Stephens on the American side of the boundary, and the Spaniards reluctantly abandoned it. United States troops occupied it, but soon departed southwardly to erect Fort Stoddert, on Mobile River, nearer the border. The government early established its agency or factory for the Choctaws at St. Stephens, however, and under energetic Edmund P. Gaines, of Tennessee, it became important in Southwestern history. About the time of Burr's famous expedition, a town was laid out east of the ravine, and next year the landoffice was established there.

The founders of St. Stephens were, as a rule, from Virginia, Tennessee, or Kentucky, except the cultivated Silas Dinsmore, of New Hampshire. Originally and finally, he was a surveyor, but early in this century was government agent among the upper Choctaws, at Quitman, as afterwards for the district west of



Pearl River. With his Pennsylvania wife, he took a deep interest in civilizing his charges, and induced them to enlarge their truck patches, and add cotton, and to raise poultry, hogs, and horses. Dinsmore incurred the undying hatred of Andrew Jackson by requiring passports for the slaves of travelers, in order to prevent what, in later times, would have been called an underground railroad for runaways. This was before Jackson was famous, but, as Old Hickory seldom forgave and never forgot, their clash ultimately lost Dinsmore his position as agent. In this very year, 1818, they met at an Indian treaty, but the General refused all advances. Later, Dinsmore lost the office of collector, it is said, by injudicious wit. The story goes, that, being asked by the Washington authorities how far the Tombigbee ran up the country, he gravely wrote back that it did not run up at all, but down towards Mobile.

When the Whitings lived there, St. Stephens was in its glory. On High street was the second oldest bank in the territory. Almost opposite, shaded by oaks and walnuts, stood the extensive legislative building, while on all the thoroughfares were houses of some pretensions. The first Legislature was made up of such members of the old Mississippi General Assembly as represented districts within the new territory, and in this way it happened that the upper chamber had but one member. The honorable member from Madison County, James Titus, Esq., unlike Dundreary's birds, "met" all by himself, and passed or rejected measures in due parliamentary form. Pleasant and prominent people lived in the town. The Hazard, Crawford, Lyon, Ross, and other families were there, and society was of the best.

But, nevertheless, there was not the same cause for prosperity that there had been when St. Stephens was the southernmost town of the territory. There was no longer any border, and Ellicott's line was useful only in surveying. Mobile was now American, too, and when the capital was, in 1819, removed to Huntsville, at the other end of what had become the new State of Alabama, and the lately invented steamboats passed at good water from the bay far up the Tombigbee, our shrewd Yankees saw Ichabod carved on the bluff of St. Stephens.

For, all this time, the old French town of Mobile had been waiting. Built in 1711, under the Grand Monarque, she had been the capital of half a continent before her daughter, New Orleans, had been born, and now that Spanish torpidity was banished by the stars and stripes, the interior settling up, and steamers bringing down ever increasing crops of cotton for export, her future was assured. So thought Nathan Whiting, and when he moved there he found it much changed already. Few Spaniards remained, and so many Americans had come that it was no longer necessary to post up notices in French. Even

Fort Charlotte was abandoned, and Dinsmore was platting its site into lots for sale. Nathan had found a permanent abiding place.

Susan, also, had new ties. True, it was, that two of her early children died, but, as with Job, others were given her, and five other sons and daughters filled the happy home on that suburban creek which would have rejoiced Blakeley's heart. Prosperity came, and communication, too, was easier with the New England kin. To the Southern fireside was welcomed Sister Frances, widow of the Nathaniel Thurston who was so long a member of one or the other branch of the Massachusetts' General Court. Her married life had been short, and she sadly buried him at Bradford, beside his six earlier wives. At Sister Susan's, she now met and married Andrew Henshaw, of Leicester, in her old State, a brother of the David Henshaw afterwards in Tyler's Cabinet. Henshaw was a surveyor of note, and they moved to where Claiborne, on a high bluff of the Alabama, commemorates a fort of the great Creek war.

Time passed on, as time will, bringing changes of joy and sorrow. Nathan lived to take part in the thirties, which made Mobile, and saw the eclipse of Blakeley, which had been important enough to be Jackson's headquarters on his way to take possession of ceded Florida. Many of its residents came over to Mobile. And Susan long survived her husband, and saw St. Stephens, too, a dead town, some of its very houses transferred to Mobile. Its streets thence on were traceable only by observing the stone cellars where once stood homes and public buildings, the old Spanish fort preserved by the pines which have overgrown it, the cemetery, with its monuments, the only quarter for which a guide is not needed. Alabama's capital of eighty years ago is as desolate as Nineveh, less recognizable than Pompeii, as wild a place as when the Indian hunted before the white man came. Aunt Susan survived the civil war, and from her home in Mobile, heard the guns of the battle of Blakeley, the last of that great struggle, which ruined what was left of her second home. In those trenches were more dead than the living numbered who had trod its streets. They had called each other Yankees and Rebels, but of the Rebels buried near James Rouse and Josiah Blakeley, many were descendants of Yankee pioneers. Those whom Jefferson had brought South became the best secessionists, and Yankees fight for their convictions, whichever side they take.

Aunt Susan, long before the war, had been reconstructed into an ardent Southerner. She lost all her children but two, who outlived her only a short time, and she lost all interest, also, in the New England kin, some of whom, meanwhile, were growing rich and prominent in railways and politics. Gradually, the

old woman in black, carrying the stern face beneath the white cap, seemed to put between her and them a greater distance than she had traversed when the century was young. And, when she passed away, a little over a hundred years from that day when her grandfather had served at Lexington, she, like the other Yankees she had known at Blakeley, St. Stephens, and Mobile, like her old Norman ancestor who had invaded England with the Conqueror, had become, in all her being, part and parcel of the land she had helped to change.

She did not live to see that later day when a great volunteer army of the sons of Confederates formed under the old flag, on the bay shore, and United States regular troops encamped within the trenches which Maury's Confederates once dug near the old Rouse home on Three Mile Creek. She did not see the transports leave for the American conquest of Cuba from the wharves of Mobile, once Spanish, and a dependency of Cuba.

Her life was in the past, and she could not look forward to a time when a Lee would wear the blue, when Alabama Hobson be the hero of a reunited country, when to the discoverers of America the people of the South, as well as of New England, would all be Yankees. Our outlook is broader, our hopes brighter, and, it may be, our responsibilities are greater.

---

### THE WATAUGA ASSOCIATION.

---

BY JOSHUA W. CALDWELL, KNOXVILLE, TENN.

---

For his article on the Watauga Association, published in the April number of the AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE, Mr. A. V. Goodpasture is entitled to the highest praise. He has presented, probably, a correct solution of an obscure question which has given much trouble to students of Tennessee history, and, if he be right, has shown that all our historians have been wrong in what they have written on the subject of the Watauga government. The present writer, preparing a revision of the book, entitled "Studies in the Constitutional History of Tennessee," was working upon this question when Mr. Goodpasture's article appeared. The fact that the Watauga settlers had preferred the laws of Virginia to those of North Carolina had led him to an investigation of Virginia laws, and of the English County Court system as it existed in the last half of the eighteenth century, in order to find support for the theory that the committee of thirteen was the County Court, and the court of five the quorum. Nothing was found to support this belief.

Mr. Goodpasture's opinion is that the court of five was the original governing body, and was established in 1772, and the thirteen the Revolutionary Committee of Safety, created after the revolt of the colonies. He says, truly, that this being the fact, the difficulties that have perplexed our historians are removed.

There seems to be no good reason to doubt that he is right. The following facts are offered in support of his conclusion:

On the 9th of September, 1775, the Provincial Congress of North Carolina adopted a resolution to appoint in each district a Committee of Safety, to consist of a President, and twelve other members. These committees were to meet quarterly, or as often as necessary, and were to direct the militia and other forces of the colony, and were to have power to receive informations and punish delinquents. (Col. Recs., N. C., Vol. 10, p. 208.)

Under these district committees were to be town and county committees. The district committees were to be appointed by the Provincial Congress. This could not be done in Washington District, as the Tennessee settlements called themselves, because the State, or Provincial Congress, had not as yet assumed jurisdiction over them. But, in all probability, the Washington people, following the plan established by the Provincial Congress, formed their committee of thirteen, and then petitioned for annexation to the State. The petition was found by Dr. Ramsey, among the North Carolina archives, and was indorsed: "Received August 22d, 1776." The Journal of the North Carolina Council of Safety, of Thursday, August 22, 1776, contains the following: "The Petition of the Committee of the Settlements of Watauga and Holstein, called by them Washington District, and of the inhabitants thereof, was read, setting forth the manner in which they first settled that country, and the nature of their title, showing that from the commencement of the present dispute between Great Britain and the Colonies, they have adhered to the Association and Resolutions of the Continental Congress, and promoted as far as they could, the common cause of liberty; that the said settlements are within the bounds of this State, and praying that they may be received into and considered as part thereof. The said Petition being Considered,

*Resolved:* That the Council do approve of the conduct of the Committee and inhabitants of the above-mentioned settlements in regard to the present disputes, and that it be, and hereby is, recommended to the freemen of said settlements, to hold a free and impartial election at some convenient place in said district, on the fifteenth day of October next, then and there to elect five delegates to represent the said district, and that it be recom-

mended to the delegates so elected, to attend at Halifax, in this State, on the tenth day of November next, then and there to lay their case before the Congress of this State." (Col. Recs., Vol. 10, p. 702.)

It seems that the election was held as here recommended, as will be indicated by the following from the Journal of the Congress, for November 18, 1776: "Mr. Willie Jones moved that a Petition laid before the Council of Safety, in August last, from the settlers of Watauga and District of Washington, praying to be annexed to this State, etc., and a resolution of said Council on that Petition, be read. The same being read and debated, it was moved and seconded, that the three persons who now attended Congress to represent the settlers in Washington District, might be permitted to subscribe the test and take their seats; it being objected to, the question was put and carried in the affirmative, 153 to 1. Whereupon, Mr. Charles Robeson, Mr. John Carter, and Mr. John Haile, three of the delegates from Watauga settlement, and District of Washington, appeared, subscribed the Test, and took their seats in Congress accordingly." (Col. Recs., Vol. 10, pp. 925, 926.)

It thus appears that the Washington District was annexed as previously organized, and that the existing Committee of Safety was recognized. At least, careful search has failed to discover any Act of Congress, the appointing power, either revoking or confirming the appointment of the committee named in the petition.

This would indicate that the District was, at the time of annexation, organized as required by the resolution of the Congress, and, therefore, that the Committee of Thirteen was recognized as the District Committee of Safety.

The confusion into which Ranisey and other historians seem to have fallen in regard to the two official bodies referred to in the petition, is in part explained by the fact that the instrument begins with a reference to the committee, and gives an account of it in the second paragraph, postponing the description of the court to the third paragraph. The time of the appointment of the committee, however, is indicated not only by the fact that it is said to have followed the final purchase of lands from the Cherokees, but by the recital that in forming it, the settlers took the "now United Colonies" for their guide.

That the Watauga Association was formed in 1772 is universally conceded, and it cannot be said that in 1772 the Colonies were so united and organized as to furnish a precedent for the course of the Watauga settlers. It is true, as stated by Mr. Goodpasture, that the petition does not confuse the court and the committee, so far as names go, but it always mentions the committee first. It begins by stating that the inhabitants are

assembled in committee; it describes the committee in the second paragraph, and the court in the third; in the fifth paragraph, it says: "We have shown . . . the causes of our forming a committee, and the legality of its election; the same of our court and proceedings," etc. No attempt is made here to add to Mr. Goodpasture's strong and persuasive argument. The quotations from the North Carolina Colonial Records are given, because they cast additional light upon the subject.

So many mistakes have been made upon the subject of the Watauga government, that one must hesitate, even now, to speak positively, but it is at least highly probable that Mr. Goodpasture is right, and certainly he is entitled to the undivided credit for a most interesting and valuable piece of historical work.

---

## SOME VIRGINIA MEMORANDA.

BY HON. FLOURNOY RIVERS, PULASKI, TENN.

Some details from the early county records of Goochland, Cumberland, and Powhatan Counties, Virginia, whence so many Tennesseans derive descent, may not be amiss.

Goochland County, as now constituted, lies only on the north side of the James River. It originally embraced both banks. Before the formation of Goochland this entire section was Henrico County.

Goochland was formed from Henrico in 1727, embracing both banks of the James. In 1749 the south side of the river was erected into Cumberland County, and in 1777 this was further divided into Cumberland and Powhatan.

The parish of St. James Northam once embraced both sides of the river, but in 1745 St James Southam was formed on the south side. See Vol. 2, pages 33 and 34, Bishop Meade's "Old Churches, etc."

---

## A NETHERLAND MEMORANDUM.

John Netherland, Sr., the Sheriff, died in 1740, intestate, and Sarah, his wife, in 1745 or 1746, testate, as appears herein. What her maiden name was I do not know, nor am I enabled to add anything of them anterior to the Goochland records, as follows:\*

---

\*By this statement it is not meant to imply that further examination would not disclose other facts, or that all sources of information have been exhausted, either of the Netherland name or the others. The statement is meant literally—no more is now known to the present writer.

In October, 1734, John Netherland was recommended for appointment as a Justice of Goochland County. Order Book 3, p. 298. Qualified as Justice November 19, 1734; and June, 1741, Wade Netherland qualified as Justice. November 19, 1734, Isham Randolph, Tarlton Fleming, William Cabbell, James Skelton, John Netherland, and George Carrington qualified as Justices for Goochland County. (Wade N., son of John, Sr.). Order Book 3, p. 309.

John Netherland to Daniel Croom. Bond for deed to 360 acres land on north side James River, in Goochland County. "It being the land and plantation whereon I now live." Dated October 22, 1734. D. B. 2, p. 33.

John Netherland and Sarah, his wife, to Daniel Croom. Deed to 360 acres land on north side James River, in Goochland County. Dated November 2, 1734. D. B. 2, p. 32.

John Netherland, bond as Sheriff of Goochland County. Penalty, £1000 Sterling. George Carrington, Ro. Hughes, and Jacob Michaux, sureties. Executed in Court, June 15, 1736. (This was John N., Sr.) D. B. 2, p. 233.

John Netherland to Geo. Carrington and Jacob Michaux. Mortgage on 150 acres land on south side James River, in Goochland County, to indemnify them and Ro. Hughes as sureties on his bond. Dated February 16, 1736. D. B. 3, p. 3.

William Gray and wife, of St. Peters Parish, New Kent County, to Wade Netherland, of same county and parish, 1,333 acres land in Goochland County on south side of James River, on branches of Muddy Creek and Deep Creek. Dated July 12, 1740. D. B. 3, p. 315.\*

March 17, 1740, Elizabeth Netherland comes into court and chooses Sarah Netherland her guardian (the daughter and the widow of John Sr.). Sarah Netherland is also appointed guardian to her sons John and Benj., who are not of age to choose (widow and sons of John Sr.). The negroes belonging to said orphans are Hannah, a negro woman, and Phillis, an infant to Elizabeth; Jimmy, a negro man, to John; Kate, a negro woman, to Benjamin (John Jr. born October 24, 1726, and Benjamin born October 11 (baptized October 28), 1730). William and Mary Quarterly Vol. 5, p. 143.

May 21, 1740, in Goochland County Court, the "Pet." brought by John Netherland, agt., Anne Scott, Ex., etc., of Edwd. Scott, dec'd, is dismissed, the pet'r being dead. O. B. 4, p. 470.

July Court, 1742. Wade Netherland, adm'r, etc., of John Netherland, dec'd, against James Robinson. Suit for debt. O. B. 5, p. 108.

---

\* The St. Peter's Parish Register is on file in the Library of the Episcopal Theological Seminary at Alexandria, Va. Don't know what it would show.

Wade Netherland and Mary, his wife, of Goochland County, to Wm. Gray, 1,333 acres of land on south side James River, on branches of Deep Creek and Muddy Creek. Deed dated June 18, 1743. D. B. 4, p. 179.

Sarah Netherland's will, dated January 26, 1746, proven March 18, 1745 (sic).

To daughter Mary Harris, large book "titled the Life and Death of the Holy Jesus, and my Still and Copper Kettle."

To "My daughter Elizabeth Netherland my black mare, saddle and bridle, and one feather bed and furniture."

To "My son, John Netherland, the young bay mare he hath in possession, with one feather bed and furniture."

To "My son, Benjamin Netherland, the other young mare."

To "My granddaughter, Sarah Hawkins Harris, one Gould Ring value of twenty shillings."

To each of my daughters "a suit of mourning."

"Rest of my estate to my sons, John and Benj."

"My sons, Wade and John Netherland, executors."

In consideration of a marriage recently solemnized between Tucker Woodson and Mary, one of the daughters of Wade Netherland, the said Wade Netherland, of Cumberland County, settles eight negro slaves on said Tucker and Mary Woodson. Deed dated November 26, 1762. D. B. 8, p. 326.

The John Netherland, Jr., son of Sheriff John, was a member of the Revolutionary Committee of Public Safety, Cumberland County, 1775 and 1776. See MS Record of Committee in Va. State Library at Richmond, and Wm. and Mary Quarterly, Vol. 5, p. 103, for the lists.

---

#### THE MOSBYS.

In Goode's "Va. Cousins," pages 221-225, appears some account of these, giving many interesting ramifications. The common ancestor there given is Captain Benjamin Mosby, but from these data herein it would appear he had a brother, or brothers, as will be seen.

He is said to have been the immigrant (but this is not by any means certain), and to have lived in New Kent County. (Nothing is easier than to have "lost" the "immigrant.")

Moreover, his will, as here printed, gives more accurate information as to Benjamin Mosby's children than the traditional statement made in Goode, which names them as Benjamin (2d), Littleberry (1st), Poindexter, Powhatan, Theodosia, and possibly others. But see the will for names.

These are said to be the ancestors of the entire Mosby connec-



tion of the South, possibly of the United States. See Goode's "Virginia Cousins."

Benjamin Mosby's wife was Mary Poindexter, daughter of Benjamin Poindexter, of New Kent County. (See Goode.)

#### LAND OFFICE RECORDS.

The only Mosby and Poindexter land grants in Virginia Land Office are:

To Richard Mosby, September 28, 1728, 400 acres in Henrico County, south side of James River.

To Richard Mosby, August 25, 1731, 400 acres in Goochland County.

To John Poindexter, September 27, 1729, 1,000 acres in Hanover County (Hanover County formed in 1720 from part of New Kent).

This Richard Mosby, I take it, was a brother of Captain Benjamin Mosby.

The Goochland records are as follows:

Thomas Lockett to Benjamin Mosby, of Henrico County, 300 acres of land on south side of James River, on a branch of the lower side of Butterwood Creek, in Goochland County. Deed dated September 18, 1739. D. B. 3, p. 242.

Alex. Kilpatrick to Benj. Mosby, Goochland County, 200 acres land on south side James River, in said county, on branches of Deep Creek. Deed dated October 6, 1740. D. B. 3, p. 359.

Thomas Basset to Benj. Mosby, 200 acres on south side James River, on Deep Creek, in Goochland County. Deed dated March 17, 1740. D. B. 3, p. 444.

Alex. Kilpatrick to Benj. Mosby, Goochland County, 200 acres on south side James River, on Deep Creek, adjoining Thos. Basset. Deed dated August 22, 1741. D. B. 3, p. 457.

Henry Webb to Richard Mosby, of Henrico, land on south side James River, as per patent to said Webb, dated March 24, 1725. Deed dated February 25, 1728. D. B. 1, p. 65.

Nicholas Cox to Hezekiah Mosby and Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of said Cox, 700 acres on south side James River, on a branch of Muddy Creek. Deed dated May 20, 1735. D. B. 2, p. 102.

Nicholas Cox to Jacob Mosby and Susannah, his wife, daughter said Cox. 400 acres land as by patent and 200 acres adjacent. Deed dated March 13, 1735. D. B. 2, p. 225.

Benj. Mosby, of Goochland County, to Richard Mosby, same county, 200 acres on south side James River, bounded by said river and lines of Isham Randolph et al. Deed dated July 20, 1742. D. B. 4, p. 31.

August Court, 1740, Richard Mosby qualified as Captain of Militia, Jacob Mosby as Lieutenant.

September Court, 1747, Benjamin Mosby qualified as Captain in Militia.

Wm. Junarwick, of Southam Parish, Goochland County, to Benj. Mosby, of said parish, 400 acres land among the south branches of Willis River. Deed dated January 26, 1744. D. B. 4, p. 497.

Richard Mosby and Hannah, his wife, of Goochland County, to A. Ransone, 400 acres land on both sides of Angola Creek, of Appomattox River, granted to said Mosby by patent October 13, 1736. Deed dated August 20, 1744. D. B. 4, p. 390.

Mrs. Jane Randolph to Capt. Richard Mosby, an island in James River containing 28 acres, opposite Fleming's Rock Castle tract. Deed dated October 5, 1744. D. B. 4, p. 420.

Jane Randolph to Richard Mosby, 2 acres on the bent of Deep Creek, on south side James River. Deed dated January 17, 1745. D. B. 5, p. 69.

Richard Mosby, gent., qualified as Justice June 16, 1741.

Richard Mosby's will probated in Goochland County Court May 20, 1746, dated March 13, 1745--6.

Gives his wife, Hannah, three negroes and one-third of the stock.

Gives his daughter, Hannah Mosby, six negroes, one feather bed, and furniture, one horse and saddle, and twenty pounds current money.

Gives his son, Micajah Mosby, all the rest of his estate, and if he die without issue, "to my Cousin Richard Mosby, son of Benjamin Mosby, 400 acres of land;" and if "my daughter, Hannah, die without issue, my brother Benjamin Mosby to have the rest of my land."

Son Micajah and Brother Benjamin executors.

There are likewise various deeds to and from Benjamin Mosby of record at Cumberland Courthouse, after the new county was formed in the 1750's, not adding anything. The first court held for the new Cumberland County met at Benjamin Mosby's house, and he engaged to build a courthouse, stocks and pillory, and to provide conveniences for holding the courts. (See County Records, May 22, 1749.)

He does not seem ever to have been a regular Justice of the Peace, but on various occasions, as September 6, 1749, January 23, 1749 (sic) he was of Special Commissions of Oyer and Terminer—as for example:

Memorandum: That at the Courthouse of Cumberland County, on the twenty third day of January, in the twenty third year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King George the Second Anno Domini One thousand Seven hundred and forty nine his Magestys Commission under the Seal of the Colony bearing date the fifth day of this instant January directed to John Fleming,

Daniel Stoner, George Carrington, Thomas Turpin, Nicholas Davies, Wade Netherland, Samuel Scott, Francis James, Alexander Trent, Benjamin Harrison, Charles Anderson, John Harrison. Archibald Cary, James Burns, Benjamin Mosby, Jacob Mosby, Creed Haskins, James Terry, Benjamin Harris, Edward Tabb, and William Bernard, Gent, or any four or more of them whereof John Fleming, Daniel Stoner, George Carrington, Thomas Turpin, Nicholas Davies, Wade Netherland, Samuel Scott, Francis James, Alexander Trent, or Benjamin Harrison, should be one to hear and determine all Treasons, Pettit Treasons or Misprisons thereof, Felonies Murders or other offences or Crimes, whatever committed or perpetrated within the County aforesaid by Will a Negro Man Slave belonging to Joseph Chatwin was openly read together with his Magestys Dedimus Potes-tatem for adminestring the Oaths etc. to the said Commissioners.

Whereupon the said George Carrington pursuant to the said Dedimus had the Oaths appointed by act of Parliament to be taken instead of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy the Abjuration and Test Administered unto him by Thomas Turpin and James Terry Gent. which he took and then Subscribed the said last mentioned Oath and test and took the Oath of a Justice of Oyer and Terminer which was also Administered unto him by the said Thomas Turpin and James Terry, and then said Carrington Administered to the said Thomas Turpin, Nicholas Davies, and James Terry all the above mentioned Oaths which they took and Severally Subscribed the Abjuration Oath and the Test.

The Court being thus constituted the said Will was led to the Bar in the Bar in the Custody of the Sherif and said that he was in no wise Guilty of the Felony wherewith he stood charged, and for his trial he put himself upon God and the Court and thereupon divers Witnesses were Sworn and examined against the said Will and he heard in his own defence Whereupon it seems to the Court here that the said Will is not guilty of the Felony as in pleading he hath alledged and thereupon Proclamation being made as the manner is and nothing further appearing against the said Will It is considered by the Court that he be discharged from his imprisonment and that he be delivered by the Sherif to his Master.

GEO. CARRINGTON.

Teste

GEO. NICHOLAS, Ck Cur.

A Copy

Teste

R. A. NOEL, D. C.

1897, May 20th.

Capt. Benjamin Mosby's will is as follows:

In the name of God Amen. I, Benjamin Mosby, of the Parish of Southam and County of Cumberland, being of Sound perfect and disposing mind, sence, and memory, do make, ordain, constitute, and appoint this to be my last Will and Testament in manner and form following—First it is my will that my body be decently entered at the discretion of my Executors hereafter named, and as to what worldly estate it hath pleased God to bestow upon me I give and dispose thereof in manner following:

I give and bequeath to my Son Littleberry Mosby and his heirs forever, all my land lying in Buckingham County, also all my land called the Courthouse land, and the land I bought of Philip Poindexter also ten Slaves to Wit: Bob, Phil, Milly and her two children, John, Moll, Julius, Will and Margery, I also give unto my said Son Littleberry my Waggon and four good Horses, also every kind of furniture and other thing and things in and belonging to my house, called the New house, also my four large Oxen and Ox Cart and my Silver Watch.

I lend unto my loving Wife, Mary, during her Natural life or Widowhood the use of my following Slaves, to Wit: Gorman Jack Cato, Suckey, Betty and Hannah, also three back Rooms in the house called the Ordinary, a small house called her store, a small house called the dairy, the building added to my Kitchen and my small plank floored Stable—I also lend unto my said Wife during the term aforesaid the use of the following things, to Wit: three good feather beds and furniture, and one bed called the Overseers, three tables, one dozen leather Chairs and half a dozen *ruff* Chairs, which said Beds, Tables and Chairs are to be taken out of the said House called the Ordinary, also the Desk that Stands in our lodging Room, and one Chest—I also lend unto my said Wife, during the term aforesaid the use of the following things, to Wit: Six good Cows, twelve other Cattle all my Stock of *Hoggs*, all my Stock of Sheep, my large riding Chair and two horses, one brass Kettle, three iron Potts, half a dozen Pewter Dishes, two dozen Pewter Plates, one dozen earthen Plates, one dozen Tea Cups and Saucers, half a dozen Delph Bowls, half a dozen Stone Mugs, half a dozen Silver Tea Spoons, one Tea *Pott*, one Tea Kettle, one Cart and Wheels, Such plantation utensils as she shall have occasion for and such other necessities as I may have forgot not exceeding the value of three pounds, the use of all which things above mentioned I intend in lieu of my Wifes right of Dower in my Estate.

I give and bequeath to my Son Poindexter Mosby and his heirs forever all the Lands I have possessed him with, to Wit: the lands I bought of Woodson and Barksdale, and the land I lately recovered of James Daniel and others adjoining the lands of Maurice Langhorne and others, I also give and bequeath to

my said Son Poindexter every Slave and Slaves and other thing and things he is now possessed of by virtue of any gift or loan from me, also one of my Common work horses and my Saddle and bridle.

I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Mary Ann Netherland and her heirs forever, every Slave and other estate of what nature, or kind soever she is now possessed of by virtue of any gift or loan from me, also a Common Horse.

I give and bequeath to my Daughter Theodosia Carrington and her heirs forever the new Negroes I possessed her with also my Negroes Flora, Dick and young Milly, also all the household furniture I have possessed her with and a Common Work Horse.

I give and bequeath to my Grand Daughter Mary Netherland and her heirs forever my Negro Woman Bess and her Child.

I give and bequeath unto my Grand Daughter Elizabeth Netherland and her heirs forever my Negro Girl Betsey, but if my said Grand Daughter should die without issue then I give the said Betsey to her father John Netherland.\*

It is my will and desire that my Son Littleberry and Poindexter equally divide my wearing apparel after giving Seth Burton a full suit of my Common Clothes.

I give unto my Son Littleberry Mosby all my plantation utensils except such as I have lent his Mother, also all the money I may die possessed of, and all my outstanding debts he paying all the debts I may owe at the time of my decease.

I give and bequeath every part of my estate of what nature or kind soever not already given or lent to be equally divided immediately after my decease among my Children, Littleberry, Poindexter, Mary Ann and Theodocia all share alike.

I give and bequeath after my Wife's decease or marriage all the Slaves and every other thing and things, of what nature and kind soever to be equally divided among my Children, Poindexter, Mary Ann and Theodosia and their heirs forever.

It is my Will that my Estate be not appraised, and that if any dispute should arise among my Children concerning any part of my Estate hereby given them, that then and in such case my friends Col. George Carrington, Thompson Swann, Justice John Woodson, and friend and neighbour William Smith or a majority of them or the Survivors of them do settle the Same; and that their Settlement be my Will.

And lastly I do hereby appoint my Sons Littleberry Mosby Poindexter Mosby and my Son in Law John Netherland and Joseph Carrington, whole and Sole executors of this my last Will and Testament hereby revoking all Wills by me formerly made.

---

\* So. it would seem, John Netherland, Jr., married a sister of Littleberry Mosby, and vice versa.

In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this eighteenth day of March one thousand seven hundred and seventy one.

BENJ. MOSBY, L. S.

Signed, sealed published and declared to be the last Will and Testament of Benjamin Mosby in presence of

JNO. OVERTON,  
ROBT. McLAURINE,  
THOMPSON SWANN.

At a Court held for Cumberland County the 26th September, 1774.

The last Will and Testament of Benjamin Mosby deceased was exhibited in Court by Littleberry Mosby, Poindexter Mosby and Joseph Carrington three of the Executors therein named, and the same was proved by John Overton and Thompson Swann two of the Witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded. And on the motion of the said Executors who made oath according to law, certificate is granted them for obtaining a probate thereof in due form giving Security whereupon they together with George Carrington their Security entered into bond according to law, and liberty is reserved to the other Executor therein named to join in probate.

Teste

THOMPSON SWANN, Clk.

A Copy

Teste

R. A. NOEL, D. C.

---

COL. LITTLEBERRY MOSBY.

This son of Capt. Benjamin Mosby married, first, Elizabeth Netherland, daughter of Sheriff John, deceased.

Col. Mosby was born in 1729, and died January 14, 1809. He was married three times: (1) to Elizabeth Netherland, daughter of Sheriff John, (2) to Judith Michaux, (3) to Mrs. Martha Thomas (born Scott), sister of Gen. Charles Scott. He had fourteen children.

Col. Littleberry Mosby had of his Netherland marriage eight children—Benjamin, drowned; John, a soldier of the Revolution; Littleberry, Jr., captain of the Revolution; Sally, married Wm. Cannon, of "Mt. Ida;" Mary, married Robt. Hughes; Betsy, died; Wade, of "Woodland," soldier of the Revolution, died June 1, 1833, at Columbia, Tenn.; and Richard. Of the second marriage, with Judith Michaux, there were six children—Betty Ann, married Benjamin Carrington; Martha, married first Scott and then

Carter; Judith, married Josiah Smith, of "Mt. Rose;" Benjamin; Narcissia (married Benjamin Binford); Jacob Michaux Mosby was the last child. Col. Mosby married the third time Mrs. Martha Thomas, sister of Gen. Charles Scott, the Revolutionary General and Kentucky pioneer—no children.

His Netherland marriage took place in August, 1748, as the following records show:

Sir—This is to Certifie that I give my consent that my son Littleberry Mosby may be married to Mrs. Eliza Netherland, and I desier you may grant them a marridge Lycence for the same, as witness my hand and seal this 9th day August, 1748.

BENJ. MOSBY.

Test:

JOHN NETHERLAND,  
MARY FLEMING.

Sir—I desire you will grant Mr. Littleberry Mosby a marridge Lycence for himself and your Humble Servant.

JNO. NETHERLAND,  
MARY FLEMING.

ELIZA NETHERLAND,  
9th August, 1748.

Sir—Mr. Littleberry Mosby waites on you for a marridge Lycence for himself and my sister Eliza Netherland and I write this to acquaint ye that she is of full age and that I am willing you should grant him the same. I did design to have waited on ve myself this day in order to have Been his Security But was Taken very ill with the cholick. But my Bro. come in who is of age every sence last October ye may depend on wht I have wrote & I conclude myself

Yr Hble Servt,  
WADE NETHERLAND,  
10 August, 1748.

P. S.—Sir: Please to direct the Lycence to Col. Jno. Fleming to sign for Majr. Carrington is from home and will not be in the country till after the day appointed for 'em to be married.

Yrs etc., W. N.

(Endorsed) CAPT. HENRY WOOD,  
Clk Goochland County Court.

I, P. G. Miller, deputy clerk of the County Court of Goochland County do certify that the foregoing are true copies of notes in writing filed in said office with the marriage bond of Littleberry Mosby. Given under my hand this 17th day of May, 1894.

P. G. MILLER, D. C.

Know all men by these presents that wee Littleberry Mosby and John Netherland are holden and firmly bound unto our Lord King George the second and to his Heirs and Successors in the

sum of fifty pounds Currnt money to the payment of wch well and truly to be made wee bind us and either of us our and either of our Heirs Executors and Admmrs. Joyntly and severally firmly by these presents.

Sealed with our seals and Dated this xth day of August 1748.

The condition of this obligation is such that if there be no lawfull cause to obstruct a marriage intended to be had and solemnized between the above bound Littleberry Mosby and Elizabeth Netherland then this obligation to be void, else in force.

LITTLEBERRY MOSBY,  
JOHN NETHERLAND.

Sealed and delivered in presence of

---



---

I, P. G. Miller, deputy clerk of the County Court of Goochland County, Virginia, do certify that the foregoing is a true copy of the marriage bond of Littleberry Mosby filed in the clerk's office of said Court.

Given under my hand this 17th day of May, 1894.

P. G. MILLER, D. C.

Note by P. G. Miller.—Elizabeth Netherland above mentioned was daughter of John Netherland and Sarah Netherland, his wife. Said John was Sheriff of Goochland County in 1736, died about 1740.

The organization of Powhatan County took place at Littleberry Mosby's house:

"At the House of Littleberry Mosby, gentleman, in the County of Powhatan by appointment of Robert Smith, gentleman commissioned to be first Sheriff of the said county on the seventeenth day of July in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and seventy seven, being the third Thursday in the same month. A commission of the Peace and a commission of Oyer and Terminer for the county directed to John Netherland, William Fleming, Littleberry Mosby, John Mayo, William Smith, Thomas Turpin Jr., Robert Smith, Edward Haskins, John Harris, Richard Egleston, Vincent Markham, John Swann, Richard Crump, William Mayo, and Edmund Logwood, gentlemen, bearing date the twenty fifth day of June last past were produced and read and thereupon the said Littleberry Mosby and Thomas Turpin Junior administered to the said John Netherland the oath of Fidelity and of a Justice of the peace and the oath of a Justice of Oyer and Terminer which he took, and then the said John Netherland administered the said oaths to the said Littleberry Mosby, William Smith, Thomas Turpin, Edward Haskins, John Harris, Vincent Markham, Richard Crump, and Edmund Logwood,



which they severally took." (See orders of Powhatan County Court, Book No. 1, page 1.)

"Littleberry Mosby elected vestryman for Southam Parish (Cumberland County) in the room of Stephen Bedford, deceased, December 21, 1758." (See Southam Parish Vestry Book filed in the Clerk's office of Powhatan County.)

"Littleberry Mosby, Esquire is recommended to the Governor and Council of this state as a proper person for Colonel of the Militia." July 17, 1777. See orders of Powhatan County Court, Book No. 1, page 4.

"June 15, 1780, Littleberry Mosby, gentleman, recommended to the Governor and Council for a County Lieutenant of Militia in the room of William Fleming, resigned. Ibid, page 149.

"John Harris, gentleman, is recommended to the Governor and Council as a proper person to be County Lieutenant in the room of Littleberry Mosby, gentleman, who has this day resigned." June 20, 1781. (Powhatan County Court records, Book 1, p. 179.)

"Littleberry Mosby, gentleman, chairman elected by the Trustees appointed by an Act of the General Assembly Intituled "An Act to Establish an Academy in the County of Powhatan, and Incorporating the Trustees thereof," came into court and took the oaths of Allegiance to the Commonwealth and the oath to discharge the trust reposed in him under the authority of said act, which is ordered to be certified." January 20, 1792. (Powhatan County Court records, Book No. 4, p. 73.)

"Littleberry Mosby, gentleman, produced in court a commission to be Sheriff of this county, and he together with John Netherland and Littleberry Mosby, Jr., his securities, entered into and acknowledged their bonds according to law. March 16, 1797. (Powhatan County Court records, Book No. 5, p. 320.)

"Littleberry Mosby, his will dated January 6, 1809, proven March 15, 1809, and recorded in the clerk's office of Powhatan County Court in Will Book No. 3, p. 292. I, Littleberry Mosby of the County of Powhatan and State of Virginia do declare this to be my last Will and testanient in form and manner following, viz: The property which I have given to my children by my first wife, viz: Sarah Cannon, John Mosby, Littleberry Mosby, Mary Hughes, Wade Mosby, and Richard Mosby, and their heirs forever. The property which I have given unto my daughters Betty Ann Carrington, Martha Nicholas and Judith M. Smith I do now confirm to them and to their heirs forever. I give and bequeath unto my son Benjamin Mosby and his heirs forever the land and plantation whereon I now live called Font Hill, purchased of Philip Mayo, together with all my slaves, stock, household and kitchen furniture and plantation utensils. . . . Mentions his sons Jacob Mosby, decd, and John Mosby,

decd; mentions his grandson Jacob G. Mosby, son of Jacob (decd); mentions his daughter Narcissa Binford; and Joseph Michaux and his wife "Judith A. Michaux, formerly the wife of my son Jacob Mosby, decd." Appoints his son Benjamin Mosby and his son-in-law Josiah Smith, Executors.

---

SOUTHAM VESTRY BOOK OF POWHATAN COUNTY.

This vestry book is on file in the County Court Clerk's office at Powhatan Courthouse.

Hezekiah Mosby and Abra Baker, September 10, 1751, begin a procession of Lands between Deep Creek and James River.

Jacob Mosby, Littleberry Mosby and Geo. Chambers, on 11th Nov. next 1751 between Deep Creek and Mrs. Mayo's.

Robt. Hughes, Micajah and Joseph Mosby Nov. 10, next 1755, between James River and Deep Creek.

Littleberry Mosby elected vestryman in Room of Stephen Bedford dec'd Dec. 21, 1758.

Poindexter Mosby & als. on 10th Nov. next 1759 to begin procession between Deep Creek and Salley's path.

Benj. Mosby and Francis Steger between Deep and Muddy Creeks, Aug. 11, 1759.

Ordered that Benj. Mosby have leave to build a gallery in the North East corner of Peterville Church provided he doth not lessen the room, nor predujice the said Church, and that he give Bond and good security to the Church wardens for the same, and to remove the same when found necessary by the Vestry, and that he give the said bond before he begins the said work, Dec. 29, 1761.

Benj. Mosby for supplying 3 churches with Bread and wine this present year Nov. 28, 1767 for 2*£* 5*s.* 0*d.*

Poindexter Mosby, Francis E. Harris and Robt. Bisco on last of Sept. and last of March begin to procession lands between Swans Creek and Appomattox River; mark new lines Sept. 24, 1779.

Benj. Mosby appointed Collector May 25, 1782.

Poindexter Mosby produceth Commission as Capt. of 'Malitia' and took oath Aug. 21, 1777. O. B. 1, p. 9.

Benj. Mosby 1st Lt. in Capt. Munford's Co. July 18, 1782. O. B. 1, p. 226.

Wade Mosby took oath as Capt. July 18, 1782. P. 226

This parish lay on the south side of the River as St. James Northam on the north side.

Vol. 1, Published Proceedings of the Masonic Grand Lodge of Virginia, pages 223, 224, 225, 231, 232, 233 show that Littleberry Mosby, Jr., was suspended by the Scottville Lodge on April 6, 1793, for "equivocating and concealing the truth" in a deposition respecting the election of Representatives in the General Assembly for Powhatan County.

The inquiry had been set on foot by Brother William Bentley, on Nov. 3, 1792. The inquiry had taken place the first Saturday in December, 1792, before a Lodge Committee.

Brother Mosby's answers to Brother Bentley were voted "unintelligible," "evasive," "concealing the truth," "evasive, suppressive of the truth and contradictory." (See Lodge Records in custody of Grand Secretary.)

All this was reversed by the Grand Lodge at Richmond, Dec. 9, 1800, and he and Brother Bentley reconciled, and all his supposed contradictions and evasions fully explained, and he restored to membership, "nothing derogatory to his character as a man or as a Mason," but is "a brother of virtue and integrity."

On Dec. 10, 1800, he is thereupon made a Master Mason.

The Mosby-Poindexter references in Hening's Virginia Statutes: Vol. 5, page 190, May, 1742, regulating ferry-tolls—"from a gut on the land of Richard Mosby, on the south side of the river in Goochland County, across the river on the land of Mr. Tarlton Fleming, opposite to the said Mosby's landing.

Vol. 6, page 15, October, 1748, the same regulation.

Vol. 7, page 213, Militia payments, September, 1758.

Cumberland County—to Captain Poindexter Mosby for his pay and the pay of his guards conducting drafted soldiers to Fredericksburg." 5*£*, 5*sh*, 9*d*.

(He the son of Capt. Benj. M.)

Vol. 11, page 283, 1788; John Mosby in long list of pioneer Kentucky notables, incorporating Transylvania Seminary.

Vol. 12, page 223, 1785; Robert Mosby, gentleman, one of trustees of Harrodsburg, Kentucky.

Vol. 12, page 400, 1786; Robert Mosby, gentleman, one of trustees of town of New Market, Kentucky.

Vol. 13, page 293, 1791; Littleberry Mosby, Senior, one of trustees of Scottville (Masonic) Lodge Academy and to raise money for same by lottery.

Vol. 5, page 258. Town of New Castle, in Hanover, formerly New Kent, laid out on Poindexter's Neck.

There are no Netherland references in Hening.

## CALENDAR OF VIRGINIA STATE PAPERS.

Vol. 2, pages 53, 56, 58, 1781. Col. Mosby informs the Governor that he has enlisted 36 men, and expects to add to the number. On page 56 he calls a court martial, and on page 58 he is again recruiting.

Vol. 3, p. 19. Jan. 13, 1782. L. Mosby's letter to the Governor of Virginia acknowledging receipt of his appointment as one of the purchasers of horses for the public use, but regretting his inability to comply, as he and his whole family are under inoculation for the smallpox, and now in the height of it. Takes the liberty of recommending several gentlemen who will not abuse any trust committed to them, to wit, Col. Ed. Haskins and Arthur Moseley, living near Genito bridge, Major Richard Crump and John Swann.

Vol. 6, p. 471. Powhatan, August 4, 1793. "At the request of John Netherland, Esq., I do certify that I do well remember when Cumberland County was divided, that said Netherland was first in the commission for the County of Powhatan, and that he moved that the Court should recommend him to the Executive as a proper person to execute the office of sheriff, and that his motion was over-ruled.

I am etc.

"L. MOSBY."

Vol. 7, page 192. June 20, 1794. Present in the Court of Oyer and Terminer for Powhatan County, among others L. Mosby.

The foregoing all refer to Col. Mosby. His son, Littleberry Mosby, Jr., was a captain of the Revolution; and was a Brig. Gen. of the war of 1812 (Militia), and the following refer to him:

Vol. IX., page 343. Jan. 26, 1803. "We whose names are subjoined, being officers of the United States during the Revolutionary war, do certify that officers of the Rifle Companies in that Army, drew rifles of the public."

LITTLEBERRY MOSBY,  
WILLIAM MOSELEY.

Vol. X., pages 357-358. 1814. "The following general officers will hold themselves in readiness to take the field at a moment's warning." (Among others), "Littleberry Mosby, of Powhatan." (He was a Brig. Gen. of militia at that time.)

Littleberry Mosby, Sr., was elected a vestryman in the room of Stephen Bedford, decd, Dec. 21, 1758. Mention of him as a vestryman and of Benjamin Mosby's building a gallery is made in Bishop Meade's "Old Churches in Virginia," Vol. 2, pages 33, 34.

Littleberry Mosby's fourth child of his Netherland marriage was Sarah, or Sally. See Goode's "Virginia Cousins." She

married William Cannon, of "Mt. Ida," plantation, of Buckingham County. The marriage records of Buckingham and Cumberland County have been destroyed.

Littleberry Mosby, Sr., was a member of the Cumberland County Revolutionary Committee of Public Safety. See the manuscript minutes of the Committee in the State Library at Richmond, the following dates especially; first meeting Feb. 18, 1775; March 10, 1775; April 20, 1775; May 1, 1775, and May 3, May 10, May 17, 1775; June 30, 1775; Aug. 28, 1775; Sept. 26, 1775; Oct. 17, 1775. On Nov. 27, 1775, he was re-elected by the freeholders. This new committee met Dec. 7, 1775. There were various meetings in 1776—February 29, 1776; April 5, 1776; April 22, 1776, etc., etc. On October 28, 1776, Col. Mosby was again chosen a member by the freeholders. And see "Cabells and Their Kin," pages 159, 160, 161, where extracts from the minutes of this committee are copied.

Col. Littleberry Mosby is buried at "Font Hill," which is two and one-half miles northwest of Powhatan Courthouse, but there are no gravestones.

His daughter, Sarah, must have married William Cannon while that section was Cumberland County, and there are no marriage records of Cumberland County. Their daughter, Martha Cannon, married Silas Flournoy. "Mt. Ida," the home of William Cannon, was and is yet in Buckingham County, on James River, and there are no marriage records preserved of Buckingham County. On April 25, 1799, Silas Flournoy and his wife, Martha, sold his plantation in Powhatan, then and yet called "Farmington," near James River, which he had inherited under the will of his father, Samuel, made in 1780. See Powhatan Deed Book No. 2, page 583.

On March 4, 1807, he bought land on the south side of the Cumberland River, near the mouth of Stone's River, in Davidson County, Tennessee. See deed-book G, page 328, at Nashville. He is spoken of in this deed as being "of Buckingham County, Va.," and so, from 1799 to 1807, he may have lived in Buckingham County. See deed-books H, I, L, at Nashville. His wife, Martha, died during his sojourn in Davidson County, between 1807 and 1817, and is buried in an unmarked grave on this place that he then lived on, on Mill Creek, near the present Mud Tavern Station on the Lebanon Railroad. On August 13, 1817, in deed-book H, page 292, at Nashville, he is described as "of the County of Giles and State of Tennessee," and see deed-book E, at Pulaski, Tenn. On March 3, 1817, he was appointed overseer of the Shelbyville road, leading out northeast from Pulaski. His settlement, "Locust Hill," lay on this road about two miles northeast of Pulaski. He evidently removed to Giles County in the spring of 1817. He died intestate at "Locust Hill,"

on May 18, 1822, of a pulmonary, or bronchial, complaint. Locust Hill was a high plateau which he thought would be beneficial to his disorder.

William Cannon Flournoy (1st), one of his sons, born April 5, 1800, was a lawyer at Pulaski. He married Martha Camp, Nov. 4, 1828. He died Sept. 23, 1838, and is buried at "Locust Hill."

Capt. Benjamin Mosby is buried where he settled, his "Court-house" tract—at Cumberland Old Courthouse. This settlement, which was the courthouse site when all this section was Cumberland County, is about eight miles west of Powhatan courthouse, and sixteen miles east of Cumberland courthouse, and about five miles within Powhatan. Part of the present house is said to have been part of the original house—the ordinary—then used for reception of persons attending court. At the back of the garden is a thicket of honey locust trees, bushes, and periwinkle vines. This is the old graveyard. There are no gravestones—indeed, no evidence of graves. Here Benjamin Mosby and others of his family undoubtedly were buried. W. M. Young now owns the farm. The nearest postoffice is Belona.

(To be continued.)

---

## COCKRILL GENEALOGY.

---

COMPILED BY GRANVILLE GOODLOE, ARKADELPHIA, ARK.

---

From the military records of the Dominion of Virginia, it appears that John Cockeril (who is said to have come to Virginia with Gen. Braddock), enlisted in Capt. Henry Harrison's company, October 8, 1756, being aged thirty years; height, five feet ten inches; a planter of Richmond County. This was under Lieut.-Gov. Robert Dinwiddie's call for Virginia volunteers for the French and Indian war. There is very strong presumption that he was identical with the John Cockerell (or Cockerill) who came to Virginia and married Deborah Fox, before (or early in) 1757, which event he did not long survive, leaving a son John. His widow married David Collingsworth, who, dying, left a son Edmund. By her third husband, ——— Kells, she had no issue. She died at the home of her son, Edmund Collingsworth, in Davidson County, Tenn. She was descended from the English Fox family; her mother was an Allison, and she was related to the Claibornes, Daingerfields, and other old Virginia families. (For the English Fox family, *vide* Burke's "Peerage," and "Landed Gentry.") There is doubt about her *given* name; it may have been Barbara or Thebia.

## SECOND GENERATION.

Issue of John Cockerill and Deborah Fox:

John Cockerill II., born (presumably in Richmond County, Va.), December 19, 1757; was in the body of Virginia troops who went to the relief of Fort Watauga, June, 1776, apparently in the command of Col. Wm. Russell, or Capt. Evan Shelby (*vide* Heyward's "History of Tennessee"); was called into the service again the next year, and was in the winter campaign under Brigadier MacIntosh; in the fall of 1779, he repaired to Fort Patrick Henry, and joined the Robertson colony, bound for the Cumberland country, under command of Col. John Donelson. They reached the French Lick (Nashville) in April, 1780. (A full account of this trip is found in the histories of the period.)

In this company of immigrants was a young widow, Mrs. Ann Johnston, relict of Nehemiah Johnston, and daughter of John Randolph Robertson and Mary Gower. She and Cockerill were married in Robertson's Fort, in the fall of 1780. There were three children of the first husband: (1) Mary Johnston, wife of Gen. Isaac Roberts, who left issue in Maury County, Tenn.; (2) Elizabeth Johnston, wife of Daniel Evans, who left issue in Maury County, Tenn.; (3) Charity Johnston, wife of Reuben Parks, who moved to Mississippi or Louisiana.

John Cockerill II. was engaged in all the battles against the Indians during their attacks on the infant colony, being severely wounded more than once. For this service he was mentioned in the acts of the North Carolina Legislature of 1782, and given three grants of land, one of them the Cockerill Spring tract, embracing the ground of the late Centennial Exposition (*vide* Heyward and the North Carolina Military Grants).

He lived at the spring till after the death of his wife (October 15, 1821), and moved to a brick house on Cedar street (still standing), where he died April 11, 1837. He, his wife, her brother, Gen. James Robertson, and Mrs. Robertson (nee Charlotte Reeves), joined the M. E. Church, under Rev. Wilson Lee's ministry, in 1790. In a pamphlet, "Familycraft vs. Schoolcraft," published about twenty years ago, by Rev. C. D. Elliott (who has known the Cockerills well for many years), the statement is made that Mrs. Ann Johnston taught a Sunday and day school in Nashville, in 1780, before she married Cockerill. She was born in Wake County N. C., in February 10, 1757, and must have married Johnston before the war; he was killed by a falling tree in East Tennessee.

## THIRD GENERATION.

Children of John Cockerill II. and Ann Robertson:

1. John Cockerill III., born in Robertson's Fort, July 8, 1781;

died near Tuscumbia, Ala., August 12, 1841. He married (1) Mrs. Elizabeth Bibb Underwood, relict of Alexander Underwood, and daughter of Thomas Harding and Jane Farrar; she was born January 3, 1783, and died in Tuscumbia, February 7, 1824; (2) Mrs. Harriet Hawkins (nee Rowe), who died sine prole; (3) Mrs. Mary Hill Butler (nee Burruss), relict of Rev. Jesse Butler, and subsequently wife of Rev. Thomas Stringfield; she was born 1797, died October 20, 1867.

2. Ann Cockrill, born February 1, 1783; died in Saline County, Mo., August 16, 1833; she married Drury Pulliam, who was born August 10, 1771; died August 9, 1849.

3. Sterling Robertson Cockrill, born March 7, 1785; died unmarried.

4. James Cockrill, born January 28, 1787; died in West Tennessee. He married (1) in 1809, Sarah Applewhite Jones, daughter of Samuel Jones and Elizabeth Short Goodloe, of Maury County, Tenn; (2) Sallie Melinda Young, daughter of Robert Young and Sallie Galbreath.

5. Mark Robertson Cockrill, born December 2, 1788; died near Nashville, June 27, 1872. He married May 22, 1822, Susan Collingsworth, daughter of Edmund Collingsworth and Alice Thompson; she was born January 4, 1798; died August 2, 1871.

6. Susanna Cockrill, born September 2, 1790; married Ephraim Beazley, moved to Missouri about 1818, and is said to have left issue.

7. Sarah Cockrill, born May 15, 1794; married Thomas Bourland, moved to Vicksburg, Miss., 1820; is said to have left issue.

8. Martha A. R. Cockrill, born November 5, 1800; died May 27, 1844. She married (1) December 19, 1816, Alexander W. Jones (brother of Gov. James C. Jones); (2) December 18, 1821, Robert C. Thompson; (3) July 1, 1835, Herbert Owen.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

Children of John Cockrill III. and Elizabeth Bibb Harding.

1. Sterling Robertson Cockrill II., born Nashville, 1804; married 1832, Ann Henrietta McDonald, daughter of James McDonald and Elizabeth Aylett Moore; died Mt. Nebo, Ark., July 18, 1891.

2. Eliza Minerva Cockrill, born Cornersville, Tenn., April 7, 1806; married 1826, Robert Blackwell Malone, son of Lewis Malone and Ann Blackwell; died North Alabama, June 7, 1835.

3. Washington Jefferson Cockrill, born about 1808; married 1832, Mary McLinn; died sine prole; in Texas, 1833.

4. Granville La Force Cockrill, born Cornersville, Tenn.,



1809; married January 29, 1835, Maria Louisa Turner, daughter of Sugres Turner and Rebecca De Loney; died near Nashville, September 23, 1846.

5. Alfred Madison Cockrill, born about 1812; killed in youth by a falling tree.

6. Tennessee Virginia Cockrill, born January 12, 1815; married 1832, John D. Newell; died Richmond, Texas, April, 1896.

7. Valeria Veturia Cockrill, born September 30, 1816; married August 15, 1832, Wm. Rose; died Giles County Tenn., October 1, 1848.

8. John Pike Cockrill, born about 1819; died unmarried, Matagorda County, Texas, January, 1850.

9. Elizabeth Bibb Cockrill, died young.

Children of Drury Pulliam and Ann Cockrill.

1. Eliza Cheeves Pulliam, born August 24, 1797; married Thomas Shackelford; died March 9, 1851.

2. Ann Robertson Pulliam, born March 7, 1801; died infancy.

3. Ann Robertson Pulliam, born August 10, 1802; married John Wilson; died San Francisco, 1886.

4. Sarah Pulliam, born June 3, 1804.

5. Martha Colman Pulliam, born June 4, 1806; married Peyton Nowlin; died Texas.

6. John Cockrill Pulliam, born January 21, 1808; married Catherine Chambers; died Saline County, Mo., February 11, 1887.

7. Sarah Belinda Pulliam, born June 11, 1810; married James Reed; died sine prole.

8. Mary Jane Pulliam, born April 12, 1812; married Geo. Thompson; died February 3, 1845.

9. Benjamin Graves Pulliam, born December 31, 1814; married ——— Head.

10. Elijah Robertson Pulliam, born April 3, 1816; married May 28, 1839, Eliza Jane Turner; died Glasgow, Mo., November 17, 1842.

11. Luther Rice Pulliam, born January 15, 1818; died sine prole.

12. Mark Robertson Cockrill Pulliam, born February 8, 1820; died unmarried, San Francisco, June 28, 1884.

13. Caroline Tennessee Pulliam, born November 6, 1824; married Rev T. A. Savage; died April, 1860.

Children of James Cockrill and Sarah Applewhite Jones:

1. William Goodloe Cockrill, born near Nashville, September 10, 1810; died Jackson, Tenn., December 23, 1886; married (1) December 29, 1835, Sarah Louise Gholson (who died January 14, 1849); (2) July 1, 1856, Amanda Paralee McMillin (who died August 12, 1876).

2. Edward Iredell Cockrill, born October, 1811; married

October 30, 1832, Josephine Young, daughter of Robert Young and Sallie Galbreath; died January, 1872.

3. Robert Cockrill, said to have married and died in New Orleans.

4. Mark Cockrill, said to have married and died in Mississippi.

5. Rufus Sterling Cockrill, said to be living unmarried in San Francisco.

6. Martha M. Cockrill; married William W. Boykin; died Madison County, Tenn.

7. Louisa Caroline Cockrill; married (1) John Sutton; (2) December, 1839, James R. Terry; died December, 1881.

8. Mary Ann Eliza Cockrill; married Arthur McCain; died Brownsville, Tenn.

9. John Robertson Cockrill; died unmarried in Texas.

Children of James Cockrill and Sallie Melinda Young:

10. Sallie Young Cockrill; married Charles Henry Hill; died Tipton County, Tenn., 1888.

11. James Harvey Cockrill; married Martha Haynie; died 1867.

12. Julia Cockrill; died young.

Children of Mark Robertson Cockrill and Susan Collingsworth:

1. Julia Ann Cockrill, born near Nashville, November 8, 1823; married June 21, 1854, Edward Cheatham; died sine prole, April 21, 1855.

2. Almira Jane Cockrill, born January 29, 1825; married February 2, 1842, William Evans Watkins; resides in West Nashville.

3. George Washington Cockrill, born September 27, 1826; died young.

4. and 5. Alexander Hamilton Cockrill, both had same name and died in infancy.

6. Benjamin Franklin Cockrill, born November 1, 1832; married April 16, 1857, Sallie C. Foster, daughter of Ephraim Hubbard Foster and Jane M. Lytle; residence, "Richland House," the old home of Gen. James Robertson, West Nashville.

See note 10.

7. James Robertson Cockrill, born July 24, 1833; married June 3, 1858, Mary Elizabeth Cockrill; residence Davidson County, Tenn.

8. Daniel Webster Cockrill, born January 12, 1836; died November 4, 1854.

9. Mark Sterling Cockrill, born May 29, 1838; married May, 1865, Mary Hill Goodloe, daughter of John Calvin Goodloe and Harriet Ann Rebecca Turner; residence West Nashville.

10. Henrietta Augusta Cockrill, born December 29, 1839;

married November 8, 1865, Albert Gallatin Ewing; residence near West Nashville.

Child of Alexander W. Jones and Martha Cockrill:

1. Aigernon Sydney Jones, born November 1, 1817; died sine prole in California.

Children of Robert C. Thompson and Martha Cockrill:

2. Robert Emmett Thompson, born October 27, 1822; married September 1, 1843, Mary Elizabeth Tolliver; residence Lebanon, Tenn; died 1893.

3. John Cockrill Thompson, born August 22, 1824; died October 20, 1890.

4. Mary Belle Catharine Thompson, born June 5, 1826; died June 4, 1843.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

Children of Sterling Robertson Cockrill II. and Ann Henrietta McDonald:

1. Robert Emmett Cockrill, born 1834; married 1857, Eliza McGavock; died March 17, 1870. Issue: (1) Sterling Robertson II., (2) Robert Emmett II.

2. Elizabeth Harding Cockrill, born 1836; married January, 1854, David I. Armstrong; died 1859. Issue: Annie McDonald; married Alexander Barrow, Jr.

3. Effie Cockrill, born 1837; married January, 1854, Alexander Barrow; died 1862. Issue: Alexander, married Annie McDonald Armstrong.

4. Henrietta Cockrill, born 1839; married 1858, Wm. L. Nichol; died 1859. Issue: Henry C. Nichol.

5. James McDonald Cockrill, born 1841; married ——— Kellar; died sine prole, February, 1872.

6. Amanthis Cockrill, born 1843; died unmarried, 1865.

7. Valeria Cockrill, born August, 1845; residence, Pine Bluff, Ark.

8. Sterling Robertson Cockrill III., born Nashville, September 26, 1847; married May, 1872, Mary Ashley Freeman, granddaughter of Rt. Rev. Bishop Freeman and of Senator Chester Ashley; residence Little Rock, Ark. Issue: (1) Ashley, married Janie Mitchell; (2) Annie McDonald, married M. Coffin; (3) Sterling Robertson V., married Mary Freeman; (5) Robert Emmett III.; (6) Gariand; (7) Freeman.

Child of Robert Blackwell Malone and Eliza Minerva Cockrill:

John Lewis Malone, born Tuscumbia, Ala., February 15, 1827; married December 21, 1848, Mary Jane Barton, daughter of Armstead Barton and Amanda Catharine Cook; residence, Ingleson, Ala. Issue: (1) Goodloe Warren, (2) Armstead Barton, (3) Amanda Barton, married R. R. Malone; (4) John Lewis II..

married Maria B. Drisdale; (5) Mary Jane, married Paul Thompson; (6) Robert Blackwell II., married Sara E. Lunsford; (7) Eliza Cockrill.

Children of Granville La Force Cockrill and Maria Louisa Turner:

1. Sterling Turner Cockrill, born near Tuscumbia, Ala., December 11, 1835; died September 24, 1848.

2. Sarah Louisa Cockrill, born December 1, 1837; married November 29, 1855, Albert Theodore Goodloe, son of William Hill Goodloe and Emily Elizabeth Williams; residence, Springfield, Tenn. Issue: (1) Granville, (2) Hill, (3) Louise, (4) Theo., Jr., (5) Rush, married Adda W. Wilkerson; (6) Sallie, married Thos. T. Harris, (7) Fannie, (8) Alberta, (9) Mattie, married Wm. R. Stuck, (10) Leslie, (11) Walter, (12) Lizzie.

3. Mary Elizabeth Cockrill, born November 5, 1839; married June 3, 1858, Jas. R. Cockrill; died near Nashville, May 25, 1875.

4. John La Force Cockrill, born October 14, 1841; died Nashville, November 6, 1855.

5. Washington Pike Cockrill, born May 24, 1844; married (1) September, 1869, Mary Wortham, who died sine prole, August, 1870; (2) February 1, 1872, Sallie Ballanfant; died March 8 1884.

6. Granville La Force Cockrill II., born January 8, 1846; died August 10, 1848.

Children of John D. Newell and Tennessee Virginia Cockrill:

1. Augusta Newell, died unmarried, 1856.

2. Valeria Newell, married 1859, James Edward Winton; died 1883. Issue: (1) Sidney Johnston, (2) Lillie, (3) Ella, (4) James Edward II.

3. Ella Newell, married 1853, S. J. Ragsdale; died 1854. Issue: Dan Newell.

4. John Edward Newell, married ——— Moore, December, 1891. Issue: (1) Mat Moore, (2) John Dee.

5. Belle Newell, married Hugh Ogilvy; residence Richmond, Texas. Issue: (1) Allie Rose, (2) Effie Belle.

Children of William Rose and Valera Veturia Cockrill:

1. John Fielding Rose, born January 11, 1834; married March 10, 1856, Mary E. Martin; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) Kate, married T. M. Jannison; (2) John, (3) Virginia Lee, (4) Charles L.

2. Tennessee Virginia Rose, born July 1, 1836; died March 29, 1837.

3. Adella Elizabeth Rose, born March 17, 1838; married 1856, Richard B. Allen; residence, Van Buren, Ark. Issue: (1) Wm B., married Mattie Johnston; (2) Valeria, married Thos. Potts;

(3) Percy, married Lilian Ozier; (4) Richard Ford, (5) Granville Pike, (6) Daniel, (7) Earl, (8) Ethel.

4. William Washington Rose, born October 27, 1839; married September 24, 1887, Mrs. M. Elizabeth Rose (relict of Harding Meredith Rose), dead. Issue: (1) Elizabeth, (2) Virginia, (3) Alma, (4) Julia, (5) Mary Will.

5. Henrietta Cockrill Rose, born May 25, 1841; married November 9, 1859, Hume R. Field; residence, Troy, Tenn. Issue: (1) Edward, (2) Valeria, (3) Wm. Flournoy, married ——— Anderson; (4) Julia, (5) Rose.

6. Harding Meredith Rose, born August 25, 1842; married February, 1884, M. Elizabeth Norwood; died sine prole, July, 1884.

7. Tennessee Valeria Rose, born February 1, 1844; married December 6, 1870, Alonzo Gilbert; residence, Brentwood, Tenn.

8. Granville Pike Rose, born July 23, 1846; married January 19, 1873, E. Virginia Smith; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) James Lanier, (2) Granville Pike II., (3) Will Dake.

9. Sarah Louisa Rose, born September 30, 1848; married November 20, 1873, Wm. D. Henry; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) Mary Lou, (2) Margaret Valeria, (3) Agnes Valentine, (4) Gilbert, (5) Effie, (6) Edith, (7) Haizel, (8) Esther.

Children of Thomas Shackelford and Eliza Cheeves Pulliam:

1. Margaret A. Shackelford, died young.

2. Martha Jane Shackelford, married W. F. Dunnico; residence, Glasgow, Mo. Issue: (1) Jane Eliza, (2) Louisa, married H. H. Sheppard, (3) Thomas, married Julia Turner; (4) Sidney.

3. Thomas Shackelford II., married Sarah E. Harrison. Issue: (1) Ida Eliza, married C. C. Hemmway, (2) Maud, married J. H. Denney; (3) G. Carlisle.

4. Edmund D. T. Shackelford, married Henrietta Bull. Issue: Henry E.

5. W. Bolivar Shackelford, died sine prole.

6. John Cockrill Shackelford, married Martha Neal; residence, Corder, Mo. Issue: (1) Emma, (2) Birdie.

7. Mary Eliza Shackelford, married Thos. M. Finney; residence, St. Louis. Issue: (1) Eliza Lee, married Wm. Mitchell; (2) Mary Shackelford, (3) Wm. Ormsby, (4) Thomas.

8. Sydney Shackelford, married (1) Lucy Boulding, whose issue is Everett, (2) Flora Boulding, whose issue is: (1) Sydney, (2) Mazelle, (3) John Cockrill II., (4) Margery Ann.

9. Martha Ann Shackelford, married R. H. Musser, died sine prole.

10. Leonidas Shackelford, died sine prole.

Child of John Wilson and Ann Robertson Pulliam:

Mary Eliza Wilson, married ——— Wakeman.

Children of John Cockrill Pulliam and Catherine Chambers:

1. Thomas Pulliam.
2. Lawson Pulliam.
3. Joseph Pulliam.
4. Luther Pulliam.
5. Jane Pulliam.
6. Eliza Pulliam.
7. Mary Pulliam.

Children of Geo. Thompson and Charity (Mary Jane) Pulliam:

1. Mary B. Thompson, married John B. Nowland. Issue: (1) Charles, (2) Percy, (3) May.
2. Eliza Thompson, married John Morrison. Issue: (1) Jennie, married John Shaforth, (2) Susan, (3) Larry, (4) Lee, (5) George, (6) Alfred.

Children of Elijah Robertson Pulliam and Eliza Jane Turner:

1. James Erickson Pulliam, born November 19, 1840; died September 5, 1841.
2. Sarah Belinda Pulliam, born November 13, 1841; married November 19, 1868, Joseph Antoine Wherry; died June 5, 1872. Issue: Eliza Pulliam.
3. Ann Cockrill Pulliam, born November 29, 1842; residence, St. Louis.

Children of William Goodloe Cockrill and Sarah Louisa Gholson:

1. James Benjamin Cockrill, died young.
2. Martha Jane Cockrill, married Constantine Scates Hamner. Issue: (1) James Edward, married Kate Harris; (2) Lennie Elizabeth, married Frank Faquir; (3) John Decatur.
3. Sarah Anne Eliza Cockrill; residence, Jackson, Tenn.
4. Susan Caroline Cockrill, married Ralph G. Stegall. Issue: (1) William Alexander, (2) Fannie Garner.
5. Mack Applewhite Cockrill, died young.

Children of William Goodloe Cockrill and Amanda Paralee McMillin:

6. Curtis Cowat Cockrill, married Joshua J. Miller. Issue: (1) Lester, (2) Mabel.
7. Elizabeth Goodloe Cockrill, married Archibald Yarbrough; residence, Gadsden, Tenn.
8. Amanda Louisa Cockrill, married John W. Stanley. Issue: John Cockrill.
9. Robert Edward Cockrill, died unmarried.
10. John Cockrill, married Ida Ballew; residence, Jackson, Tenn. Issue: (1) Ruby, (2) Lula.
11. Mark Rufus Cockrill, married Mary Ballew; residence, Jackson, Tenn.
12. Samuel Jones Cockrill, married Florence Jester; residence, Jackson, Tenn.

Children of Edward Iredell Cockrill and Josephine Young:

1. James Oscar Cockrill, born October, 1832; died unmarried, September, 1866.

2. Tennessee Adelia Cockrill, born December 18, 1835; residence, Tabernacle, Tipton County, Tenn.

3. Sarah Josephine Cockrill, born September 19, 1837; married April 12, 1868, J. Clark Culbreath, son of J. Culbreath and Mary Farrar; residence, Tabernacle. Issue: (1) J. C. Farrar, (2) Mary Josephine, married J. B. Ruffin; (3) John Edward, (4) Charles Goodloe.

4. William Goodloe Cockrill II., born August 19, 1842; married 1867, Laura J. Mays (who died April 2, 1882); residence, Tabernacle. Issue: (1) Jessie, married H. N. Parker; (2) Josephine, (3) Lucian, (4) Willie Ellen, (5) Elizabeth Womble, (6) Curtis Edward.

5. Leonidas La Fayette Cockrill, born January 18, 1846; died unmarried, January 28, 1882.

6. Joseph Edward Cockrill, born January 5, 1849; died January, 1869.

Children of John Sutton and Louisa Caroline Cockrill:

1. Charles Sutton; residence, Tracy City, Tenn. Issue: (1) Charles, (2) Quarles.

2. Quarles Sutton.

3. Sally Sutton, died unmarried.

Children of James R. Terry and Louisa Caroline Cockrill:

4. Martha Ann Terry, born September 27, 1841; married November 5, 1861, W. C. Parker; residence, Fosterville. Issue: (1) Annie S., (2) Louisa C., (3) Zula B., (4) T. Raford, (5) Mary, married Isaac Keller; (6) Eliza J., married John Chandler; (7) Letitia C., married; (8) Lula Justina.

Children of Charles Henry Hill and Sallie Young Cockrill:

1. Barbara Hill, married John T. Matthews; residence, Tabernacle, Tenn. Issue: (1) Charles Abner, (2) Mary, (3) Sarah, (4) John, (5) Benjamin.

2. Charles Henry Hill II., married Ellen Douglas Howard; residence, Covington, Tenn. Issue: (1) Charles Howard, (2) Henry Garland, (3) Nellie Elizabeth, (4) Barbara Melinda, (5) Sarah Edward.

3. James Hill, deceased.

Children of James Harvey Cockrill and Martha Haynie:

1. James Thaddeus Cockrill, married ——— Neville; residence, Colliersville, Tenn.

2. Clay Elizabeth Cockrill, married (1) William Kenney, (2) Robert Young.

3. Sallie Melinda Cockrill, married ——— Jennings; residence, Searcy, Ark.

Children of William Evans Watkins and Almira Jane Cockrill:

1. William Evans Watkins II., born December 21, 1842; married March 15, 1876, Jennie Griffin; died November 8, 1893. Issue: (1) Griffin, (2) William Horton, (3) Irene II., (4) Tillie, (5) Jane, (6) Rachel, (7) May.

2. Mark Cockrill Watkins, born February 27, 1844, died young.

3. Irene Watkins, born August 29, 1845; married July 15, 1865, Orville Ewing II.; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) Jane, married James L. Morrow; (2) Margaret, (3) Orville IV., (4) Sam Watkins, (5) Evans, (6) Orville V.

4. Matilda Susan Watkins, born August 30, 1847; married October 23, 1866, John Overton III., son of John Overton II. and Rachel Harding; residence, Memphis. Issue: (1) Sam Watkins, married Mary M. Hill; (2) John IV., married Mary Goodbar, (3) Jennie, (4) Lea, (5) William Thompson.

Children of Benjamin Franklin Cockrill and Sarah C. Foster (See note 19):

1. Cornelia Cockrill, born February 20, 1859; died July 29, 1860.

2. Sarah Cockrill, born February 20, 1861; married December 20, 1882, Irby Morgan II.; residence McIntosh, Ala. Issue: (1) Cornelia Cockrill, (2) Sarah Cockrill, (3) Benjamin Cockrill, (4) Julia DeMotive.

3. Elizabeth Cockrill, born February 11, 1863; died young.

4. Susan Collingsworth Cockrill II., born June 21, 1864; married January 9, 1889, Edward West Foster, a descendant of Francis West, Lord De La Warr; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) Ellen Cockrill, (2) Robert Coleman VII.

5. Benjamin Franklin Cockrill II., born August 9, 1866; married November 16, 1887, Willie Christian; residence, West Nashville. Issue: (1) Benjamin Franklin III., (2) William Christian, (3) Daisy.

6. Jennette Cockrill, born March 4, 1869; married November 2, 1887, Oliver Hays Shields. Issue: (1) George Washington, (2) Jamie Foster, (3) Sarah Cockrill, (4) Benjamin Cockrill.

7. Narcissa Cockrill, born November 12, 1870; died June 2, 1871.

8. Ellen Cockrill, born February 22, 1872; died January 22, 1877.

Children of James Robertson Cockrill and Mary Elizabeth Cockrill:

1. Susan Collingsworth Cockrill, born May 18, 1859; married November 15, 1876, James Moulton; residence, West Nashville. Issue: (1) Bessie, (2) Etta, (3) Susie, (4) James, (5) William, (6) Louise.



2. Henrietta Cockrill, born July 5, 1860; married October 7, 1881, Almansur Clinton Wilkerson; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) Mamie McKeever, (2) James Robertson, (3) Mark Cockrill, (4) Clinton, (5) Joseph.

(3) Mark Robertson Cockrill II., born September 26, 1863; residence, Nashville.

(4) Louise Turner Cockrill, born May 3, 1865; married August 19, 1885, Hal Hays II.; residence, Nashville. Issue: (1) Harry, (2) Cecil, (3) Alice, (4) Louise.

5. James Robertson Cockrill II., born August 31, 1867; married Lily Hesselgrave; residence, Montana. Issue: (1) Viola, (2) Lily.

6. Granville La Force Cockrill III., born August 14, 1870; died young.

Children of Mark Sterling Cockrill and Mary Hill Goodloe:

1. Harriet Turner Cockrill, born February 19, 1866; married October 19, 1886, Edward Dixon Hicks III.; residence, Bellevue, Tenn. Issue: (1) Mary Hill, (2) Edward Dixon IV., (3) Hunter McDonald, (4) Mark Sterling Cockrill.

2. Mark Sterling Cockrill II., born March 17, 1867; married March 27, 1893, Lena Newsome; residence, Montana. Issue: (1) Mark Robertson III., (2) Lena Newsome.

3. John Calvin Goodloe Cockrill, born March 12, 1868; married September 14, 1893, Mamie Harris; residence, West Nashville. Issue: (1) John Calvin Goodloe II., (2) Mary Harris, (3) Sterling Blackburn.

4. David Short Cockrill, born October 17, 1869; in First Tennessee Regiment Volunteers for Hispano-American war.

5. Jane Watkins Cockrill, born June 28, 1874; residence, "Richland Place," West Nashville.

6. Mary Hill Goodloe Cockrill, born June 7, 1880; residence, "Richland Place," West Nashville.

Children of Albert Gallatin Ewing and Henrietta Augusta Cockrill:

1. Rowena Ewing, born November 11, 1866; married October 7, 1884, Risley Lawrence; residence, Nashville, Tenn. Issue: (1) Risley II., (2) Ewing, (3) Thompson, (4) Benjamin, (5) Rowena.

2. Albert Gallatin Ewing II., born January 27, 1868; married October 27, 1897, Leila Berry; residence, Rome, Ga.

3. Susan M. Ewing, born May 31, 1869; died young.

4. Mark Cockrill Ewing, born December 29, 1870.

5. Orville Ewing III., born May 5, 1872; residence, Nashville

6. Mary Ewing, born September 5, 1873; residence, near West Nashville.

7. Edgar Ewing, born March 7, 1875; died young.

8. Milbrey Ewing, born July 6, 1876; residence, near West Nashville.

9. Henrietta Ewing, born March 16, 1878; residence, near West Nashville.

10. Robertson Cockrill Ewing, born August 1, 1880; died young.

11. Margaret Ewing, born August 28, 1884; residence, near West Nashville.

Children of Robert Emmett Thompson and Mary Elizabeth Tolliver:

1. Belle Thompson, married Thomas Benton King; residence, Brownsville, Tenn. Issue: (1) Thomas Benton II., (2) Estelle, married Miles Bradford, (3) May, married William Kinney; (4) Robert, (5) Opal, (6) Earl.

2. Lillard Thompson, married, (1) Belle Brennan, (2) Bessie Graham; residence, Lebanon, Tenn.

3. Zachary Tolliver Thompson, married Lettie Cannon, descendant of Gov. Cannon; (1) Emmett, (2) May, (3) Daisy.

4. Emmett Thompson, married J. J. McClelland.

#### NOTES.

(1) The Cockerell family is of long standing in England, the spelling of the early Plantagenet period being "Quoquerell." This suggests a French origin, which is strengthened by the existence, at the present day, of a French family of "Coquerei." John is a popular given name among the English Cockerells. There are several variations in the coat-of-arms, though oldest blazon seems to have been: "Or, between two game cocks, in pale, gules; a leopard's head, azure."

(2) John Randolph Robertson is said to have been son of John Robertson and Eliza Randolph, of Belfast, Ireland, and grandson of James Robertson and Ann Mackenzie, of Scotland. (For the Mackenzie clan, *vide* Burke's "Peerage.") The Robertsons derive their name from Robert de Atholia, Baron of Struan (or Strowan). Their title, "Clan Donnachie" (Duncan's Clan), comes from Robert's ancestor, Duncan the Fat, Earl of Athole. Duncan's ancestor, the first Earl of Athole, was third son of the King of Scotland. The Earldom of Athole passed out of the family with an heiress, but the male line of Robertsons kept (and still keep) the Barony of Struan. Arms: "Gules, three wolf heads, erased, argent, langued, and armed, azure."

(3) Descendants of Capt. Abel Gower, father of Mary Gower, claim that he was of the Yorkshire Gowers now called Leveson-Gower, of which are the present Earl of Granville, and the Duke of Sutherland. Lord Gower married the heiress of Lord Granville, and that may be the way the latter name got into the Cockrill family.

(4) The Tennessee Hardings claim descent from Martin Hardouin, French Huguenot refugee: this line of descent is unknown to me. But Thomas Harding (who most probably spelt it Hardoin or Hardin) came to Virginia with Capt. Moore Fountleroy, May, 1650. His son Thomas II., married Mary Giles, daughter of Wm. Giles and Bethania, daughter of John Knowles; his son, Wm. Harding (born 1720), married Sarah La Force, daughter of Rene La Force, French Huguenot. (For family of Caumont de La Force, *vide* Lippincott's Biographical Dictionary). His son, Thomas Harding III., married Jane Farrar, daughter of William Farrar and Elizabeth, daughter of John Bibb. Elizabeth Bibb Harding, daughter of Thos. Harding III., married John Cockrill III., as stated in text. Giles, brother of Thomas Harding III., married Amy Morris; his son, Thomas IV., married Elizabeth, daughter of Beal Bosley and Margery Shute; his daughter, Rachel Harding, married John Overton II., whose son, John III., married Matilda Watkins, as stated in text.

(5) Edward Jones, of Warren County, N. C., married Abigail Shuzar; his son, Edward II., married ——— Hill; his son, Samuel married Elizabeth Short Goodloe, daughter of Robert Goodloe and Sarah Short; his daughter, Sarah Applewhite, married James Cockrill, as stated in text.

(6) George Goodloe came to Middlesex County, Va., during (or before) 1674; his son, Henry, was father of George II., who married Diana, daughter Garrett Minor and Diana Vivian; George II.'s son, Robert II., married Sarah, daughter of William Short and ——— Barrett; Robert II.'s son, David Short, married Mary, daughter of Thomas Hill and Susan Parham; David S.'s son, William Hill, married Emily Elizabeth Williams, daughter of Greenberry Williams and Susan Tanner; William H.'s son, Albert Theodore Goodloe, married Sallie L. Cockrill, as stated in text. John Calvin, another son of David Short Goodloe, married Harriet Turner; their daughter, Mary Hill, married Mark Sterling Cockrill, as stated.

(7) A daughter of Sir Alexander Spottswood, Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia, married Bernard Moore (sixth in descent from Lord Chancellor Sir Thos. More); his son, John Spottswood Moore, married Henrietta Aylett; his daughter, Elizabeth Aylett Moore, married James McDonald; his daughter, Ann Henrietta, married Sterling Robertson Cockrill II., as stated. One of Gov. Spottswood's ancestors married Rachel, daughter of David Lindsay, Bishop of Ross, who descended from the first Earl of Crawford (Lindsay), husband of Princess Margaret, daughter of Robert II., King of Scots (*vide* Burke).

(8) Richard Blount settled in Surry County, Va., 1652, and died there 1656. He was either son of Sir Walter Blount, Baro-

net of "Soddington," England, or grandson of Sir Richard Blount, of "Maple Durham," who married Elizabeth West, daughter of Baron De La Warr. (For royal descent of these Blounts, *vide* Burke.) Thomas, only son of Richard Blount, of Surry, married Priscilla, daughter of Thomas Browne; his son, William Blount, married Priscilla Sugres; his daughter, Priscilla Blount, married John Turner; his son, Sugrès Turner, married Rebecca De Loney; his daughter, Maria Louisa, married Granville La Force Cockrill; another daughter, Harriet Turner, married John Calvin Goodloe, whose daughter, Mary Hill, married Mark Sterling Cockrill.

(9) Green Hill (born 1714), married Grace Bennett; his son, William, married Mary Jones (sister of Samuel Jones, above mentioned); his son, James, married Martha Jeffreys; his son, Chas. Henry, married Sallie Young Cockrill.

(10) To this family belong the Lightfoots, Colemans, Hubbards, Slaughters, Lytles, Taylors, and Days. The Taylors and Days are descended from the second Lord Baltimore, whose family name was Calvert.

(11) John Cockrill II. had a half brother, Simon, who came to Nashville (?) (probably with him), but went to Kentucky the next year. He (Simon) is the ancestor of Gen. Francis Marion Cockrell, United States Senator from Missouri, and of Jeremiah Vardiman Cockrell, Congressman from Texas. I think Simon married a daughter of Rev. Jeremiah Vardiman, a noted Baptist minister of Virginia.

The genealogy of this branch has been published by Felix Grundy Cockrell, Jr., of East St. Louis, in which he states that John Cockerell I. came from Wales to Virginia. He left at least four sons, all of whom were in the Revolutionary war, namely: Moses, who lived in Maryland; Simon, of Kentucky; Peter, of Kentucky, and John II., of Tennessee.

Another statement is made to the effect that Simon was a brother of John I., who married Miss Fox.

---

## THE NASHVILLE FEMALE ACADEMY.

Although not the first institution for female education in Tennessee, yet near to the first in point of time, and certainly the first in point of success and fame, was the old Nashville Female Academy. In this institution, in the early years of the nineteenth century, the grandmothers of the present generation were subjected to the rigid discipline of the olden times. Their standing in class was laid before the public. It was printed and distributed in circulars, copied in newspapers, and widely circulated.

A sample of the methods used by the stern schoolmaster of

that day is given in the following circular of the academy, which was preserved by Mrs. Marchbanks, and presented to the magazine, by her grandson, Hon. Flournoy Rivers, of Pulaski, Tenn.:

### BILL OF RECITATIONS, ETC.,

FOR THE FIFTEENTH SESSION, COMMENCING ON THE NINETEENTH OF JULY AND TERMINATING ON THE FIFTEENTH OF DECEMBER, 1824.

	Perfect.	Well.	Bad.	Absent.	Irregularities.		Perfect.	Well.	Bad.	Absent.	Irregularities.
<i>First Div. of the 4th Class.</i>						<i>Fourth Div. of 4th Class.</i>					
Mary J. Baird	297			3		Mary B. Shelby	298	2			6
Susan P. Trimble	260			40		Susan P. Davis	293				7
Martha A. Dunn	277			23		Martha H. Williams	288	3			9
*Martha A. R. W. Camp	297			3		Catharine J. Clemm	250			50	2
Martha M. Purdy	282			18		Frances A. Cheatham	105			195	
Sarah J. Lytle	288			12	6	Eliza J. Tate	134	4	2	160	4
Margaret T. Gordon	290			10	2	<i>First Div. of 3d Class.</i>					
Mary D. Stothart	279			21	2	Malinda T. Marshall	400				
Julia M. Lytle	260			40	4	Elizabeth H. Crutcher	372	5	4	20	6
Elizabeth V. Dunham	296			4		Maria M. Keeble	332	4	4		8
Sarah H. Dunham	292			8		Susan M. Spence	391	6	4		2
Matilda C. Wendel	260			40		Minerva A. Eakin	270	3	1		
Maria W. Turner	299	1		2		Caroline A. O'Reilly	390	5	3	8	
Lucy H. Sappington	255			45		Martha A. T. Grundy	345	12	9		6
Sarah W. Burrus	288			12		Ophelia C. Polk	380	5	4	12	8
Cassandra T. Banks	243			57		Susannah McKiernan	390	3	3		4
<i>Second Div. of 4th Class.</i>						Martha Norvell	400				
Margery B. Maxwell	297			3		Mary J. Berryhill	400				
<i>Third Div. of 4th Class.</i>						Caledonia Gordon	330	11	9	50	6
Phila Ann Lawrence	265			135		Margery S. Bosley	260			40	
Mary F. Dickson	120			180		Mary A. Clark	232				
Sophia W. Hall	286			14		<i>Second Div. of 3d Class.</i>					
Angelina S. Wharton	296			4	2	Lucretia Morehouse	375	8	6	10	
Elizabeth V. Harding	294			6	2	Ann M. Morehouse	361	11	8	20	
Martha J. Shute	294			6		Eliza A. Baird	400				
Caroline C. Hewitt	175			125		Jane M. Hume	365			35	
Malinda D. Clark	175			125		Eleanor R. Nichol	350	4	4	40	
Frances M. Love	232			68		Susannah E. Currey	201				
Elizabeth D. Love	232			68	4	Tennessee M. A. Stump	340	20	12	20	8
Cecilia V. Henderson	255			45		<i>First Div. of 2d Class.</i>					
Ann H. Nicholson	270			30		Sarah A. Wade	300	12	6	50	
Eliza A. B. Woodfolk	300			4		Emeline Wooten	260	12	5	28	
Martha H. Donelson	280			20		Catharine B. Marshall	301	14	6	16	
Sophronia L. P. Boyd	250			50	5	Maria A. B. Anthony	330	6	4	14	
Narcissa M. A. C. G. Pillow	255			45		Mary A. McLemore	240	5	3	133	4
Mary Ann Lewis	258	3	2	37	4	Martha Washington	70				
Elizabeth A. Robertson	290	4	2	4	10	Eliza A. Bell	278	16	5	112	
Elizabeth S. Cantrell	290	4	3	3	6	<i>Second Div. of 2d Class.</i>					
Clementina H. Boyd	277	3	1	119		Maria Grundy	268	10	4	120	4
Naomi L. Polk	275			25	10	Mary Robertson	310	20	8	30	6
Georgiana Beck	236	4		60		Maria Henderson	340	25	2		10
Nancy Barrow	178	5	5	12	2	Mary Ann Turner	302	6	4	65	2
Mary A. Newsum	252			48		Mary Agnes McCowat	320	11	10	36	10
Martha H. Bradshaw	140			160		Delilah Bosley	160	10	6	76	2
Frances R. Long	284	1		15		Nancy Adams	100	8	2	274	
Margaret S. Tate	140			160		Lavinia Erwin	160	20	4	10	
						Eliza Erwin	104	16	6	6	
						Eleanora Robertson	100	25	6	14	
						Margaret Hynes	150	22		20	

The next session will commence the Seventeenth January, 1825.

\*Martha Ann Rebecca Ward Camp, daughter of Dr. John Hamlin Camp, and of his wife, Dorothy Chamberlain Jones; born at "Todd's Knob," Davidson County, Tenn., November 2, 1810; married (first) William Cannon Flournoy (I.), a lawyer of

## SOME HUGUENOT MEMENTOES.

The Huguenot settlement that was planted at Mannakin Town (King William's Town), on the James River, in what is now Powhatan County, Va., in 1700, was a part of the Protestant movement that left France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, in 1685.

Many of the names found in the old French-English Parish Register are seen in American, English, and French papers of the present.

Some of these Huguenot families had sojourned at Geneva more than a century—descended from refugees who fled to the city of Calvin after the Bartholomew of 1572, or the earlier massacre of March 1, 1562, at Vassy (Champagne, Haute-Marne).

One of the founders and ministers of the French colony of 1700 was Claude Philip de Richbourg.

On May 3, 1704, the Virginia House of Burgesses passed an Act appropriating 10,000 acres of land for these French colonists, and the line of demarkation of this reservation is yet locally known as "the French road."

A certified copy of this act, signed by William Randolph, clerk of the House of Burgesses, of date of May 3, 1704, is copied for this number of the magazine, by its present owner. It is yellow with age, and somewhat mutilated:

"Wednesday, May the 3d, 1704."

By the House of Burgesses,

"Resolved:

"That ten thousand acres of land be laid out at the  
"Manakin Town and Appropriated to the use of the  
"French Refugees there Settled.

"Resolved:

"That every French Refugee inhabiting at the Man-  
"akin Town and parts adjacent have liberty to take up  
"so much of the said ten thousand Acres as will make

---

Pulaski, Tenn., on November 4, 1828, at her father's home in Elkton, Giles County, where the family had removed in 1817; married (second) Judge Andrew J. Marchbanks, of McMinnville, Tenn., on October 21, 1845; died in Giles County, April 13, 1875. Her father was graduated M.D. from the University of Pennsylvania, Class of 1804, and married Dorothy C. Jones on June 20, 1808. He represented Giles County in the Assembly in 1821, 1825, and 1827; Speaker *pro tem.* all the session of 1821 and Speaker in 1827. His father, Capt. John Camp, died at Elkton, Giles County, August 29, 1829, in his sixty-sixth year, and was Captain of the First Virginia Regiment October, 1777, to May, 1778.

"his quantity (already taken up) one hundred thirty-three acres."

"Copia."

"Test."

"WILLIAM RANDOLPH,"

"Cl. Ho. Burgs."

Another historical paper in the same connection, and owned by the same person, is a copy of the act naturalizing Claude Philippe de Richbourg, Francis Ribot, Peter Faure, John Joanny, James Champagne, Stephen Mallet, Stephen Chastain—April 18, 1705.

It is set out at page 228, 3d Hening, Virginia Statute, and the reference to it in Casey's Index—"Richbourg"—to the Statutes, as page 328, is error.

Copies of several more of these old papers are promised for the future.

On an old deed in this collection, made in 1728, by Peter Chastain, appears a wax seal, the impress of which is very dim, but a lion rampant, and other devices appear, and doubtless a magnifying glass would reveal more—the Chastain arms evidently. (One of the physicians of the colony was Chastain—Stephen or Peter?

## CORRESPONDENCE OF GEN. JAMES ROBERTSON.

(109)

KNOXVILLE, April 18th, 1794.

Sir,

In case Mr. Seagrove sends in the prisoners as his letters give reason to hope you will by his express return to the Creeks and Cherokees such prisoners as you may have in your possession of either of those nations. You will also write to Seagrove and the Chiefs of the Nations respecting such prisoners as you shall send in. I am,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brig. Gen. Robertson.

(110)

The Committee to whom was referred the President's Message of the 30th of January last, report as their opinion:

That the present situation of the southwestern frontier requires that the government of the United States take the most speedy and efficacious measures, as well to afford ample pro-

tection to the exposed inhabitants of that frontier, from the repeated depredations of the hostile Indians, as to prevent unauthorized attacks by the lawless white inhabitants on the Indian tribes.

That in order to effect these purposes, the Committee recommend the following resolutions:

That the President of the United States be authorized to call out such a number of the militia of the said States as may be requisite to carry on offensive operations against such tribes or towns of Indians, as may continue hostile, if, in his opinion, such offensive measures may be necessary for the security of the frontier inhabitants, by compelling the Indians to a strict compliance with their treaties, and to prevent unprovoked aggressions by them. Provided, That the whole number of militia so to be called into service, at any one time, shall not exceed ———officers and privates, and be continued in service at any one period longer than the term of———months; the President to be authorized to establish such military posts as he may judge necessary, to prevent, as far as practicable, any depredations of the Indians within the boundary lines fixed by the treaty between the United States and them, and also to prevent any lawless attacks by the white inhabitants on the Indians, or encroachments on their hunting grounds, within the said line, and to cause military posts to be guarded by troops raised for the defense, and to cause to be raised on the terms of the present military establishment one or more troops of horse to be used as patrols between the said posts.

That every officer, noncommissioned officer, or private of the United States who shall go armed over the mutual boundary line, and commit murder, or any other depredations upon the Indians, without being legally authorized thereto by the President, every such person so offending shall be considered as having put himself under military power, and shall be tried by a court martial, and if convicted of the murder of the Indian, shall suffer death; and if convicted of any offense short of murder, shall suffer such fines and penalties as shall be adjudged by the said court martial, not extending to the taking life; and, moreover, if the offender shall be an officer, upon such conviction he shall be cashiered and forever thereafter disqualified from holding a military commission within the United States; provided, that this prohibition shall not extend to the militia officers or privates pursuing any Indian party committing depredations within the present limits of the said States.

Copy of the report of the Committee on Indian affairs received at Knoxville, April 16th, 1794, forwarded for the information of the Mero District.



(111)

KNOXVILLE, June 14th, 1794.

Sir,

Inclosed is a copy of a letter from the Secretary of War, of the 14th day of April last, by which you will be informed of the protection the President has ordered me to extend to the District of Mero. My order of 20th May to the commanding officers of the counties comprising the District of Mero will inform you in what manner I have ordered the infantry to be raised and disposed of. If you judge any alteration necessary for the greater security of the Inhabitants you will make it, except that part which is given in express conformity to the orders of the Secretary of War to me.

Lieutenant Mitchell who marches with you from this place subject to your order commands the Cavalry as allowed by that order. Lieutenant Mitchell after his arrival in Mero District is to continue subject to your orders for the time on which he is ordered on duty.

You will observe as the order of the Secretary of War of the 14th day of April limits the degree of protection that is to be extended to the Mero District that you are not to order on duty of the Militia any greater number than is by that order permitted, except in case of an invasion by a superior force of hostile Indians, and in that case you will repel such Invaders with such a part of your brigade as shall be necessary for such repulsion.

On the 24th August a part of the Knox mounted Infantry will rendezvous at this place to march to the Mero District to supply the place of Lieutenant Mitchell, and to continue on duty for the protection of the Mero District until the first day of December.

I am Sir,

Your obedient servant,

General Robertson,

WM. BLOUNT.

Mero District.

You will receive the six Howitzers and the ammunition and make such disposition thereof as shall in your judgment best insure the protection of the District, that being the object of the Government in ordering them to you.

WM. BLOUNT.

(112)

George Washington,

President of the United States of America.

To all to whom these shall come:

Know we that the nation of Indians called Chicksaws:

Inhabiting the District of land herein described to wit, Beginning on the Ohio at the ridge which divides the waters of the

Tennessee and Cumberland and extends with that ridge Eastwardly as far as the most eastern waters of the Elk river, thence to the Tennessee at an old field where a party of the Chickesaws formally lived, this line to be so run as to include all the waters of Elk River, thence across the Tennessee and a neck of land to Tenchacundy creek a southern branch of the Tennessee and up the same to its source, thence to the waters of Tombigby, that is the west fork of long leaf pine Creek, and down it to the Chickasaws and Choctaws a little below the trading path.

And the Towns, villages, and lands of the same Community are in their persons, towns, villages, lands, and hunting grounds and other rights and property in the peace and under the protection of the United States of America.

The United States are hereby warned not to commit any injury, trespass or molestation whatever on the persons, lands hunting grounds, or other rights or property of the said Indians. And they and all others are in like manner forbidden to purchase, accept agree treat for with the said Indians directly or indirectly the title or occupation of any lands held or claimed by them, and I do hereby call upon all persons in authority under the United States and Citizens thereof in their several capacities to be aiding and assisting to the prosecution and punishment according to of all persons who shall be found offending in the premises.

Given under my hand and the seal of the United States this twenty first day of July in the year of our lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety four.

---

(113)

FORT MASSAC, July 9th, 1794.

Sir,

I have the honor to Inform you that pursuant to the directions of Government I have began to Establish a Garrison at this post.

From Information Received I may Suppose that this will be an Eye sore to the Cherokees & Should they at this moment come to hover round, they might injure my out Parties. I should therefore request that in case you hear of their motions you will give me the earliest information in your power.

Permit me to make you a tender of my service, & rest assured that it will always give me pleasure to have it in my power to be any ways usefull to the people of your Settlement.

I am Sir,

Your ms obt servant,

Col. James Robertson,

Brigadier Gen'l of the District of Mero.

(114)

FORT TELlico, July 14th, 1794.

Friends and Brothers,

I have seen your runners, and am glad to hear from them that the Lower Towns are beginning to think of peace. I hope they are sincere as I am when I assure you that peace is the wish of the United States, and your interest. But do not deceive yourselves—Peace does not consist in writing or Beads, but in one and all of your people leaving off to kill the Citizens of the United States and steal their property, and in restoring the Prisoners, Negroes, and other property that is in your, Nation, and in delivering at this place the deserters from the Regular Troops. When this is done we will have peace.

I did not send you word that I would meet you in the middle ground in thirty days for a Ball Play—I told the Middle Striker to tell you that unless the lower Towns made peace immediately, they would feel what war is before winter, and this I repeat to you now.

You must talk strong to the Creeks and stop them from going to Cumberland to war, and if they not hear your talk, you ought to speak a language that they may feel. You will loose more by a war with the United States than with the Creeks and if one is necessary, which will undoubtedly be the case if they pass through your Towns to war I would advise you to strike the blow, and you will not strike alone.

Your Friend &amp; Brother,

JOHN MCKEE.

To the Glass and other Chiefs of the lower Towns of the Cherokees.

(115)

CRAGFONT, 21st of July, 1794.

Dear Gen'l,

On the Melancholy and unfortunate fall of my Brother George, I ordered Capt. Blackmore with about 50 mounted militia to pursue the trail if possible untill he came up with them. He has just returned after a long and fatiguing march of near two weeks without affecting anything.

On this unhappy occasion I rather attended to my own feelings as a man and a brother, than to my duty as a soldier and an officer. I however trust and hope that if it is in your power, you will permit me to have these men mustered and let them be paid for thcir services.

The inhabitants of this County is very desirous that the Spies

may be continued as usual. If it can be admitted please give me orders for that purpose as soon as possible.

Captain McEllwerth and Mr. James Clendenning whose I sent to explore Cumberland River from the mouth of Cany Fork to Salt Lick Reports, That the Hills set in very close from the mouth of the Cany Fork for a considerable distance up the river. That the only Eligible place for a Station is at the mouth of a small Creek about 3 1-2 miles below the Salt Lick Creek, and in sight of the Mouth of Martin's Creek. Here they say the ground is somewhat broken, But there is the appearance of two or three Springs in the neighborhood of it, and they believe a road may be got from it to the present Holston Trace, tho it will not be much nearer that the Salt Lick.

I am D Sir Your most obedient

Humble Servant,

Gen'l James Robertson.

WINCHESTER.

(116)

TELLICO BLOCKHOUSE, July 19th, 1794.

Sir,

I enquired of the Cherokees when the large \*party of Creeks passed the Lower Towns to War against Cumberland, and was informed that they had passed fifteen days ago, and that small parties were going on daily. It will be improper I conceive for me to leave this place till the return of the Middle Striker, which will be on Monday I expect, after I see him I shall immediately repair to Knoxville.

I am,

respectfully,

Your Excellency's

Obedient Servant

(Signed)

JOHN MCKEE.

\*Consisting of from eighty to an hundred.

His Excellency

Governor Blount.

Copy of letter from John McKee to Governor Blount, July 19th, 1794.

(117)

KNOXVILLE, July 21st, 1794. Monday.

Sir,

Your letter of the 7th Instant Express by the Bearer Elisha Green was duly received, (though he was so unfortunate as to have his horse taken from him by the Indians near Flinn's Lick

and to be forced to come on afoot) and in my opinion contained such important information that I immediately forwarded it express to the President of the United States. The enclosed letter from Mr. McKee contains the latest information from the lower Towns of the Cherokees.

As to the large party from the length of time since they passed the Tennessee, I fear they will have struck their Blow and returned before this can reach you, and the small parties I hope the protection ordered by the President will be sufficient to repel.

Colonel Robertson and James Donelson and all other persons entitled to pay for services must exhibit their accounts to the Office of the Agent of the War Department at this place in person, or by power of Attorney duly authenticated and upon his passing them (the accounts) it will be my duty to issue a warrant for the payment of the money. The Agent of the War Department is not returned and it is uncertain when he will, but I look for a person in that character by October at farthest, perhaps he may arrive sooner. I am without Information or Intimation which of the persons on the Nomination for Counsellors will be approved. I am also without official letters since those delivered to me by Dr. White at Salem. Major Beard in the Character of a Subaltern will march from this on Saturday next to take possession of the post on Cumberland River.

By his delay you will see that much difficulty attends the raising even a Subaltern's Command of Infantry.

A copy of your letter of the 23rd of June also forwarded to the Secretary of War, express with other papers on the 1st Instant.

Alice Thompson was early in May brought into the Rock Landing, and some other prisoners, but I have not heard their names.

I am,

with Respect and Esteem,

Your Obedient Servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

To General James Robertson.

---

(118)

KNOXVILLE, July 28th, 1794.

Dear Sir,

After much difficulty, Major Beard marches to day with — men to establish the post at the Cumberland River. I hope you will have address enough to induce Volunteers to join him to make up his number.

The Express who arrived here yesterday in fourteen days from Philadelphia with the Commissions for the Counsellors informe me that the Cherokees left Philadelphia about the 4th or 5th instant, and that Opola-Wingo and his party arrived there about the 10th. I have no letter from the Secretary of War since that by Dr. White of the 14th April. The Express came for the sole purpose of bringing the Commissions, and did not bring even a public paper. Farragut is gone to Carolina with my orders to be back by the setting of the Assembly. I omitted to tell you of the Counsellor's Commissions that the Counsellors are Rutherford, Sevier, Donelson, Winchester, and Taylor. Doctor McDowell will show you a letter reporting the murder of John Ish on the 24th Instant.

Don't neglect to send me a copy of McGilweay's letter to yourself and Col. Bledsoe, it is a thing of much consequence, and if not otherwise to be had if expressed as you say it is worth sending an express to obtain it from the ——— Kentucky.

I am, dear Sir with sincere esteem,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

The little black Chickasaw mare comes on in Beard's Party to be by his order delivered to you. The Guns remain with me. I do not now see how they will be got to you.

WM. BLOUNT.

---

(119)

KNOXVILLE, August 6th, 1794.

Dear Sir,

I do not recollect any matter for an official letter, but I embrace the opportunity to write you a private one.

The News Paper that is the last Number of the Knoxville Gazette contains the news of this place. It now appears that a war may be brought about through the Maw's Party between the Creeks and the Cherokees, and it is my secret wishes since the Creeks will have no Peace with us that you encourage in such ways as you judge best bothe the Chickasaws and Choc-taws to fall on the Creeks.

I am without letters from the Secretary of War since the 14th April, so that I have not been informed what was done or said to or with Double Head and his party. They have, however, returned by water by way of Charleston. The Chickasaws arrived at Philadelphia about the 10th July.

I expect Farragut back by the time the Assembly is to sit, when I shall expect the pleasure of seeing yourself and Mrs. Robertson at my House.

From the best accounts I receive very few or none of the lower Cherokees are out, not even to hunt; Watts and the Bloody Fellow declare that they are for Peace.

Watts told the Middle Striker that he had been a great ways and seen many people but had heard nothing good for the Cherokees.

I am etc. etc.

---

(120)

KNOXVILLE, Sunday, August 31st, 1794.

Sir,

To Captain George Colbert who comes through with two other Chickasaws and the Chicasaw horses of Apiao Mingo and party, I refer you for the particulars of the visit to Philadelphia, treatments return, etc. I would be more particular but I consider the conveyance not a sure one. I can however assure you that the Leader is well pleased, and so are all his party with the visit. Captain Evans who is to supply the place of Lieutenant Mitchell will leave this by Thursday next for Mero District. A few days past we had information by the Cherokee runners that a large party of Creeks were coming against the frontiers of Knox county but it seems that they contented themselves with stopping at Wilstown and demanding of Watts that the Middle Striker and Willioe should be delivered up in satisfaction for the Creek, who they apprehended, and was hanged at this place. Double Head and party had left Philadelphia before the arrival of Apoia Mingo at Philadelphia. This party of Cherokees were treated with the utmost attention during their stay, and large presents given them. They returned via South Carolina, but I have not heard of their arrival in the nation. There is reason to fear that some of the frontier people will be opposed to their return to the nation with the presents they have received. The Assembly go on well, it is generally believed that White will be elected member of Congress.

I am with great respect,

Yours most obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General James Robertson.

---

KNOXVILLE, September 8th, 1794.

Sir,

Subjoined is a copy of my order to Captain Evans by which you will be informed that he is to receive his order for the defence of Mero District from you. I am,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

(121)

KNOXVILLE, September 8th, 1794.

Captain Evans,

The part of the Knox mounted infantry under your immediate command are ordered on duty for the protection of Mero District. You will from this place without delay via Southwest point for that district, and on your arrival in it you will receive your orders as to the particular duty you are to perform from Brigadier General Robertson. But until you receive the order of Brigadier General Robertson you will leave Cornet Evans with from eight to ten of your command with Major Beard commanding in the character of Lieutenant at the post on Cumberland river.

(Signed)

WM. BLOUNT.

(122)

KNOXVILLE, September 9th, 1794.

Private,

Dear Sir,

You can't conceive my surprise and mortification at being taught to believe that you have so far countenanced the lawless attempts of            as to give additional sanction to musters of the troops going with him. You have surely paid less respect to yourself on this occasion than on any other since my acquaintance with you. It is not possible that the Representatives in Congress of Kentucky can have had so little understanding as to have entertained the most distant hope that the Perpetrators of such lawless unauthorized acts could expect the least Pecuniary Reward for their trouble, for services I cannot call them. I hope the conditional order of Muster is not in writing. I know not the price I would take to report such an order to the War office.

Your letter of 30th Instant will be destroyed that it may never rise in judgment. Don't suppose this too severe. It proceeds from my personal esteem and the high value at which I hold your public Character. No good Consequences can arise from such unauthorized expeditions, and if such must be, let them be made by the states who have Senators and Representatives in the Public Councils. You cannot conceive the pain I feel on the occasion, not that Indians will be injured, for God knows that is a score so far as it affects the hostile part that I am quite easy on, but for the Reputation of the People I have the honor to be appointed to govern.

I am, etc., etc.



(123)

KNOXVILLE, September 9th, 1794.

Dear Sir,

Captain Evans the Bearer has it in Contemplation to settle on the tract of land that I purchased of the Heirs of General Moore, provided when he sees it he likes it. I request you sir so to describe it to him that he may find and view it. I am to give him and his followers 3,000 acres upon certain conditions.

Farragut has returned with the land papers, but I yet fear not quite as complete as I could have wished. He has also brought the articles of Agreement between yourself and Ben Smith which will be delivered to the McMitchells as you requested. There appears to me to be an impropriety in the Presidents filling the Commission of Brigadier General of Mero District without you make a formal resignation to him and not a conditional one. Upon your resignation Col. Winchester will of course be the commanding officer of the District. There would be an impropriety in Col. Hayes acting as Commanding officer and Muster Master at the same time, and he has accepted and exercises the office of Muster Master. No doubt Doctor White will recommend Winchester as your successor in office. He was a Captain in the Continental Service and Hayes a Lieutenant. I shall not write to the President respecting your Resignation until you send forward one more formal.

I am, etc.,

WM. BLOUNT.

To General Robertson.

(124)

Sir,

You being appointed by General Robertson and with my approbation to take command and direction of the Boat called the Opoiamingo, on board of which is shipped by John Overton esquire Agent for Indian affairs Goods consisting of Calicoes, Woolens, Lead Powder, etc., etc., as per Invoice of the Same, being a present from the President of the United States for the Chiefs and that nation in general. You are directed to make the most speedy passage that circumstances will admit of down the Cumberland River into the Ohio and Mississippi, taking all possible care of the goods and the Indians with you, and land them safe at the Chickasaw Bluff, at which place the goods are to be delivered to the Chiefs of that nation or their orders.

The President and all good Citizens of the United States wishing to cultivate peace and harmony with all nations, you must make the same motives actuate a like disposition in yourself, and

treat the Subjects and People of all nations with friendship and particularly respect the Spaniards their Officers and their Government. This is particularly expressed, as you may meet some of that nation in your way. You are desired likewise to recommend peace to the Chickasaws with the Creeks, and tell them their Father the President is desirous that the two nations should live in harmony.

The Boat you will sell for the most she will fetch and credit the United States for the same.

You are desired to deliver the enclosed letter to Opoiamingo and wishing you a safe and speedy return to your family.

I am Sir, with Regard,

Your humble servant,

DAVID HENLEY,  
Agent for the United States.

Nashville, 26th September, 1795.  
To Captain John Gordon.

(125)

KNOXVILLE, October 1st, 1794.

Sirs,

Inclosed you have a copy of my Order to Captain Evans. My Official letter &c will be delivered to you by Col. Hayes who will explain Things to you.

My letter by Col. Winchester must have given you to understand how I have been mortified. I have some Hope of seeing you with Lieu't Rhea on his Return to this place. None of your letters heretofore written will appear so that you have it in your power to take up the subject at large and state your Reasons.

Ore's Report will go to the President by Doc't White—Except an unnecessary degree of Tax laid on the People by the Representatives whether the Council would or not the acts of the Assembly have been highly proper. All difficulties as to my past acts or present Power of appointment are placed in as good a Point of view as I could wish them even Judge McNairy left this place for Washington Superior Court in a much better humor than he arrived. He has not yet returned but I suppose will be at the Superior Court about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  day's longer.

I am with esteem,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General James Robertson,  
Nashville, Mero District.

(126)

KNOXVILLE, October 1st, 1794.

Sir,

Inclosed is a copy of Major Ore's report to me of the destruction of the Running Water and Nickajack by a detachment of the Militia of your brigade sanctioned by your order.

You will please to forward to me by the return of lieutenant Rhea, who will wait eight days at Bledsoe's Lick a copy of your order to Major Ore and to state your reasons for giving it.

I wish you to review my order of 14th June and to consider it the order under which you are in future to act. What effect the destruction of these towns will have upon the lower Cherokees is impossible for me or any body else to say with certainty. Some think it will intimidate them in such a manner that they will desist from the killing and stealing on the frontiers of Mero District—others suppose it will have a contrary effect and that a large body of lower Cherokees and Creeks will in the course of the autumn invade that district. But admit it should have the latter effect by keeping Evans mounted infantry divided into two or three parts advanced as patrols or spies and so I have ordered. No large body of Indians can arrive near the frontiers undiscovered and upon your receiving information of the approach of a party of Indians you will recur to my order of 14th June.

Besides the means of obtaining information of the approach of a large party of indians by Evans' patrol, I think it highly probable that a large party of indians cannot cross the Tennessee without my obtaining a knowledge thereof from the friendly upper Cherokees, and upon my receiving information of such a party crossing the Tennessee I shall forward it to you: express and order a detachment of the militia of the Washington district to march against them by way of south west point so as to attack them in the rear as they advance upon you if possible and if not to meet them on their return. I am, Your obedient servant.

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier

(127)

NASHVILLE, October 1st, 1794.

Sir,

I have to acknowledge the receipt of your Excellency's Letter of the 2nd Instant.

Inclosed you have a Copy of my order to Major Ore of the 6th of September, my reasons for giving it were, that I received two expresses from the Chickasaws, one by Thomas Brown, a

man of as much veracity as any in the Nation, and the other by a common runner, giving information that a large body of Creeks and Cherokees of the Lower Towns were embodying with a determination to invade the district of Mero, and not doubting my information I conceived if Major Ore did not meet this invading Army of Creeks and Cherokees as I expected that it could not be considered otherwise than defensive to strike the first blow on the lower towns and thereby check them in their advance, nor could I suppose that the pursuing of Parties of Indians who had recently committed murders and Thefts to the Towns from whence they came and there striking them could be considered as an offensive measure unauthorized by the usage of Nations in such cases. It cannot be necessary to add as a justification, the long repeated and I might say almost daily sufferings of the People of the District of Mero by the hands of the Creeks and Cherokees of the Lower Towns.

The destruction of the Towns by Major Ore was on the 13th of September. On the 12th in Tennessee County Miss Roberts was killed on Red River forty miles below Nashville, and on the 14th Thomas Reasons and wife were killed & their house plundered near the same place by Indians; on the 16th in Davidson County 12 miles above Nashville another party killed Chambers, wounded John Bozley & Joseph Davis, burn'd John Donaldson's Station and carried off sundry horses. And in Sumner County on the same day a third party of Indians killed a woman on Red River near Major Sharpe's about 40 miles N. E. of Nashville and carried off several horses, this proves that three separate and distinct parties of Indians were out for War against the District of Mero before the march of Major Ore from Nashville.

Inclosed is a copy of a letter from Doctor R. I. Waters a Citizen of the United States, residing at New Madrid, to John Easten his factor in Tennessee County, strongly supporting the information the Chickasaws had given of the intended invasion of the Creeks, and is not the old man's information to yourself in the latter part of August to the same purport, and to him and his friendly party are the people of this county indebted for their not invading us as they intended.

If I have erred I shall ever regret it; to be a good citizen, obedient to the Law is my greatest pride, and to execute the duties of the Commission with which the President has been pleased to honor me, in such manner as to meet his approbation & that of my Superiors in rank has ever been my most fervent wish.

Previous to the march of Major Ore from Nashville, Col. Whiteley with about 100 men from Kentucky arrived there saying that they had followed a party of Indians who had com-

mitted depredations on the southern frontiers of that Country, that in that Pursuit they had had a man killed by the Indians, and several horses taken, and they were determined to pursue to the Lower Towns. They were attached to Major Ore's Command which augmented the number to near 550 men.

I should be happy if my apprehensions of a Creek invasion were removed, but they are not for Billy Colbert & other Chickasaws inform me that they yet threaten Mero District, not in so large numbers, but in small detached parties which are equally dangerous, as there is no possibility of guarding against a number of small parties invading the frontiers at the same time.

Inclosed is a copy of a letter to John Watts & from my experience in Indan affairs I have my hopes that the scourging Major Ore has given the Lower Cherokees we shall have less injury from them than heretofore.

I also inclose Major Doyle's letter from Fort Massack to me, in consequence of which I ordered to his relief an Ensign, Sergeant, Corporal, & him privates mounted Infantry.

I have engaged Mr. Shute fifty dollars for going to you Express.

I have the honor to be

With great esteem

Your Excellency's most obedient Serv't,

(Signed)

J. ROBERTSON, B. G.

To His Excellency,

Governor Blount.

(128)

KNOXVILLE, October 8th, 1794.

Sir,

The bearer Captain Washington is a Chickasaw runner from Opoia Mingo to his Nation to give Information when, and where, to meet him with the goods which the President gave him for the Nation. He must not stay more than a day at Cumberland. The Goods have not yet all arrived at this place, and the Water is very low.

I do not think it prudent to write more fully lest the letter fall into improper Hands as the Bearer comes through the Wilderness alone. Col. Henley has not yet arrived, nor do I hear of his approach. No news from Tellico of the Lower Towns nor any Think else of Importance.

I am,

Your obedient Servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

To General James Robertson.

Mero District.

(129)

KNOXVILLE, October 23rd, 1794.

Sir,

Finding it incompatible with my private avocations any longer to perform the duties of Brigadier General of the Militia of Mero District in the territory of the United States South of the River Ohio, with which appointment I have been honored by the President of the United States. I beg leave to resign that Commission, at the same time assuring you that it is not through any disgust with the public service or Officers of the Government that I am induced to take this step, but from matters merely of a domestic concern, and a conviction that a successor will be appointed whose ability and experience in Tactics may better qualify him to execute its duties.

N. W. of the Ohio.

(130)

TELLICO BLOCK HOUSE, October 11th, 1795.  
North Bank of Tennessee.

Sir,

You with the families with you on your way to Nashville, may pass the wilderness from South West Point to Bledsoe's lick without any military escort, without the least apprehension of injuries at the hands of the Cherokees or Creeks. This assurance to you is founded upon the pacific conduct of those two nations for upwards of six months past, for their repeated assurances of peace and general good conduct during the period, and lastly upon the assurance given me since my arrival at this place yesterday by the Lower Cherokees at the head of whom, and here present, are John Watts, the Bloody Fellow, The Glass, Dick Justice, Double Head, Taloiriska, the Otter Lifter and others. The Little Turkey and other chiefs of his town are on the way, and may be expected to arrive with the Creek Chiefs.

As soon as the Conference is over large parties will turn out to hunt, and as the trace to the Cumberland leads through their hunting grounds they must of necessity frequently cross it, and perhaps sometimes encamp near it, but in neither case have the travellers any thing to fear from them, neither murder nor theft. Such is the assurance of the Indians and such is my belief, not founded merely upon present assurances in which I must confess I have full faith, but also upon their past conduct as before stated and upon the general appearance of things.

So far for assurances on the part of the Indians: I have now to recommend to you and to other travellers and people of all

descriptions to treat Indians of every description wherever found, as friends, unless the contrary appears.

Peace with the Indian exists now not only in name, or upon paper in form of treaty, but in fact, and he who shall violate it shall deserve the severest punishment of the laws and execrations of his fellow citizens. Such of my fellow citizens as are sore under their former sufferings I beg them to recollect that if they should meet the particular Indians at whose hands their friends have fallen, that the death of such Indians will not restore their friends to life, and that the death of even one such Indian will bring on another war to which thousands of innocent people will be the victims.

In other words, he who shall break the peace by killing an Indian however improper his past conduct may have been, may be truly said to have killed a number of innocent women and children. You will please make this letter public, and believe me with great respect,

Your obedient Servant,  
WM. BLOUNT.

The Reverend Joseph Dorris,  
at Knoxville on his way with many  
families to Nashville.

KNOXVILLE, October 15, 1795.

Sir,

I am directed by my brother to send you the enclosed copies of a letter to the end that you may make the contents public.

I am Sir,

Your obedient servant,  
WILLIE BLOUNT.

To General Robertson.

(131)

KNOXVILLE, October 1st, 1794.

Captain Evans,

You will divide the mounted infantry under your command into three equal parts—One of which to patrol from Beard's blockhouse to Colonel Winchesters; and the other two on Taylor's and other traces leading from the Tennessee to the district of mero along which indians most generally make their approaches to the frontiers as far as the ridge dividing the waters of the Duck and Cumberland rivers. The principal object in this order is that in case a large party of indians should be approaching the settlement that they may by your patrols be discovered

in such time as that a sufficient force may be raised to repel them before they fall on the inhabitants. WM. BLOUNT.

Let Joseph Evans command the patrol from the blockhouse to Col. Winchesters'.

Copy of Captain Evans' order.

---

(132)

Colonel Whitley, KNOXVILLE, November 1st, 1794.  
Sir,

I have been informed first by Housen Kennar which has been in a greater degree confirmed since by the examination of Major Ore, the bearer, that you passed this place yesterday with the intention to join General Logan who is said to have marched from Kentucky in force to invade the Lower Cherokee Towns. The News Paper you will receive herewith contains copies of a letter of the 20th ultimo to me from Double Head a principal chief of those Towns, & my answer to him of the 29th, by which you will understand these Towns as well as every other part of the Cherokee Nation are considered in peace with the United States. By what authority General Logan has raised an armed force to invade a Nation declared by public authority in peace with the United States I am uninformed, hence I am compelled to suppose that he has no legal authority for so doing, and to command him, you, and all others concerned to desist from such illegal and unauthorized enterprise.

Having so recently received from and given to the Cherokees assurances of peace as the above mentioned Letters will prove to you, it becomes an official duty in me to give information to the Cherokees of the intended invasion of General Logan; and the feelings of humanity equally compel me so to inform you and if possible the General himself. It is my wish so to act as that neither party can charge me with improper conduct, and to save the effusion of human blood.

From the character of General Logan and yourself, I readily believe you both wish peace as sincerely as the frontier inhabitants: but should you persevere in your attack upon the Lower Towns it is my opinion that the effect will be the drawing the Lower Cherokees and the upper Creeks highly incensed upon these exposed people.

I am,

Your obedient Servant,

(Signed)

WM. BLOUNT.

To Colonel William Whitley,  
of Kentucky.



(133)

KNOXVILLE, November 1st, 1794.

Sir,

Inclosed are copies of my letters to Colonel Whitley and General Logan, and the News Papers containing a copy of Double Head's letters to me and my answer, the former serving to show the prospects of Returning Peace and the latter my sense and disapprobation of General Logan's intended invasion of the Lower Towns.

It is a duty you owe to the office and rank you hold in the Government, to your common Country, and to your exposed Fellow Frontier Citizens in particular, to use your authority and address to compel or induce General Logan to desist from his unauthorized Invasion of those Towns.

My letter of information to the Indians of the approach of General Logan of this date will appear in the next number of the Knoxville Gazette.

Captain Evans is to remain on the Frontier of Mero District and range under his present order until such time in December as shall be sufficient to afford him only Time to appear at this place and Muster out of Service on the last day of that month.

I am,

Your obedient Servant.

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General

James Robertson,

Mero District.

(134)

KNOXVILLE, November 1st, 1794.

General Logan,

Sir,

Inclosed is a copy of my letter to Colonel Whitley, of this date forwarded to him express, and one of the News Papers containing the Copies of the Letter of Double Head a principal chief of the Cherokees of the 20th ultimo to me, and my answer of the 29th as alluded to in my letter to the Colonel.

The first, (the Letter to the Colonel) serving to show you the information I have received respecting your intended invasion of the Lower Cherokee Towns and the latter the pleasing prospects of a continued peace between the United States and the Lower Cherokees.

Upon your receiving this information I cannot suffer myself to but your Love of Peace and Order will induce you to immediately desist from your intended Enterprise. But in this Instance it is my duty to command as well as inform—therefore I command you and the men with you or under your command forthwith to desist from the attempt of invading the Lower Cherokee Towns who are in peace of the United States, and I further command you and the men with you respectively not to enter in a hostile manner the Country or lands guaranteed to the Cherokee Nation by the Treaty between the United States and the said Cherokees commonly called the Treaty of Holston, warning you and them that in case of violation of this order which is issued by virtue of the Authority in me vested, you and they will answer the same at your peril.

Having received my appointment from the Federal Government I am answerable for my acts only to it, yet it may not be improper to give you my reasons for my conduct on this occasion. They are contained in part in my letter to Col. Whitley to which I refer you, and an additional one is my great desire to promote the peace and happiness of our frontier fellow Citizens & our Common Country at Large.

This letter will be delivered to you by Serjeant McClelland who I have sent with ten men for this purpose, under Instructions to follow you, if he does not sooner meet you, to the Banks of the Tennessee.

I am your obedient Servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Benjamin Logan,  
reported to be on his march from  
Kentucky with an army to invade  
the Lower Cherokee Towns.

Copy of a letter from Governor Blount to General Logan,  
Nov. 1st, 1794.

---

(135)

At a conference held on the 7th and 8th of November 1794 at Tellico Blockhouse (on the North Bank of the Tennessee) between William Blount Governor in and over the Territory of the United States of America South of the River Ohio and Colonel John Watts of Will's Town (one of the Lower Cherokee Towns) Scolacutta or the Hanging Man and other chiefs of the Cherokee Nation at which were present about four hundred Warriors and several Citizens of the United States, namely Colonel Alisha Thomas, Major Sevier, Major David Craig, Ensign

Samuel R. Davidson of the federal Troops commanding at the post and others.

James Carrey Interpreter.

Governor Blount (addressing himself to Colonel Watts) upon being informed by Mr. McKee that you were here and wished to see me about the affairs of your Nation I hastened to meet you. I am happy in this interview because your presence here is an evidence of the wish of the Lower Towns for Peace whose principal Chief I have ever considered you & in Scolacutta I behold the true Head of the whole Nation.

Having opened the Conference I shall sit down, and first expect the Talk of Colonel Watts.

Colonel Watts: This Meeting appears to be ordered by the great Spirit and affords me great Pleasure. Here is Scolacutta, He is old enough to be my Father, and From my Infancy he was a greatman and is now the great Chief of the Nation. In the Spring of the year he sent Talk to the Lower Towns telling them that the upper Towns had taken the United States by the hand with the determination to hold them fast during life and inviting the Lower Towns to do the same. With tears in my eyes have I thought of this Talk and beheld the folly of the Lower Towns who at first refused to hear it.

But just below the destruction of this Running Water and Nickajack by Major Cre, I went to them as well as to the Look-out Mountain Town and exerted myself for the Restoration of Peace and I verily believe those towns had heard my Talks and were determined to be at Peace with the United States.

I do not say that Running Water and Nickajack did not deserve this chastisement they received, nevertheless it so exasperated those who escaped from the Ruins that for a time I was compelled to be silent for a time myself, but the Glass went to the Running Water People and they told the Glass that notwithstanding the injury they had sustained they had not forgot his (Watts) good Talks, but still held them fast and desired him to take measures for the recovery of their Prisoners.

When this answer was reported to me by the Glass I had my doubts and would not act upon it for they had told me So many Lies I was afraid to trust them, I then sent the Bloody Fellow to the Running Water and he returned with the same report which induced me to come forward to you, Knowing you were the man the United States had authorized to transact such Business, I deliver this, (presenting a string of white beads) as a true Talk and a public Talk from the Lower Towns to you. Scolcutta the head of the Nation is sitting by me, the Lower Towns instructed me to request him not to throw them away but to come with me to you to present this Talk in their behalf.

By a Prisoner taken by Major Ore and sent back by General Robertson I received a letter from him requiring me to deliver up a white Prisoner and a certain number of Negroes and that the Prisoners taken by Major Ore should all be restored to their Nation, in this Letter the General invited me to come in to him with a Flag, but as the Woman was pursued by some bad white people and obliged to quit her horse and save herself in the Cane, although I know the General to be a good man I thought it imprudent to go to him, besides I know that an exchange of Prisoners could only be negotiated with you. As to a Prisoner in my town, (Wills Town) there are none, and when the People of my Town once took a man of great worth, (Captain Handly) they restored him without Price.

Scolacutta or the Hanging Man: I too have had a Talk from the Lower Towns, They were once my People, but not now yet I cannot but think much about the Talk I have now received by Watts.

Before any thing happened to those Towns I had sent them many Peace Talks which they would not hear, but now since the attack made upon them by Major Ore they send to me to make peace for them in conjunction with Watts. I am the Head man of my Nation as Governor Blount is of the white people, it was not the fault of either that those Towns were destroyed, but their own Conduct brought destruction upon them, The Trail of the Murderers and Thieves was followed to those Towns. Nevertheless I cannot neglect the request they have made to me to make peace for them, as I hope they have seen their folly and will desist from murdering and robbing the People of the United States and live in Peace. I shall then hope to live much longer, for their bad conduct drew the white People onto me who injured me nearly to death. This Talk I declare on the part of the Lower Towns and if they do not now desist from War and live at Peace I will give them up to the United States to deal with as they judge proper.

All last winter I was compelled to live in the Woods by the bad conduct of my own People drawing War upon me. In the Spring of the year a communication was opened with you. You invited me to meet your Deputy John McKee in nine days which I did. John McKee assured me of the peaceful disposition of the United States, and told me and my party to return to their homes and Fields this I did also. I could hear from several parts of the Nation threats against my life to be effected by killing the Whites in my neighborhood, and thereby draw them on me and my friendly party. I then solicited that this Blockhouse or Fort should be erected as serving to protect me and my friendly party as well as the Frontier inhabitants & open a communication between the White & Red People. I still heard murmurings from

several parts of my Nation with threats that they would have no intercourse with it, or with John McKee but I now see standing round me many of those very People who are glad to come to it and to be in Friendship with John McKee and at Peace with the United States, they need not find fault with John McKee. I have found him to be an honest man and proper for his appointment, & never heard any thing from him but the truth.

November 8th.

Governor Blount: It is with Pleasure that I receive from you the Information that the Lower Cherokees wish peace with the United States. When you, (addressing himself to Watts) the Bloody Fellow and the Glass the three greatest chiefs of the Lower Towns come forward with such assurances I can no longer doubt the sincerity with which they are made. Peace with the whole Cherokee Nation has ever been the wish of the United States, and it is yet their wish so that the Lower Towns have only to Keep Peace on their part and it will be Peace.

By saying the Lower Towns requested you to take measures for the recovery of the Prisoners I understand that they wish an exchange of Prisoners, to this I agree & propose that a general exchange of Prisoners shall take place at this post on the 18th of December. All Negroes in your hands whether captured or absconded from their Masters are to be considered as Prisoners in your hands and are to be Delivered up.

My Letter to the Chiefs of the Lower Towns of the 1st Instant has informed you of the threatened Invasion of those Towns by General Logan with a large party of men from Kentucky, unauthorized by Government.

I have now to add as my advice to you and to your people that in case Logan should carry his intended Invasion of your Country into Execution, and should he kill many or Few of your People or destroy little or much of your property that it shall not prevent the exchange of Prisoners as proposed nor prevent the meeting at this place on the 18th of December when we will endeavor to heal all matters of difference that can at that time exist between the Lower Towns and the United States & in the mean time let the injuries received by your Nation be what they may you will consult the happiness of your Nation and insure the Blessings of returning Peace by restraining the Warriors from turning out and taking satisfaction.

Peace must take place at some time and the less blood is shed the sooner & more easily will it be effected. I assure you that in case you do not oppose General Logan nor take satisfaction for such injuries as he may do you that the United States will pay you for the loss of such Houses and Corn as he may destroy, your other property you can move out of his way. The United States are very tender of their Citizens and love peace, and would

prefer paying you for your Houses and Corn to having them killed in satisfaction for your injuries or to being forced into a War with your Nation.

It is essential to the happiness of your Nation that I should speak plainly to you about the Creeks by whose hands you are sensible the Frontier inhabitants of this Country have bled at every Pore, they are without pretext for such conduct, that these people have taken their Lands, for is it not a fact that in the division of the Lands among the red People that the ridge which divides the waters of the Mobile and Tennessee bounds them on the North Then they pass quite through the Cherokees or Chickasaw Lands to arrive at our Frontiers & there kill our men at the Plough or our Women & Children in their houses.

If you would secure a continuance of Peace with the United States it will be a duty you owe to yourselves as well as to the United States not to permit the Creeks to pass through your Country or if any should slip through and your People should Discover them on their return with hair or Horses to seize them and bring them to this place as the Upper Towns served one last summer.

I have now to tell you what I believe to be the general will of the United States with respect to the Creeks which is if they do not immediately desist from murdering the frontier Citizens & also cease to rob them of their property, that next Spring or Summer they will see a strong and powerful Army in their Country and it is well known that the Chickasaw Nation and part of the Choctaws are great friends of the United States and the Enemies of the Creeks & it is recently proved that the upper part of your Nation are determined no longer to submit to their Insolence and Injuries. You are at liberty to tell the Creeks what I say not so much as a threat but as information to them to enable them to judge how best to seek their happiness.

Colonel Watts: I wish the time proposed for the exchange of Prisoners had been sooner but as I suppose you put it off to so distant a day to afford time to collect them. I agree to it. I fear the damage General Logan will do my Nation will be very great, but as you advise I shall instruct all my People and whatever he may do shall not prevent the proposed meeting and exchange of Prisoners.

What you say about the Boundary of the Creek Land is right, but they are a great and powerful Nation & the Cherokees are but few and cannot prevent their passing through their Lands when they please to War. And on their passage they Kill our Hogs & cattle and steal our Horses when we dare not resent.

The Upper Cherokees were right in seizing one last Summer and delivering him up to you and in killing two others. They live far from the Creek Country, and have the white People to

support them, but the Lower Towns are but few, live near the Creeks, and too distant from the white People to be supported by them. I know the Chickasaws and five of the Choctaw towns are friends of the U. S. and will fight against their Enemies.

Scolacutta or Hanging Man: I ordered the Creek seized, and I ordered the two Creeks to be killed & I will kill my own People if they kill white people. Here is some Tobacco sent by the Long Warrior just delivered to me by a runner you must smoke some of it (here a Pipe was handed and Scolacutta, Watts, The Governor & Others Smoked.) he speaks peace for his part of the Nation he has long been a Head man and loves Peace.

Governor Blount: I have omitted to give you the particulars of General Wayne's victory over the Northern Indians (addressing himself to Watts) but if you wish to hear them I will now give them.

Colonel Watts: I do not; Some of my People were in the action who have already informed me.

Governor Blount: Then I have nothing to add except to assure you & Your Nation of the wish of the United States for Peace.,

WM. BLOUNT.

Conference held Nov. 7th & 8th, 1794  
between Gov. Blount and  
John Watts, Scolacutta, and other  
Cherokee Chiefs and Warriors.

---

(136)

KNOXVILLE, November 12th, 1794.

Sir,

Inclosed are the minutes of a Conference held on the 7th & 8th Instant at Tellico Blockhouse between myself, John Watts, Scolacutta and other Chiefs and Warriors, and I assure you upon my word and honor that not only in the public Talks, but in a long private one with Watts he appeared truly sincere. You will observe that it is agreed that a general exchange of Prisoners is to take place at Tellico Blockhouse on the 18th of December. To this end you will deliver all the Cherokee Prisoners in Mero District to Serjeant McClellan to be by him conducted to this place and delivered to me. The number in Mero District exclusive of those in Kentucky I believe is eleven, (Women and Children) This is the worst description of Prisoners to transport so great a distance as it is to be feared that few if any of them can hold out to walk it and to purchase horses, saddles, etc., on account of the United States will be too expensive, then the

alternative appears to be to make a bargain with Serjeant McClellan and his men to assist them in their passage to this place, which they can do by taking the children behind them, and occasionally permitting the Women to ride, and such bargain you are authorized to make with him and his men or any other person or persons provided you do not agree to give more than ten dollars for each Prisoner, and whatever contract or contracts you make must be in writing signed by you on the part of the United States and the person or persons with whom you contract. Thus you are authorized to contract for as much as ten dollars for the conveyance of each Prisoner to this place, but you are to understand it is your duty to contract for as much less as possible.

If Serjeant McClellan will not agree to aid the Prisoners in their journey to this place under the above limitations it will be his duty to conduct them to me on foot, and so you will order him for the expense of purchasing horses cannot be submitted to.

Serjeant McClellan need have no fears of being attacked on the Path, for it is my opinion the Path will be perfectly secure.

Colonel James King has my order to supply those Prisoners with Rations and Provisions for the Journey. The cold weather having commenced and colder fast approaching it will be essential if any of the Prisoners are too bare of clothing to stand the Journey they must be supplied with such as shall be necessary for them, which you will please order to be purchased and delivered to them. You will take order that these Prisoners receive no Injury in your District and give particular Instruction to Serjeant McClellan to be careful and tender of them in your journey to this place. I shall send a person to Governor Shelby for the Prisoners in Kentucky.

If Findleston is anxious to keep his wife, the Nation are content that she should stay with him. Watts said nothing about his Son but I presume the Nation will be equally indifferent as to him. But if both or either stay they can no longer be supplied with Rations or clothed by the United States.

This letter comes express by Samuel Dearmond and James Scott who are to be allowed the usual price, fifty dollars. It comes unsealed to Colonel Winchester for his perusal—he will seal and forward it by Scott and Dearmond—

I am,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General James Robertson,  
Mero District.



(137)

CRAGFONT, 18th Nov. 1794.

Dear General,

Being made acquainted with the contents of the Packet by Scott & Deamonde It is necessary for me to inform you that I am directed by Col. King the contractor to assume payment of one Ration per day to those persons who have kept the prisoners. Therefore when you send to collect them Let it be made known that I will pay the persons whoe have kept the prisons the useal prices that have been paid for Rations in Mero District & in the useal way. Let them send forward their accounts to me by the person whoe collects the Prisoners.

I am also directed to furnish provisions at this place to carry the Indians through the Wilderness, & as delay in this Business may be attended with difficulties I take the liberty of mentioning the propriety of sending the prisoners as soon as possible to this place. I think they can be kept safe here Until they March, and can supply them with such articles of Clothing as may be necessary or you may think proper to direct.

I think the overtures now made by the Cherokees bids fair to bring about a permanent peace, than any hitherto made.

I am Dear Sir with Respect & Esteem

Your Humble  
WINCHESTER.

General James Robertson,

Mr. Scott, Mr. Deamond, Express.

---

  
(138)

KNOXVILLE, November 22nd, 1794.

Private.

Dear Sir,

By this Conveyance I write you a Public Order affording all the Protection in my Power to the District of Mero. The Cherokees I believe sincerely wish Peace but the Creeks must be humbled before you can enjoy Peace and I fear that wished for Period will never arrive until this Territory becomes a State and is represented in Congress for this and other Reasons am clearly determind that it is the true Interest of this Territory to become a State as early as possible, and I hope that will be the Opinion of the Majority of the People. I am without official letters until the arrival of Colonel Henley. The Insurgents are said to be quelled without blood being shed. Mr. Jay is said to be returned which is probably true but I have not heard what he

has done. Robespierre and Party have suffered under the Gullatine on the first July. His successor Fabien if possible is said to be a worse man.

I am with great Regard,  
WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson,  
Capt. Gordon.

(139)

KNOXVILLE, December 4th, 1794.

Sir,

Your letter of the 17th ultimo express by Sampson Williams was received on the 27th with its inclosures all of which copies were immediately forwarded in a letter from myself to the Secretary of War.

Mr. Williams by the loss of his horse at Cumberland River, was delayed in the delivery to a later day than could have been wished, for with you I agree that Congress should receive the Information of Indian Depredations on the Frontiers particularly such bloody massacres as those of Colonel Sevier's family of the 11th of November.

While I sincerely lament the murders committed on the families of Colonels Titsworth and Sevier, and the distresses of the Mero District in general, I find myself so restricted by my orders from the Secretary of War, that I cannot alter my order to you of the 22nd of November, forwarded by Captain Gordon. But it is the duty of all officers in so detached a District as that which you command in case of an *Invasion by an Enemy to repel Force by Force*, in doing which it is also a Duty that the least possible expense should be incurred. Keep down Expense, is a command from the Secretary to me, and I enjoin on you the observation of it, so far as is consistent with the public Good.

I approve your conduct towards the Chickasaws respecting the Cherokee scalp.

Taking into view the many years the Creeks have continued to kill the Citizens of the District of Mero, without any cause whatever, of Justification, the Proceedings of the late Congress upon the first Memorial from this Territory, the many murders and Thefts as stated in the second, as well as the many Murders and Thefts committed since its date, and the situation the United States are placed in by the victory of General Wayne, and the happy suppression of the Fort Pitt Insurgency I cannot suffer myself to doubt but the present Session of Congress will order an Army in the Course of the next Spring or Summer, sufficient to humble if not destroy the Creek Nation, and thereby give

Peace to the Southwestern Frontiers, from the Mouth of the St. Mary's to the banks of the Cumberland.

I am with respect,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General Robertson,  
Mero District.

---

(140)

Sir,

Having received Letters from the Honorable the Secretary of War and Treasury department of the 13 & 25 May in which they inform me that they had ordered to be delivered to Mr. Anthony Foster six 3 1-2 inch Howitzers, 10 Qts (?) Casks of fine Rifle Powder, T hun'd Lead, 1000 Flints, ammunition for one hundred rounds complete for each piece, including 25 Grape, four Plough Irons, with a quantity of Dry Goods &c, as per Invoice amounting to \$2713 dollars and 44-100 all of which above articles were put in Mr. Foster's possession for to be conducted by him to the Cumberland, there to be placed on their arrival to Nashville in the hands of some agent that I should appoint; subject to be issued to the orders of General Robertson, agreeable to the mode the Secretary of the Treasury has pointed out to me.

I have therefore availed myself of your personal presence to confer with you on the business, and am happy you agree with me in the appointment of Mr. Overton to take charge of the Goods and the other Articles. I will give him the instructions that may be necessary relative to the care and mode of issuing them, and I am persuaded you will for the public benefit advise Mr. Overton in what may be necessary concerning them.

As the above Howitzers, ammunition and Farming Implements are for the Chickasaws, it will lay with you to order them delivered, and I fully agree with you in opinion that for the Warlike and heavy Articles, it will be more safe and satisfactory both to the Nation and our officers of Government that they should be delivered the Chickasaws or their order at Nashville.

The Secretary having herewith informed me of the Contract with Mr. Foster for the additional supply of Goods that you might think necessary to bestow on the Indians, which contract was to remain in force till either of the parties should choose to retract, and as the contract which Mr. Overton made with Mr. Deaderich seems to interfere, I as the agent for both the Secretary of War and Treasury Departments think it advisable to suspend Mr. Foster's contract to the time Mr. Deaderich's has expired, being for one quarter of a year only, or to the 18 August,

after which time Mr. Foster may Supply until one of the Secretaries choose to withdraw from the agreement.

I am with wishes for you a safe return to Nashville,

Your Hum Servant,

DAVID HENLEY,  
DPmt, War.

Knoxville, 9th July 1794.  
General James Robertson.

(142)

KNOXVILLE, July 13th, 1795.

You will reduce the number of Militia stationed at the crossing place of the Cumberland, called as I have been informed, Fort Blount, to twenty five noncommissioned and privates, and continue the command in Lieutenant Gallaspie. And should the Indians continue their cessation of hostilities upon the frontiers of Mero District, you will reduce the number of Mounted Infantry to fifteen noncommissioned and privates, to be commanded by a noncommissioned Officer, to act as patrol upon the frontiers, but not to be permitted to pass the boundary established by the Treaty of Holston, except in immediate pursuit of Indians who have committed recent injuries. You may keep Infantry at your discretion upon the frontiers, not exceeding one Company. This order to take effect after the last day of this month.

I am,

Your obd servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

General Robertson.

(142)

KNOXVILLE, July 13th, 1795.

Sir,

Mr. Francis Hall to whom this letter is committed has here received a grey Mare (that the Cherokees have delivered up at Tellico Blockhouse to John McKee saying that she was stolen from Cumberland) to deliver to you. You will please receive her and deliver her to such person as shall make Proof Ownership upon such person paying to you ten dollars. McKee paid that sum to obtain the Mare and I repaid it to McKee. Mr. Hall for his trouble in bringing her is permitted to ride her. \_

I am &c.

General Robertson.  
c Mr. Hall.

WM. BLOUNT.

(143)

A talk from Alexander Cornel of the Tuckabatchees to Billy Colbert, George Colbert, Pyo-lata, pyo Mingo & Mglyacabe Ming of the Chickasaw Nation.

Friends, &, Brothers,

Your friendly Talk we have received and smoked your Tobacco in token of friendship. It is the wish of my people that the War Hatchet should be buried for ever, and War cease among red people for the purpose of accomplishing so desirable an object as peace I have wrote to Governor Blount to desire General Robertson to send to you into your Nation for all prisoners of our Nation that may be in your possession, as you are my elders and we known one another other a long time, I shall expect your kind assistance in promoting so desirable object as peace, your delivering our prisoners to the men Gen'l Robertson sends into your land will be a convincing proof to us of sincerity of your Nation for Peace, at the same time restrain your young Warriors from rash Actions and we will do the same with ours.

At the meeting we had for the purpose of receiving your Talk and smoking your Tobacco we were much surprised at receiving an Account that your people had on the Pensacola path killed one of our Warriors belonging to the Wakrkoys (?), for the mutual happiness and prosperity of both Nation I wish it may not prove true.

Friends and Brothers,

I shall now acquaint with what I have lost of my own family and wish you to inform me what is their fate, and if alive send them to Gov'r Blount who will safely deliver them to me.

In the middle of the winter two young Men who always hunt close to your Nation.

One Young Wench with two Children a Boy and a Girl.

One hump'd back Wench.

One Young Girl very fair Skin.

One small boy just beginning to learn to Hunt.

Do exert yourselves in restoring peace between us that whenever we meet we may Hunt, smoke, eat and drink together in Peace and friendship is the sincere wish of Your friend & Brother.

ALECK CORNEL.

Creek Nation 27th July 1795.

(144)

KNOXVILLE, August 11th, 1795.

General Colbert having gone on to Philadelphia and believing this letter concerned the affairs of the Chickasaw Nation with the Creeks I judged it proper for me to open it. The contents show I judged properly. It (that is the foregoing letter) ought to be explained to the Chickasaws.

WM. BLOUNT.

Gen'l William Colbert,  
Chickasaw Nation.  
Express.

(145)

KYALEEGEES, July 27th 1795.

Sir,

The Chiefs of this Nation have had a meeting with James Seagrove, Esq., Agent for Indian affairs at Beard's Bluff on the Altamaha. The meeting concluded friendly, and with an earnest desire to preserve peace on both sides. Mr. Seagrove recommended to the Chiefs of this Nation the restoring of prisoners and property as the only means of preserving peace. The bearer of this Col. Titsworth now on his journey to Knoxville. Mr. Seagrove requests myself and some of the Chiefs to attend and see your Excellency under your own roof, in order to brighten and strengthen the chain of friendship, which ought to subsist between men living under the same sun. The present situation of our Nation renders it impossible for the Chiefs at present to comply with Mr. Seagrove's request, and on that account I have employed Mr. John O'Reiley Trader in the Kyaleegees to safely conduct Col. Titsworth to you at Knoxville, and by the return of Mr. Riley I wish your Excellency to inform me when it will be convenient for myself and some of the Chiefs to wait on you at Tellico Blockhouse.

I shall now inform your Excellency of the state of affairs in this Nation. Some time past a party of our young men returned into the Nation with an account that they had committed depredations on the Mississippi; but on Col. Titworth's arrival at this place I was much surprised to find that they had been at Cumberland, and that the Colonel's family had fallen victims to their rage. Happily one of his daughters was preserved and is now restored to her liberty. But few in the nation suspected that the Cumberland people had suffered.

The Spaniards take every opportunity of exasperating the Indians against your settlement, and no longer ago than yesterday

their agent informed the nation that three hundred Americans had actually taken up their residence in the Chickasaw Nation, with a view of erecting a fort at Chickasaw Bluff for the purpose of protecting boats coming down the Mississippi with arms, ammunition, etc., to drive the Indians from their lands. That they (the Spaniards) had in order to preserve the land of the red people, taken possession of Chickasaw Bluff, built a fort and garrisoned it with three hundred men.

Your Excellency will receive with this a copy of the Talks delivered yesterday in the presence of the Indians.

This Nation willing to preserve peace with all nations, requests your Excellency to write to General Robertson to send two men to the Chickasaws for the prisoners of our nation. As the Chiefs are determined to bury the hatchet if the prisoners of our nation are returned to your Excellency; and on our part it is our wish to meet you at Tellico Blockhouse with Miss Wilson.

Altho' this is to be considered as a peace Talk, and our nation are all desirous of peace, it is my wish that your people on the frontiers should not be lulled to sleep as there are rash men on both sides.

Mr. Riley will remain with your Excellency until an answer is received from the Chickasaws; and for the safely conducting Colonel Titzworth and his daughter, I have engaged for you to pay him one hundred dollars and his expenses in Knoxville.

I have the honor to be

With great respect

Your Most Obedient

Humble Servant

(Signed)

ALEX'R CORNELL

D Agent of Ind'n Affairs.

His Excellency  
Gov'r Blount.

(146)

KNOXVILLE, July 31st, 1795.

Sir,

The inclosed papers appear to me to contain information proper to be known to you and the people of the District of Mero.

I am

Your obedient servant,

Brigadier General Robertson.

WM. BLOUNT.

List of papers inclosed.

No 1 Secretary of War to Gov'r Blount, June 22d 1795

No 2 A Creek Talk to James Seagrove Apl 22d '95

No 3 Another Creek Talk

(147)

KNOXVILLE, August 1st, 1795.

Sir,

Upon signing proving and forwarding the annexed power of Attorney to Mr. Greer at this place it is probable that he will draw your Salary as it becomes due and owing to you.

The Agent since your departure has paid all the Officers in the Indian Department their Salaries for the first two quarters of the present year. Why he refused to pay yours remains yet with him to inform you. It is certain that he has received no money from the Treasury of the United States since you left this; his refusing to pay you, and paying others under similar circumstances accords well with his regular system of inconsistencies.

I am your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Gen'l Robertson.

(148)

Know all men by these presents that I James Robertson Temporary Agent to the Chickasaws and Choctaws do constitute and appoint Joseph Greer Esquire of Knoxville my Attorney with power to receive my Salary as it may become due and owing to me for my services as Temporary Agent aforesaid at the Treasury of the United States, or at such other place as it shall be directed to be paid, and with power to appoint any other person in his place and stead with equal powers with himself.

Witness my hand and seal this

day of August 1795.

signed sealed and delivered in presence of

(149)

KNOXVILLE, August 2nd, 1795.

Sir,

I have it in command from the Board Of Commissioners for cutting and clearing a waggon Road from South West Point in Hamilton District to Bledsoe's Lick in Mero District—to request you will make all possible haste in collecting the monies arising from the sale of the Salt Licks & Springs &c. in Mero District as well as the monies due from subscriptions to the fund for cut-



ing and clearing the aforesaid road and to hold the same in your hands subject to the future orders of the Board. With respect I am,

Your obedient servant,

JNO. SOMMERVILLE, C. D. C.

General James Robertson,  
Cumberland.

(150)

KNOXVILLE, August 2nd, 1795.

Sir,

I received your letter of 17th July dated upon Cumberland Mountain. Major Colbert's arrival with his party was very unacceptable to me, because I could give him no redress. He has gone on to the Secretary of War to whom I presume his visit will not be more acceptable than it was to me. But I believe the public interest would be promoted by permitting him to proceed. Had he have returned from this place, it is certain that none but bad consequences could result from the disappointment in his visit to this place. He, (Colbert) has complained that his family have not been well supplied with provisions and has requested that they be well supplied in his absence to Philadelphia, which I have promised shall be done. You will please take order that this promise be carried into effect. It was made with a view to the public interest, and to that object it ought to be performed. In fact he desired the supplies to his family should go through the hands of Mr. Sampson Williams, but this the public arrangements will not permit.

The Chickasaw Red Shoes, who returned to Nashville is dissatisfied that he has not received as large presents here as Colbert and such other Chickasaws as proceeded with Col. Hayes to Philadelphia received; particularly that he did not receive a saddle, Bridle and Saddle bags. I would advise you to give him articles from the Chickasaw goods equal in value to those three articles. To satisfy him out of those goods will incur no additional expense to the United States. Economy in all cases must be consulted so far as it accords with the public good.

I am your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Brigadier General Robertson.

(151)

NASHVILLE, August, 1795.

Sir,

I request you to order a Serjeant and twelve mounted Infantry to attend me as an escort from this place to the Chickasaw nation

and back. I mean to commence my journey on the 28th Day of this Instant on which day I wish the escort to be in readiness. I would prefer this escort to be of the Davidson Militia, which will be attended with the least expense to the United States; as they can leave their homes the day I commence my journey, and when I return they will be immediately discharged near their own houses. I am

Your obedient servant,

JAMES ROBERTSON,

Temporary Agent to the Chickasaws & Choctaws.

To Col. James Winchester,

Commandant of the Militia of Mero District.

The within is the form in which James Robertson will make his Requisition for an Escort. The blanks are to be filled as Circumstances may require. Let the Requisition be made upon the blank half sheet annexed to my order to Winchester.

WM. BLOUNT.

(152)

Information given Governor Blount by Col. Isaac Titsworth of Tennessee County by way of Question and Answer.

Gov. Blount—What time and place did you deliver to Mr. Seagrove my letter of the 2nd Inst?

Col. Titsworth—At Ogehee Bridge on the 16th June and his conduct towards me on the receipt of it was very friendly.

Gov. B.—What way did you pass into the Creek Nation?

Col. T.—By way of Fort Telfair on the Altamaha, the same place called Beard's Bluff, and thence with the Creek Chiefs under Mr. Seagrove's passport to the Nation.

Gov. B.—Which of the Creek Towns were you in?

Col. T.—I passed the Cusitas to the Tuckabatchees in which I made my principal residence at the House of Alexander Cornell.

Gov. B.—Where did you hear of your daughter and your negro?

Col. T.—At Cornell's House.

Gov. B.—Were you informed of the number and names of the Indians who attacked yourself and Family, on the 5th November and captured your daughter and Negroe?

Col. T.—No I did not learn their names but there were seven Creek of the Hicory Ground who made the attack.

Gov. B.—Did they carry your Daughter and Negroe immediately to the Nation?

Col. T.—No they kept them in the woods at their camp upon the Tennessee, near the mouth many months and carried her

into the Nation about the first of June. The same party of Creek fired upon the White people and Chickasaws as they passed the Cumberland River last Spring, and had one of their party killed.

Gov. B.—When you demanded your daughter and Negroe from the Creeks were they delivered without exacting any price and readily?

Col. T.—They were delivered readily and without price.

Gov. B.—Did you discover while in the Nation who it was that attacked and killed Col. Sevier's family near Clarksville and attacked the camp of Col. Montgomery?

Col. T.—I did. They were Creeks who lived at a Town called Tuskega (the old Alabama Fort). They have yet in possession the scalps and property of Sevier's family, and Montgomery's Gun. The same Creeks also killed Thomas Reason and wife & Betsy Roberts at her fathers house in the cowpen (?) & the same party burnt my house four years past. The same party killed an old man and a young man who they decoyed by speaking the Chickasaw language. They said the young man was very handsome. The same party killed Major Even Shelby and his negroe and have his gun, shot bag & scalp.

Gov. B.—Did you see or hear of many of the horses that have been stolen by the Indians from Mero District?

Col. T.—Yes I did, but I cannot form any opinion of the number. The Creeks from the number they have stolen from that District, call the Cumberland settlement the "Horse Stamp" and inquire if any horses were yet left there.

Gov. B.—Do the Creeks now seem sincerely disposed for peace with the United States? I do not mean to ask if the Chiefs are for peace—but are the young Warriors one and all as well as the Chiefs disposed for peace?

Col. T.—The Chiefs are all sincerely for peace and the Warriors too are generally for peace, but there are yet a few exceptions of what is called "Bad young men" who yet threaten depredations upon the Cumberland settlement. In particular Alex. Cornell whose friendship may be depended upon, and to whom I am particularly indebted for the recovery of my daughter and my negroe—gave it in command to me to tell your Excellency that notwithstanding the general disposition of the Creeks for peace, he still had his fears that some of the bad young men will continue to annoy Cumberland, and that you will act wisely to keep up Guards upon the Frontiers.

Gov. B.—Did you become acquainted with the Spanish Agent resident at the Creek Nation?

Col. T.—I saw and conversed with him frequently and spent two days at his House.

Gov. B.—What was his conversation and conduct towards the United States during your stay in the Nation?

Col. T.—I was informed by himself and others that he had offered the captors of my daughter four hundred dollars for her. I asked him why he would pay that price, he said that he wanted to send her to Orleans to school, and that the King was to pay all the expences, such sums (said he) are nothing to the King of Spain.

Gov. B.—How was your Daughter treated by the Creeks?

Col. T.—At the camp in the woods she and the negroe made fires, brought water, &c, & upon their arrival in the Nation she pounded meal & was whiped and in other respects treated as a slave.

Gov. B.—What appears to be the disposition of the Creeks towards the Chickasaws peace or War?

Col. T.—Upon my arrival at the house of Alexander Cornell at the Tuckabatchees, which was about the 16 July, great, very great preparations were making for war against the Chickasaws 5,000 Warriors were armed and equipped for marching against them, they had bushed, (held the green corn dance more early than at any other period by several weeks, to the end that they might be in readiness to march, the Cherokees too offered to the Creeks from 500 to 1100 to Join in the Army against the Chickasaws, but after my arrival, say about the 22nd July they determined in full council to desist from war against the Chickasaws and take them by the hand as Brothers.

Gov. B.—How was the determination to desist from war after such great preparations, and embrace peace brought about?

Col. T.—It was in consequence of Letters from the Spanish Officer Mr. Seagrove, the Choctaw Nation, and the Chickasaw Nation itself, and with my own exertions declaring it was the wish of your Excellency which had its weight in the determination.

Gov. B.—Do you believe the Creeks are sincere in their determination for peace with the Chickasaws?

Col. T.—I do verily, and if there is not peace between the Creek and the Chickasaws—it will be the fault of the Chickasaws.

Gov. B.—I thank you for the information you have given me; nothing further occurs to me to ask you.

Col. T.—It is due to Mr. Seagrove to declare to you, as I shall to my fellow Citizens in general in Cumberland, that his conduct towards me as an injured Citizen seeking redress was most friendly and proper as an officer and a man of feeling—and however he heretofore may have been misinformed or uninformed of the very great sufferings of the people of the Territory by the hands of the Creeks, he is now fully informed what their sufferings have been, and from his conduct and Talks at Beard's Bluff, (Fort Telfair) on the Altamaha to the Creeks, and from the better information he has received respecting the sufferings of

this country, and the base conduct of the Creeks I have the fullest confidence, and hope that his future administration of the duties of his office will be marked, not only with Justice to this country, but with all possible exertions in his power to stay the Creeks from future depredations upon its Citizens.

(Signed) ISAAC TITSWORTH.

KNOXVILLE 9th August 1795.

The Creek that was killed at the attack upon Joy's Boat last spring had in his hand Major Evan Shelby's gun, and his shot bag around his neck.

Copy of the Information given to Governor Blount by Colonel Isaac Titsworth of Tennessee County, August 9th, 1795.  
For Gen. Robertson.

---

(153)

KNOXVILLE, August 9th, 1795.

Sir,

I have prevailed upon a traveller from Kentucky to Philadelphia, who called by this place, to wait until a number of papers yesterday received by express from the Creek Nation, could be transcribed, a list of which is subjoined, together with the information of Col. Isaac Titsworth of Tennessee County who is also from the Creek Nation as this information will show. It gives me pleasure to find by these papers, (meaning the inclosed) that the Creeks are so sincerely disposed for peace as well with the Chickasaws as with the United States; and I shall give orders to General Robertson the Temporary Agent to the Choctaws and Chickasaws to go without delay to the Chickasaw Nation, to make known to them the sincere determination of the Creeks for peace, to obtain from them the prisoners the Creeks request me to obtain, and to finally settle the peace so happily determined upon by the Creeks.

I shall by the return of Mr. O'Reiley the express as mentioned in Alexander Cornell's letter encourage the meeting at Tellico Blockhouse between myself and some of the Creek Chiefs.

If I was not to do so, as the proposition comes from themselves they would conclude that this country with whom they had long been at War was yet not disposed to meet them on the grounds of peace.

The time I shall propose for this meeting will be between the 1st & 10th of October. I mention the time that I may have the honor of your instructions—if you please on that occasion.

Letters from General Robertson of the 27th July report the District of Mero to be in a state of peace.

I have the honor to be, very respectfully,

(Signed)

WILLIAM BLOUNT.

P. S. I also inclose you a copy of the deposition of James Cart forwarded to me by General Robertson.

The papers enclosed to the Secretary of War are the same as forwarded by this conveyance.

Timothy Pickering, Esq.,

Secretary of War.

(154)

KNOXVILLE, August 11th, 1795.

Sir,

The papers enclosed herewith a list of which is subjoined, will inform you not only of the sincere disposition of the Creeks for peace, but of the practicability of establishing a peace between them and the Chickasaws. I say of the *practicability* of establishing a peace between them and the Chickasaws, for of the necessity of such a measure you cannot but be sensible. You will observe that Alex'r Cornell who writes on the part of the Creek Nation, in his letter to me as well as in his letter to General Colbert and other Chiefs of the Chickasaws, expresses a wish that the Creeks whom the Chickasaws may have in captivity, shall be restored to them through your and my hands. And it is to be presumed that the Creeks will expect to receive these prisoners at the meeting which they have proposed to hold with me at Tellico Block House. And if they are not delivered to them it is to be feared that they will consider that the Chickasaws are not for peace, and again commence war against them. This is an important crisis in Indian affairs and must be embraced.

For you to send for the Creek prisoners in the hands of the Chickasaws, perhaps the Chickasaws may not deliver them up; whereas if you go for them in person I cannot doubt but you will obtain them.

Nor is the making peace between the Creeks and Chickasaws all; for important as that is, it will still be more so to the District of Mero, whose citizens have so long suffered by the hands of the Creeks— that the Creeks should believe that peace between them and the Chickasaws through your mediation. Under these circumstances Sir, I request you to proceed immediately to the Creek Nation and there use your efforts to obtain from them the Creeks whom they may have captured, and establish a firm and satisfactory peace between them and the Creeks.

To me it appears that an escort will be necessary for your safety to and from the nation. And if you think so too you will call upon James Winchester, Colonel Commandant in Mero District to furnish you with such a number of mounted Infantry as you shall judge sufficient not exceeding a serjeant and twelve privates. Inclosed is an order to Col. Winchester authorizing him to furnish you with such escort under the above limitations, which you will please forward to him with your requisition annexed.

To the end that you may have full time to effect the objects of your mission, and that the Creek prisoners with the Chickasaws may be restored to the Creeks if the Chickasaws will deliver them up at the meeting between the Creeks and myself at Tellico Blockhouse.

I inform you that I shall propose to the Creeks to meet me at that place on the 10th October. The Creeks now having expressed a wish for peace with the Chickasaws, and having previously concluded a sincere peace with the United States, it will be your duty to explicitly declare to Apoia Mingo and his nation, that if they persist in war against the Creeks, that they are not to expect supplies of any kinds from the United States during the continuance of it.

This declaration on the part of the Creeks for peace with the Chickasaws, and the actual state of peace which taken place between the Creeks and the United States, renders it proper that you forbear to forward to the Chickasaws the six Howitzers powder and ball ordered from Fort Washington for their use by the Secretary of War.

I mean those which I presume have been brought from Fort Washington by Anthony Foster to Nashville, by order of the Secretary of War, for the use of the Chickasaws. Let them remain at Nashville subject to further orders.

You will please deliver the letter addressed to "Jessie Moniac" (General Colbert's wife) now with you from her brother Samuel Moniac, and if she wishes to attend the meeting with the Creeks at Tellico Blockhouse as he requests her to do, you will please aid her if necessary at the expense of the United States in coming, at the same time you send forward the prisoners that you obtain from the Chickasaws. And it is my opinion that your presence at that time and place (as the Creeks consider you the first man of the Cumberland people with whom they consider themselves as having been long at war) will have beneficial consequences.

The Cherokees too, (many of whom I am sure will attend) will be very glad to see you.

Col. Titsworth's visit to the Creeks was very fortunate for the District of Mero, for they had received such reports of the

conduct of the Cumberland people in aiding the Chickasaws against them, that they were as fully determined to carry on war against the Cumberland people as they were against the Chickasaws.

But the Colonel contradicted the reports, and not only reconciled them with the Cumberland people, but in his opinion had no small share in the determination for peace with the Chickasaws.

I am with respect,

Your obedient servant,

WM. BLOUNT.

Gen'l James Robertson,  
Temporary Agent &c.

List of papers inclosed.

No. 1—Alexander Cornell a half breed Creek to Gov. Blount, July 27th, 1795.

No. 2—Col. Titsworth's Information to General Blount, August 9, 1795.

No. 3—A Talk from the Chickasaws to the Creek Nation, June 13, 95.

No. 4—Extracts from a Creek Conference with Jas. Seagrove, June 15th, 95.

No. 5—Talk from the Choctaws to the Creek nation.

No. 6—Baron de Carondelet to the Mad Dog.

7th—A letter from Alex'n Cornell to General William Colbert, Apoi Mingo and other Chiefs of the Chickasaws.

No. 9—(Copy) Gov. Blount to Secretary of War, August 9th, 95.

Having not been informed who the President has appointed to succeed you in the office of Brigadier General, and Colonel Winchester being the oldest Colonel in the District, I have given him the necessary orders respecting the protection to be afforded the District of Mero.

WM. BLOUNT.

If the Chickasaws should inquire as no doubt they will, what the United States mean to do with the post at the Chickasaw Bluff established by the Spaniards—it is my opinion that the President will not suffer it to remain many months. You will also explain to the Chickasaws the nature of the sale of the Indian Lands made by the State of Georgia, and assure them that their rights will not be affected by the sales.

Gov. Blount to  
James Robertson,  
Temporary Agent to the  
Chickasaws and Choctaws.

August 11th, 1795.



(155)

KNOXVILLE, August 12th, 1795.

Sir,

Your letter of the 27th July was on the 7th Instant delivered to me by your Express the bearer, Mr. O'Riley with its inclosures.

I rejoice at the friendly conclusions that have taken place between Mr. Seagrove on the part of the United States, and the chiefs of the Creek nation, and with pleasure embrace the proposal of meeting yourself and others of the Creek Chiefs at Tellico Blockhouse in order to brighten and strengthen the chain of friendship which ought, and I hope ever will subsist between the Creek nation and the United States, of which this Territory. (Cumberland inclusive) is a part.

The time when I would wish to see you and the other Creek Chiefs at Tellico Blockhouse on the above mentioned business is on the 10th day of October.

I mention this distant day not because I am not desirous to see you as soon as possible, but because it will afford time to obtain your prisoners from the Chickasaws, and to have them there by that time.

You request me to direct General Robertson to send two men for the prisoners to the Chickasaw nation, but instead of sending for them by two men, that I may be sure to get them, I have ordered the General with an escort of militia, to go himself to the Chickasaw nation to bring them to Nashville, and from thence to bring or send them in safety to me on or before the 10th day of October.

I have instructed General Robertson, to assure the Chickasaws that upon their delivering up the Creek prisoners, and desisting from further acts of hostility upon the Creek nation, that the Creeks will be at entire peace with the Chickasaws, understanding myself so to do by your letter.

You tell me that the Spanish Agent informed the Creek nation the day before the date of your letter, that three hundred Americans had actually taken up their residence in the Chickasaw nation, with a view to erecting a fort at Chickasaw Bluff for the purpose of protecting boats coming down the Mississippi with arms, ammunition, &c to drive the Indians off their lands. In answer to this information given you by the Spanish Agent, I tell you positively that it is not true. The United States wish peace with all the world, and between all nations, red as well as white, and the Creek nation may rest assured that the United States will not take possession of any of their lands, neither for the purpose of building Forts or for other purposes. Nor will

the United States take possession of the lands of any other nation of the red people.

It is however true, that some white people, (though but few in number) last spring went from Cumberland to the Chickasaw nation, not by order of Government, nor did they go with any intentions to go with the Chickasaws to war against the Creeks; but so it happens, that while the white people were with the Chickasaws that the Creeks attacked the Chickasaw Towns. These white people, (a considerable part of whom belonged to the states East of the Mountains) have since returned from the Chickasaw nation to their respective homes.

It would seem to me that the Spanish Agent made to you this erroneous information respecting the conduct of the United States to render the taking possession of Chickasaw Bluff by Governor Gayoso of the Natchez less offensive to the red people—well knowing at the same time that he told you what was not true.

If the Spanish Officers see this letter or hear of its contents let them remember it's in reply to misinformation given by their Agent to the injury of the United States, and not with an intention on my part to create discontent between them and the Creek nation—for as I before said, the United States whose Officer I am, wish peace with all the world and between all nations.

I return you my thanks for your attention and services rendered Col. Titsworth in the recovery of his daughter and negro.

With Mr. O'Riley who has been paid according to your contract with him, comes to the Creek nation, Col. James White and Col. John Singleton, to whom I have given the proper passports. They will make known to you and the nation the business on which they come; and peace being now perfectly established between the United States and the Creek nation, I trust they will meet no difficulty in the execution of it. They are both men of good character and worth, and as such I recommend them to the friendship and civilities of yourself and the nation.

The letter from Samuel Moniac to his sister Jacksie I have forwarded and requested General Robertson to give her aid at the expense of the United States, to get to Tellico Blockhouse at the time as above appointed for our meeting at that place.

The letter to General Colbert from you I have opened, and forwarded it by General Robertson to the Chickasaw nation. General Colbert is gone to Philadelphia, where he will be told by the President of the United States that peace must positively take place between the Creek and Chickasaws.

I cannot conclude without repeating to you the Citizens of the United States resident in this Territory (Of which Cumberland is a part) ever did, and now do most earnestly wish peace with the Creek nation; and that on their part nothing will be done to

disturb the peace so happily concluded by Mr. Seagrove between the Creek Nation and the United States—nor without assuring you that I have a just sense of your exertions to promote and preserve peace between them.

Accept Sir, my thanks for your timely caution to keep up guards against *bad young men* who may steal out of the Nation contrary to the will, and without the knowledge of the Chiefs—and believe me with great respect,

Your most obedient servant,  
(Signed) WM. BLOUNT.

Alexander Cornell, D. A. I. Affrs,  
Creek Nation.

KNOXVILLE, August 13th, 1795.

Sir,

That you may more fully understand the measures I have taken to establish peace between the Creeks and Chickasaws I enclose you this copy of my letter to Alexander Cornell,

I am your obedient servant,  
WM. BLOUNT.

James Robertson, Esq.,  
Temporary Agent.

(156)

KNOXVILLE, August 14th, 1795.

Dear Sir,

It is in my opinion very important that you go in person as my public order directs to the Chickasaw Nation but if sickness or any other circumstances render it impossible for you to go in person, then you must send such other as you shall judge most proper to effect the objects for which I have directed you to go.

Would not your son Jonathan be a proper man to send, or would Colonel Mansco or Captain Smith be more proper. Observe these are only suggestions for in case you cannot go you are to send without delay such other person as you judge most proper. The same escort will be allowed to such person as you send as I ordered to be allowed to yourself.

I am your obedient servant,  
WM. BLOUNT.

(157)

August 22, 1795.

The Talk of the President of the United States to Major William Colbert, John Brown the Younger, and William McGillvray, Chickasaws, and Malcolm McGhee Intrepreter representing the Chickasaw nation.

My Children,

I have considered the Talk of the Head men of the Chickasaw Nation which you delivered four— days ago. The subject I had before considered in consequence of the written Talk presented to me last month by James Kemp and other Chickasaws who were here with some Choctaws. As I pretty fully expressed my ideas upon it in the talk I addressed to them, I must refer you to it for the general answer to your present application. A copy of all the proceedings with James Kemp and his Companions was delivered to him for the information of the two nations; but for your satisfaction I will now deliver to you another.

My Children,

I sincerely regret the difficulties in which you are involved by the mistaken opinions which have been entertained of the intentions and obligations of the United States towards their friends the Chickasaws. It was never the design of the United States to interfere in the disputes of the Indian Nations among one another, unless as friends to both parties to reconcile them. In this way I shall do every thing in my power to serve the Chickasaw Nation. The Commissioners at the Conference at Nashville had no authority to promise any other interference. General Robertson did wrong in telling your nation last year that he expected the United States would send an army against the Creeks this summer. Your strong expectation of seeing such an army, and probably other encouragements of support, may have led you to strike the Creeks which now occasions so much distress. It seems also that a number of Commissions which were given to several Chickasaw Chiefs were not truly interpreted. They were expressly confined to operations against the Indians Northwest of the Ohio.

My Children,

If I were to grant you the aid of my Warriors which you request, the consequences would be a general war between the whole Creek Nation and the United States. But the power of making such a war belongs to Congress (the Great Council of the United States) exclusively. I have no power to begin such a war without their consent.

My humanity and particular friendship for the Chickasaws will not permit me to let them suffer from the want of provisions. Governor Blount will receive my orders on this subject.

The act of the Spaniards in taking possession of the Chickasaw

Bluff is an unwarrantable aggression as well against the United States as to the Chickasaws to whom the land there belongs. I shall send talks, and do whatever else shall appear to me proper to induce the Spanish King or his Governor to remove their people from the Station, and to make no more encroachments on your lands.

My Children,

There is one thing requested in the written talk which you delivered to me, which perhaps may be useful to us both—that is to send you an honest man to act as Clerk for your Chiefs, who may write me truly of all things concerning your interests and those of the United States. Of this I will further consider and hereafter inform you by letter.

G. WASHINGTON,  
United States, Philadelphia, August 22, 1795.

(To be continued.)

## EDITORIAL.

---

### BEGINNING OF EDUCATIONAL ASSOCIATIONS IN THE WEST.

---

A book of interest to educators and to all persons desiring to trace the origin of teachers' conventions in the West, may be found in the library of the University of Nashville. This book is entitled, "Transactions of the College of Teachers." It was published in 1835, and contains the minutes of the meeting at Cincinnati, in October, 1834, together with the addresses delivered, and the papers read on that occasion.

Among the distinguished educators present were: President Albert Picket, Rev. Elijah Slack, D.D., of Oxford; Dr. W. H. McGuffey, of Miami University; John Easterbrook, T. M. Post, of Illinois College; M. P. Jewett, Hon. Thomas Smith Grimke, of South Carolina; David L. Talbott, Alexander Kinmont, M. A. H. Niles, Daniel Drake, and others.

It is probable that very few copies of the book are extant. The copy in the library of the University of Nashville found its way into Canada, and was presented to Dr. W. R. Garrett, by a distinguished Canadian, as a memento of the international educational meeting at Toronto, as appears from the following statements on the fly-leaf of the volume:

"Presented to Hon. W. R. Garrett, President of the National Educational Association of the United States, Toronto, Ontario, July, 1891."

"Presented to the University of Nashville by W. R. Garrett, 1898."

The preface of the Publishing Committee, giving a succinct account of the origin of this important educational movement is copied below:

The readers of this Volume may wish to know something of the history of the Institution, of which it is the offspring.

The idea of the "College of Teachers," in its present form, was first cast in the "Academic Institute;" an institution of similar character, but more limited operations established in 1829. The project was the work of Teachers, as may be easily imagined; but the sympathies of noble-minded and patriotic citizens, more ambitious of usefulness than fame, have been the animating cause of its permanence, and success. The first General Convention of the Teachers of the Western country was called in June, 1831, under the auspices of the "Academic Institute." The proceedings and addresses were published in No. 1, of the Academic Pioneer. The second General Convention was held in October, 1832. "The College of Teachers" was embodied in a Constitution of its own, and officered. The proceedings have come only partially before the public; and although the addresses were replete with spirit and sense, and worthy of being more generally known, they have never been published. It was our poverty and not our will, that consented to this failure.

The Third General Convention took place in October, 1833. There was an increase of power and interest; and addresses of various descriptions were listened to by crowded audiences of intelligent citizens; but not more than a brief view of their proceedings appeared. Yet even this, when circulated through the western country, attracted general attention, and proved how warmly the cause was espoused. It found disinterested friends in every quarter.

Of the fourth Annual Convention of October last, we are able to present a more extended view, than we could of either of the two former. We are sensible, however, that this publication exhibits but imperfectly the most interesting features of that meeting. Words, especially written ones, are but dead images after all, of living things. We trust that impressions of a more glowing character are engraven on the memories of those who attended. Let not the utility of the "College of Teachers" be judged of merely, by these *apparent fruits*:—its best effects are to be looked for in the improved understandings of rising generations.

In the meantime, we trust that this volume may be the means of exciting some interest in the cause to which it is dedicated; and that the patriotic will read, not merely to censure or praise, but to practice and inculcate whatever herein may appear to them either good or commendable.

PUBLISHING COMMITTEE.

# AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE.

## GENERAL INDEX TO VOL. III., 1898.

Alexander, Augustus—Statement relative to Ezekiel Polk.....	177-178
Alexander, B. G., Discussion of.....	
A. Oakley Hall's account of duel between Andrew Jackson and John Sevier.....	97-99
Alexander, George—Statement.....	171
Alexander, Susan—Statement.....	178
Alexander, Thomas—Statement.....	183
Anderson, Miss Cornelia Geraldine.....	240
Anderson, Hon. Joseph, and Some of his Distinguished Relatives and Descendants.....	240-259
Anderson, Gen. S. Alexander.....	255-259
Antiquary—An English Magazine.....	201
Archives of Tennessee Historical Society.....	83-92
Articles of Government, by Watauga Settlers.....	112
Bass, Jno. M.:.....	
Sketch of William Walker.....	207-222
Bean, William.....	110
Blackmore, Capt. John.....	199
Blakeley, Josiah.....	304 <i>et seq.</i>
Blount, Gov. William:.....	
Letters of.....	75-83, 267-298, 348-392
Proclamation by.....	74
Blount, Willie.....	299-300
Book Reviews.....	93-103
Bowie.....	222
Brown, Jacob.....	107
Brownlow, William G.:.....	
Proclamation relative to Isham G. Harris.....	151-154
Caldwell, Joshua W.:.....	
Article on Watauga.....	312-315
On Committee of 13.....	115
Review of his "Bench and Bar".....	300
Cameron, Alexander—Order to Watauga Settlers.....	111
Carter, Landon—Bond from John Sevier.....	83-84
Carter, John.....	105 <i>et seq.</i>
Cash, William.....	90
Centennial Exposition of Tennessee:.....	
Article by Gen. G. P. Thruston.....	3-21
Committee on History.....	4
Confederate Exhibit.....	9
Colonial Dames—Exhibit.....	10
Daughters of American Revolution—Exhibit.....	10
Grand Army of The Republic—Exhibit.....	18
Jackson Collection.....	13
Ladies' Hermitage—Exhibit.....	16
Miscellaneous Exhibit.....	18
Portraits of Governors.....	7
Tennessee Historical Society—Exhibit.....	5
Thruston, Gen. G. P.—Exhibit.....	19
Certificate in reference to Ezekiel Polk.....	162-163
Cincinnati—North Carolina Society.....	193-199
Cockrill Geneology, by Granville Goodloe.....	331-345



Collingsworth, Edward	90
Collingsworth, James	90
Colonial Mobile—Reviewed	203
Committee of Five and Committee of Thirteen	104-120
Committee on Indian Affairs—Report	348-349
Cornel, Aleck:	
"Talk" to Colbert and others	378
Letter to Blount	379-380
Crockett, David	222
Crittendon, Geo. B.	222
Crittendon, W. S.	222
Davis, Maj. Chas. L.	193 <i>et seq.</i>
Democratic State Committee of North Carolina:	
Address relative to Ezekiel Polk	183-184
Democratic State Central Committee of Tennessee:	
Vindication of Ezekiel Polk	157-190
Dinsmore, Silas	309-310
Double Head, Indian Chief	85
Editorial Notes	200-204, 299-300, 395-396
Educational Associations:	
Beginning of, in the West	394-395
Errata	200-201
Fannin	222
Fisk, Moses	94
Forney, Abram—Statement	176-177
Gaines, Edmund P.	309
Garrett, Miss Mary Winder:	
Pollok or Polk Family	42-73, 155-190, 230-240
Garrett, W. R.:	
Article on Revolutionary Pensioners	120-132
Gilbert, William	260-263
Goochland County, Va.—Records	315 <i>et seq.</i>
Goodloe, Granville:	
The Cockrill Genealogy	331-345
Goodpasture, A. V.:	
The Watauga Association	104-120
Referred to	312 <i>et seq.</i>
Goodpasture, Judge J. D.:	
History of his Life, reviewed	93-96
Goodpasture Book Company	201
Goodrich, William:	
"Invincible Tennesseans"	223-229
Green, Thomas	222
Greer, Joseph	381
Gribble, Thomas—Statement	173-174
Grindal, Archbishop—Life of, by F. A. Winder	100, 204
Hall, A. Oakley, criticised	97-100
Hamilton, Peter J.:	
Article—"Some Southern Yankees"	303-312
"Colonial Mobile"—Reviewed	203
Hanging Maw—Indian Chief	85
Harris, Isham G.—Brownlow's Proclamation in regard to	151-154
Henley, Mrs. Charles Fairfax:	
Article—Maj. Charles Robertson and Some of his Descendants	21-32
Article—Hon. Joseph Anderson and some of his Distinguished Relatives and Descendants	240-250
Henley, David:	
Letter to Capt. John Gordon	359
Letter to Gen. James Robertson	376-377
Hilham, a Village in Overton County, Tenn.	94
Hobart, Peter	304
Holland, Maj. James	263-266
Horne—Branch of Polk Family	239
Houston	222
Huguenot Mementoes, by Hon. Flournoy Rivers	347-348
Indian Affairs—Report of Committee	348-349
Indian Chiefs—Conference with Gov. Blount	367-372

Indian "Talk"—Hanging Maw, Watts and others	84-87
"Invincible Tennesseans"—Article by Wm. Goodrich	223-229
Jack, Capt. James—Certificate	160-161
Jackson, Gen. Andrew	
Letter relative to Ezekiel Polk	188
His Hatred to Dinsmore	310
Johnson, Andrew—Proclamation	91
Johnson—Branch of Polk Family	239
Judson, Lewis	304
Kemper, Reuben	222
Keyser, Charles S.—Letter	155-156
Knox—Letter to Gov. Blount	295-296
Law, John	308
Letter from an Old Settler	88-90
Liberty Bell—Col. Wm. Polk guards it	156-157
Lindsley, John Berrien	32-41
Lindsley, Philip	40
Little, Prof. C. E.	
Article—John Berrien Lindsley	32-41
Logan, Gen.—Letter from Gov. Blount	366
McCallum, James—History of Giles County, cited	140
McGillioray, Alexander (mentioned)	86
McKee, John	
Letter to Gov. Blount	353
Letter to Indians	352
McLeary, Gen. Michael—Statement	175
Mason, Abram—Settler	88-90
Maury County—The Beginning of	139-150
Michaux, F. A. (mentioned)	93
Mitchell, Gen. John F.—Order	91
Mobile—Early History	303-312
Monroe—Branch of Polk Family	235
Moreland, J. C.	
Article—Maj. Charles Robertson and his Descendants	190-192
Mosby Family	317-331
Nashville Female Academy	345-346
Netherland, John	315-317
Nicaragua—Walker's Expeditions to	210-222
North Carolina Democratic Committee	183-185
North Carolina Line—Revolutionary	201-203
North Carolina Society of Cincinnati	193-199
Notes and Queries	199
O'Hara, Theodore	222
Oliver, George—Statement	176
Original Portraits of Washington	
Article by Gen. G. P. Thruston	132-138
Owens, Joshua—Tries case of Witchcraft	95
Palmer, Walter B.	
Review of Life of Judge J. D. Goodpasture	93-96
Peale, Charles Wilson	133 <i>et seq.</i>
Pensioners—Revolutionary—List for Tennessee	122-132
Perkins, Nicholas T.	139 <i>et seq.</i>
Perrogerrogs	89
Phelan—Mistaken as to Committee of Thirteen	115
Pickering, Timothy—Letter from Gov. Blount	386-387
Polk, Col. Ezekiel—Vindication	157-190
Polk, Octavia Rowena—Affidavit	155-156
Polk, William—Letter	170-171
Pollok, or Polk Family	
Article by Miss Mary Winder Garrett	42-73, 155-190, 230-240
Portell, Thomas—Letter to Robertson	281-282
Potts, John—Statement	180-181
Powhatan County, Virginia—Records	327-328
Queary, William—Statement	179-180
Ramsey—Mistaken as to Committee of Thirteen	114
Reese, Solomon—Statement	175
Report—Committee on Indian Affairs	348-349
Revolutionary Pensioners	120-132

Rivers, Hon. Flournoy :.....	
Articles—"The Beginnings of Maury County".....	139-150
"Two Carolina Pioneers".....	259-266
"Some Virginia Memoranda".....	315-331
"Some Huguenot Mementoes".....	347-348
Roaring River.....	93
Roberts, Gen. Isaac.....	141 <i>et seq.</i>
Robertson, Maj. Charles, and Some of his Descendents—Mr. Charles Fairfax Henley.....	21-32
Robertson, Maj. Charles, and Some of his Descendents—Hon. J. C. Moreland.....	190-192
Robertson, Gen. James :.....	
His Correspondence.....	74-83, 267-298, 348-390
His Resignation.....	363
Robertson, Keziah.....	31
Roche, J. J.—Note.....	222
Roosevelt, Theodore—Mistaken as to Committee of Thirteen.....	114
Rouse, Susan.....	307 <i>et seq.</i>
St. James Northern Parish, Va.....	315
St. James Southern Parish, Va.....	315
St. Stephens.....	309 <i>et seq.</i>
Sanders, Romulus M.—Extract from.....	169
Scott, Hon. E. L.—Sketch of Gen. Anderson.....	255 <i>et seq.</i>
Seagrove, J.—Letter to Blount.....	284-285
Sevier, John—Bond to Landon Carter.....	83
Sevier, Valentine.....	31
Shields, Gen. A., and Others—Statement.....	174
Sibley, Cyrus.....	304
Smith, John—Statement.....	171-173
Sommerville, John—Letter.....	381-382
"Some Southern Yankees".....	303-312
Sonora—Expedition of William Walker.....	209-210
South Holston Settlements.....	107
Stock, Elliot.....	201
Sublett, or Soblett.....	199
Tennessee Revolutionary Pensioners—List.....	122-132
Thompson, James.....	89
Thompson, John—Letter to Blount.....	292-293
Titsworth, Col. Isaac—Testimony.....	383-386
Totten, A. W. O.....	94-95
Totten, Benjamin.....	94
Travis.....	222
Tuskegatchie—Indian Chief.....	85
Twain, Mark.....	95
"Two Carolina Pioneers"—Gilbert, Holland.....	256-259
"Virginia Memoranda":.....	
By Hon. Flournoy Rivers.....	315-331
Walker, William :.....	
Frontispiece.....	No. 3
Sketch of, by John M. Bass.....	207-222
Wallace, John—Statement.....	183
Washington, George :.....	
Frontispiece.....	No. 2
Proclamation.....	350-351
Indian "Talk".....	393-394
Watauga Association :.....	
Article by A. V. Goodpasture.....	104-120
Article by Joshua W. Caldwell.....	312-315
Settlements—Map.....	102
Watts, John, Indian Chief—"Talk".....	85-87
Whiting, Nathan.....	310 <i>et seq.</i>
Wilson, H. L.—Statement.....	179
Wilson, J. P.—Statement.....	178-179
Winchester, Gen.:.....	
Letters to Gen. Robertson.....	352-353, 374
Winder—Branch of Polk Family.....	232-234
Winder, F. A.—Notes on Publications.....	100, 204
Witchcraft—Trial in Tennessee.....	95

End.







